

HISTORY OF BUDDHISM IN BURMA

A.D. 1000—1300

by

Dr. Than Tun, M.A., B.L., Ph.D. (London)

Professor of History
Arts & Science University
Mandalay

[Ph.D. Thesis submitted to the Faculty of Arts, University of London
in 1956 - Revised and Enlarged]

U.P.—Q. 144—500—24-879.

B.S.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	iii
I. HISTORY OF BURMA 1044-1174	1
II. HISTORY OF BURMA 1174-1287	15
III. THE BURMESE ADMINISTRATION 1044-1287	37
IV. SĀSANĀ	51
V. PŪRHA	63
VI. TRYĀ	77
VII. SAṄGHĀ	91
VIII. SAṄGHĀ (<i>Continued</i>)	115
IX. RELIGIOUS BUILDINGS	127
X. THE SLAVES OF MEDIEVAL BURMA	143
APPENDICES	
I. THE LAND MEASURE	163
II. VOTIVE TABLETS	165
MAPS	
I. MONGOL INVASION (13th Century)	facing page 30
II. ELEVEN VILLAGES	facing page 37
III. SOME IMPORTANT PAGODAS OF PAGAN TOWNSHIP	facing page 142
IV. THE FIND SPOTS OF THE VOTIVE TABLETS	167
TABLES and LISTS	
I. ABBREVIATION	i
II. TRANSLITERATION	ii
III. KINGS OF PAGAN	13
IV. GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE LATER HALF OF THE PAGAN DYNASTY	facing page 36
V. SOME IMPORTANT PAGODAS OF PAGAN	142

ABBREVIATIONS

<i>A</i>	Original Inscriptions Collected by King Bodawpaya in Upper Burma and now placed near the Patodawgyi Pagoda, Amarapura
<i>ASB</i>	Annual Report of the Superintendent, Archaeological Survey, Burma
<i>ASI</i>	Annual Report, Archaeological Survey of India
<i>B I & B II</i>	Inscriptions copied from the Stones collected by King Bodawpaya and placed near the Arakan Pagoda. Volume I and II
<i>BBHC</i>	Bulletin of the Burma Historical Commission
<i>BEFEO</i>	Bulletin de l'Ecole Francaise d'Extrême Orient
<i>BRSFAP</i>	Burma Research Society Fiftieth Anniversary Publications
<i>Ep. Birm.</i>	Epigraphia Birmanica
<i>Ep. Ind.</i>	Epigraphia Indica
<i>Ep. Zey.</i>	Epigraphia Zeylanica
<i>GPC</i>	Glass Palace Chronicle
<i>GUBBS</i>	Gazetteer of Upper Burma and the Shan States Part I, Volumes 1 and 2; Part II, Volumes 1, 2 and 3
<i>Hmannan</i>	The Hmannan Yazawin compiled in 1829
<i>IA</i>	Indian Antiquary
<i>JA</i>	Journal Asiatique
<i>JBRS</i>	Journal of the Burma Research Society
<i>JRAS</i>	Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society
<i>JSS</i>	Journal of the Siam Society
<i>List.</i>	A List of Inscriptions found in Burma
<i>Pl.</i>	Plate in five portfolios of <i>Inscriptions of Burma</i> , (Pl. 100 ¹⁰ means Plate No. 100 of Portfolio 1, <i>Inscriptions of Burma</i> , line 10)
<i>PPA</i>	Inscriptions of Pagan, Pinya and Ava
<i>PTS</i>	Pali Text Society
<i>REO</i>	Revue de l'Extrême-Orient
<i>SIP</i>	Selections from the Inscriptions of Pagan (Tin & Luce)
<i>SSFACP</i>	Siam Society Fiftieth Anniversary Commemorative Publications
<i>TN</i>	U Tun Nyein's Translation of <i>PPA</i>
<i>UB I & II</i>	Inscriptions collected in Upper Burma, Volumes 1 and 2
<i>UTR (Rgn)</i>	Rangoon University Teachers' Review

PLAN

I. THE RELIGIOUS ESTABLISHMENT AT <i>ĀMANĀ</i> (A.D. 1223)	133
--	-----

ILLUSTRATIONS

Fig. 1 The Seventeen Shapes of the Votive Tablets	168
---	-----

2 <i>Sikhara</i>	169
3 The Writing on the Reverse of <i>Aniruddha's</i> Tablet	170
4 <i>Abhaya mudrā</i>	171
5 <i>Añjali mudrā</i>	171
6 <i>Bhūmiśparśa mudrā</i>	171
7 <i>Dharmacakra (Vyākhyāna) mudrā</i>	171
8 <i>Dhyāna (Samādhi) mudrā</i>	171
9 <i>Mahākāruṇīka mudrā</i>	171
10 <i>Namaskāra mudrā</i>	172
11 <i>Varada (Vara) mudrā</i>	172
12 <i>Vitarka mudrā</i>	172
13 <i>Bhadrāsana</i>	173
14 <i>Dhyānāsana</i>	173
15 <i>Lalitāsana</i>	173
16 <i>Paryāṇkasana</i>	173
17 <i>Rājalilāsana</i>	173
18 <i>Vīrāsana</i>	173
19 <i>Padmāsana</i>	174
20 <i>Simhāsana</i>	175

ATTHAMAHĀTHĀNA (EIGHT MAJOR SCENES)

in its various combinations	176-7
21 Stupas evolving from the <i>Kalaśa</i> pot	179
22 Stupas evolving from the Relic Casket	180
23 Animals used as part of the Decoration	181

BIBLIOGRAPHY

I. EPIGRAPHY	189
II. PUBLISHED WORKS	193
III. THESES	203
INDEX AND GLOSSARY	205

TRANSLITERATION TABLE¹

1. Consonants

o ka	o ca	ɔ̄ t̄a	ɔ̄ ta	o pa	ɔ̄ ya	ɔ̄ sa
ə kha	ə cha	ɛ̄ t̄ha	ɔ̄ tha	ə pha	q̄ ra	ɔ̄ ha
ə ga	ə ja	ɛ̄ d̄a	s̄ da	ə ba	la	ə m̄
ə gha	ə jha	ə d̄ha	ə dha	ə bha	la	ə a
ə ña	ə ña	ə ña	s̄ na	ə ma	ə wa	

For various forms of sa: \textcircled{a} ga, \textcircled{b} / sa, \textcircled{c} / sa, \textcircled{d} ss

2. Vowels

ବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା ବାବା

3. Combinations

4. Numerals

1 1 3 2 2 3 4 5 5 6 7 8 9 0

4. Other signs (frequently used for land measure)

କ	$\frac{1}{2}$	ଖ	khwai
ଚ	$\frac{1}{4}$	ଚିତ	cit
ବ୍ର	$\frac{1}{8}$	ବ୍ରୁତ	carwat
ଫୁ	$\frac{9}{4}$	ଫୁ/ଫୁ	hu or phu
ପ୍ରାନ୍	$\frac{1}{16}$	ପ୍ରାନ୍	prāñ
ଲମ୍ବ	$\frac{1}{32}$	ଲମ୍ବ	lamay

1. See also *JBRS*, IV, ii, 136; *JBRS*, VI, ii, pp. 81-90 and *Ep. Birm*, I, i, pp. 6-12.

INTRODUCTION

ATTEMPTS had been made to check Burmese history by means of inscriptions as early as the eighteenth century. U Kala when compiling the *Great Chronicle* soon after the accession of King Taniganwe (1714-33) was the first to use them and Twinthin Mahasithu followed suit. Twinthin produced the *New Chronicle* in the late 18th century. In 1829, a committee of scholars compiled the *Glass Palace Chronicle* and thirteen inscriptions are mentioned in connection with our period. Their use of epigraphic evidence, however, was so meagre that it was almost negligible. When *Silavamisa* wrote the *Celebrated Chronicle* in ? 1520, he had only a few sentences on the Pagan dynasty but U Kala wrote nearly two hundred pages on it and the *Glass Palace Chronicle* was almost a copy of U Kala's chronicle. Of course they used local legends known as "thamaing" and many stories from *Jātaka* to enlarge *Silavamisa*'s account on Pagan. Naturally these incorporated stories have little or no value as history. Perhaps, the reason for such incorporation was the desire to describe a given episode with a similar and better known story from the *Jātaka* or the misinterpretation of the old records. For example, when a son of a junior queen was given the throne superseding the sons of senior queens, part of the Ramayana where Dasaratha appointed a junior son as heir to the throne was retold *mutatis mutandis*. When they misread or misinterpreted old records, they invented new stories to explain them. The name of a king Thaktawshe - Long Life - was misread Chaktawshe - Long Navel Cord - and as a result the story that the king when young cried incessantly so as to cause inflammation of the navel cord and thus acquired the nickname of Long Navel Cord. As all interpreters could not agree on all points of these stories, there were many stories with various versions so that as the popular saying goes, it becomes expedient to have a big stick near at hand when discussing Pagan history; serious disputes and quarrels are bound to arise which often end in fights. Thus a new approach to medieval Burmese history is a long felt need.

The tendency of a modern scholar is to base everything on epigraphic evidence and to reconstruct the history of Burma 1044-1287 entirely on the strength of this evidence and in the course of this endeavour, to ignore, refute or support the time cherished stories told by the chroniclers wherever and whenever necessary. The wisdom of entirely relying on epigraphy might be challenged as epigraphs deal largely with religious matters and they only contain chance references to political, social and economic sides of life in those days. One should remember, however, that these stray references are contemporary and therefore much more reliable than the stories that come down to us through the ages by word of mouth until they were committed to writing in comparatively recent times. Thus there is the need of writing the history of medieval Burma in the light of epigraphic evidence.

The purpose of this thesis is to fulfil, in a small way, part of that task. The first three chapters deal with the political history where an entirely new picture of the Pagan monarchy is given. Early in his reign King *Aniruddha* conquered lower Burma and opened his country to a direct contact by sea with India. Mon culture was copied more or less slavishly at Pagan. Politically Mons lost their independence but culturally they were masters at Pagan. Their language was the official language at the Burmese court. Burmans must have been

Buddhists long before *Aniruddha*'s conquest of the delta but this conquest resulted in the import of Buddhism as practised in lower Burma. It is, however, very important to bear in mind that Buddhism thus imported was not exactly the *Theravāda* Buddhism as popularly alleged. It was far from pure. As Buddhism has nothing comparable with Brahmanical rituals for such occasions as coronation, palace construction, etc. Burmans felt it necessary to adopt some Brahmanical rites through the Mon. Their monks tolerated this adoption. There is no truth in the story that the Order was all for orthodoxy and the king helped them by suppressing the heretics called Ari. As a matter of fact, the Ari sect appeared only in the latter half of the Pagan dynasty and it was never officially suppressed. To counteract their growing popularity, the orthodox monks allied themselves with the Sinhalese Order and strove to purify the Religion on Sinhalese lines which had naturally a very slow progress at first so that they achieved success only towards the end of the 15th century. The Ari sect was not as debased as described in the chronicles and it had nothing to do with the Tantric Buddhism. Perhaps, it is to offset the purity of orthodoxy that the Ari were depicted as black as black can be. Early in the reign of Kyanzittha, the Mon made a futile attempt to regain independence. The wise king probably offered a compromise by marrying his daughter to a scion of the fallen Mon royal family promising to make an heir of the off-spring of that union. Somehow or other the rebellion was suppressed. After Kyanzittha, Mon influence waned. It was partly due to the Sinhalase invasion of 1165. There was an interregnum of nine years (1165-74). Since Kyanzittha usurpers were on the Pagan throne, So in 1174 the *Aniruddha* line was restored. A burmanization movement set in and by the reign of *Cansu* II (Narapataisithu, 1174-1211) Burmese became the official language of the country. Architectural style also changed. Pagodas of the early half of the dynasty mostly have cave-like hollows, dark and gloomy. Burmans put up wide windows, tall doors and shortened the passage leading to the interior so that the buildings had better light and sanitation. The Pagan Empire was at its zenith under *Cansu* II. It extended from Ngachaunggyan (near Bhamo) in the north to Tavoy in the south or even as far south as Cape Salang for sometime and from the Salween River in the east to the Chin Hills in the west. It had a well organized form of government under five ministers who had to perform both civil and military duties. Customary Laws were codified under the name of Dhammatthat and the criminal procedure was known as *Amunwancā*. It seems that the Mon of the south were quite contented under the Burmese rule at least until the time of *Tarukpily* (Tayokpyem). The dangers of the empire usually came from the north and therefore the chief minister himself had to look after the northern frontier. *Cansu* II was succeeded by *Natongmyā* (Nandaungmya) who was definitely not the youngest son of the king as mentioned in the chronicles. *Narasingha-Uccanā* (Naratheinhka) was the next king. He was placed by the chronicles about sixty years earlier than his actual reign as predecessor of *Cansu* II. After him, his brother *Klacwā* (Kyawswa) became king. He was not a weakling as suggested in the chronicles. He made a unique attempt to suppress crime in his realm by issuing an edict against theives, and to increase his revenue he confiscated much of the religious lands in his country. His successor *Uccanā* (Uzana) was not his son but his nephew. *Uccanā* died at Dala; probably he was assassinated. His elder son and successor *Man Yan* (Min Yin) also met the same fate. *Tarukpily*, his half-brother finally became king. When the Mongols came, he took refuge in the hills west of Prome. *Syan Disāprāmuk*, (Shin Dithapāmuk) a reverend monk was sent on a peace mission to Peking in 1285. *Disāprāmuk* was able to persuade the Great Khan to withdraw the invading

INTRODUCTION

army and so the king returned to Pagan but was killed on the way. This is the political "story" of Burma during 1044-1287 told in the light of epigraphic evidence.

The Buddhism as practiced in those days was in general very similar to the one as practiced in Burma to-day with the exception that the Brahmanical influence was more felt than at the present day. When tracing the rise and development of the Buddhist monastic order various facts have been observed which upset some of the traditional beliefs of Burma. As mentioned above, the Ari sect appeared only in the latter half of the dynasty and it was not a very debased form of religion as alleged. Another point of great interest is the presence of *bhikkhuni* - female ascetics - in the Order in those days. Most Burman to-day maintain that women were not allowed in the Order since A.D.456. The thesis ends with the architectural and social aspects of the period under survey in chapters nine and ten which are also of much importance as they aid the better understanding of the Religion in those days.

CHAPTER I

HISTORY OF BURMA 1044-1174

PAGAN is the first of the Burmese capitals if we accept that Sriksetra belongs to the Pyu and Santwāy Prañ¹ or Tagaung to the Saw Kantū (Thaks)² peoples. Therefore it is of great importance and interest, to trace the history of its existence. The city wall of Pagan is assumed to be the oldest extant monument of Pagan and C. Duroiselle dated it at A.D. 850. He said :

... the date of this wall is about 850 A.D., the year of the foundation of Pagan; it is still clearly visible, together with the moat, on three sides of the ancient city; the fourth side, which ran along the river bank, has disappeared owing to the encroachment of the river; on this side, a kind of bastion can be seen quite near to the Circuit House, and a few traces of the wall are seen here and there. Shin Mahākassapa, a celebrated *thera*, in the thirty stanzas concluding his *Sahassaranisi Tika*, a commentary on the *Mahābodhiyāma*, which he wrote in 1174 A.D., gives a graphic description of Pagan; among other things he mentions that the walls had twelve gates, only one of these, the Sarabha gate is now extant.³

But in view of the fact that Burmans came into Burma in the 9th century A.D.⁴ it would be too early to place the foundation of Pagan at 850. Anyhow, some religious buildings were found to be in existence prior to A.D. 1044.

Many of the pagodas at Pagan are obviously post-*Aniruddha* but there certainly were monuments, etc. which had been in existence since the foundation of the city. Excavations at the Petlaik pagoda, which is generally attributed to *Aniruddha* revealed some mouldings of older structure beneath. In this respect, Sir John Marshall remarked:

This fact is of some interest, because it confirms a supposition already formed on other and stronger grounds that Buddhist buildings existed at Pagan before the reign of Anawrata and that that monarch was responsible not for the introduction but for the development of that religion in Upper Burma.⁵

Pagan is said to have been quite ancient even before the advent of *Aniruddha*.

The statement that Pagan was standing two centuries before the appearance of *Aniruddha* depends entirely on the chronicles. No inscription in Burma has been found yet to tell of the foundation of Pagan. The *Hmannan Yazawin* states that King Pyinbya (A.D. 846-78) built Pagan in A.D. 8496 but King Thamoddarit settled as early as A.D. 107 at Yonhlukkyun⁷.

identified with a site, now covered with cultivation, to the south of Taywindaung hill and about twelve miles to the south east of Pagan⁸

1. All old Burmese words from the inscriptions are spelt in accordance with the rules of transliteration given in page ii.
2. G.H. Luce: "The Peoples of Burma 12th, 13th Century A.D." *Census of India*, 1931 Vol. XI, i, App. F. pp. 296-306 and *JRRS*, XLII, i, 52-74.
3. Chas. Duroiselle: "The Nat Hlaung Kyaung, Pagan," *ASI*, 1912-13, p. 136, n. 3.
4. This is the theory held by Professor G.H. Luce.
5. J.H. Marshall: "Exploration and Research," *ASI*, 1906-7, pp. 38-9.
6. *Hmannan* para 124, *GPC*, p. 55.
7. *Ibid.* para. 112, *GPC*, p. 28.
8. *ASB*, 1915, p. 12.

He incorporated nineteen villages in the neighbourhood into his settlement. Unfortunately, except for the village of Ngaung-u we find no mention of the names of the other eighteen villages in the inscriptions. The 16th century *Celebrated Chronicle of Silavansha* has a different story. According to him Burma was divided into two parts, viz. (i) *Sunāparanta* being lands north of the Irrawaddy and (ii) *Tambudipa*, south of the Irrawaddy.² The Buddha in his life time visited *Sunāparanta* and stayed at a sandalwood monastery for seven days. During these seven days' sojourn he succeeded in converting 84,000 people. Henceforth Buddhism flourished in Burma. The city of *Sriksētra* was founded in 444 B.C. and it stood for six hundred years having twenty five kings. Then in A.D. 156, *Arimaddanā* (Pagan) was founded and it stood for one thousand one hundred and twenty eight years, i.e., until A.D. 1284 and it had fifty kings before the Chinese invasion and five kings after it.³ This story invites much criticism. The foundation of Pagan after the fall of *Sriksētra* in A.D. 156 is too early. The Great Shwezigon Inscription (A.D. 1186) mentions that *Sriksētra* was founded soon after the Lord's attainment of Nirvana and it stood until A.D. 656.⁴ Still, this date for the fall of *Sriksētra* and the rise of Pagan is early. According to the five-urn-inscriptions⁵, a *Vikrama* dynasty was ruling at *Sriksētra* as late as A.D. 718 (if we assume that S.80 mentioned there is of the era that starts in A.D. 638). Three names, *Sūriyavikrama*, *Hariyikrama* and *Sihavikrama* are mentioned successively as if to denote that they were grandfather, father and son occupying the throne of *Sriksētra* in lineal descent. Unless they were local chiefs and just vassals of Pagan, as some might suggest, Pagan could not have been in existence in A.D. 718. Even as late as A.D. 801-2 a formal embassy to China via Nan-chao was sent by the Pyu king.⁶ Accordingly we may infer that whether the Pyu were by that time centred either at Hmawza or at Halingyi, they were still very important and had not been overshadowed by the Pagan kingdom. The Chinese references to the Pyu are largely about this embassy of A.D. 801-2. The Pyu capital is described in detail save one important point - that of its location. Probably this Pyu capital was not Hmawza but further north in the dry zone. This capital and kingdom was destroyed in A.D. 832 by "Man rebels" who could be Nan-chao people themselves or some tribe under Nan-chao. There were further raids by these people into lower Burma in A.D. 835. In a list of Pyu towns and settlements (given by the Chinese) in A.D. 802, Pagan is not mentioned.⁷ Therefore it is certain that Pagan was established sometime after the Nan-chao raids of A.D. 832-5. Thus, Pagan must have been founded after A.D. 832-5 but not as immediately as A.D. 849-50 nor as remote as the middle of the 11th century. It ought to be between the two. It is possible that Pagan was known to her eastern neighbours even in those far off days. A Chinese account (*Ch'ien Han Shu*) of the first century A.D. according to Gabriel Ferrand, mentioned a place called "Fu-kan-tu-lu" which he thinks is Pagan. He explains that "Fu-kan" is the phonetic equivalent of the "P'u-kan" in the later Chinese accounts like the *Ling wai tai ta*, the *Chu fan chih* and the *Sung shih*. But we must also bear in mind that

1. "Sunāparanta is probably identical with Aparanta; the Burmese, however identify it with the country on the right bank of the Irrawaddy River, near Pagan (*Sāsundarama*, *Introd.* p. ix)" Malalasekera: *Dictionary of Pali Proper Names*, II. (1938), p. 121.

2. This north and south division is due to the fact that the Irrawaddy river, though its general course is from north to south, flows from east to west in the middle of Burma. North of the Irrawaddy apparently means the right bank of the great river, whereas the south is the left bank.

3. Silavansha: *Rājāvān kyaou* (*Celebrated Chronicle*) pp. 75-87

4. "The Great Shwezigon Inscription": *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, I, F14 (p. 125)

5. C.O. Blagden: "The 'Pyu' Inscriptions": *JBRS.* VII, ii, pp. 37-44

6. Tin and Luce: "Burma down to the fall of Pagan": *JBRS.* XXIX, iii, pp. 264-82

7. *Ibid.*, p. 272

the text¹ speaks of the kingdom of "Fu-kan-tu-lu" (not "Fu-kan") and that the kingdom was in contact by sea with China. On this point, Professor G. H. Luce says:

It would remove one of Ferrand's difficulties in this identification if for Fu-kan-tu-lu kingdom we read 'the Kingdoms of Fu-kan and Tu-lu.' Indeed Shih-ku's gloss seems to indicate that he regarded them as two distinct places. On the other hand the theory has against it whatever weight we choose to attribute to the Burmese chronicles, which place the founding of Pagan, by King Fyinbya in 849 A.D.²

Two Cham inscriptions, which can be safely dated anterior to A.D.1050 mention "Pukam" slaves. The Po-Nagar Inscription³ says that slaves of such nationalities as Cham, Khmer, Chinese, "Pukam" and Siamese, totalling fifty-five were dedicated to the Goddess Kāñyā. The first four lines of the Lomngoeu Inscription⁴ "refer to the donations made to a temple, viz., utensils and Chinese, Siamese and Paganese slaves."⁵ Border raids were frequent in those days and probably some Burmans were captured and taken away to Champa to become slaves there. This evidence tells us, at least, that even in times anterior to A.D. 1050, the name of Pagan was known to its eastern neighbours. But there are many names under which Pagan was known.

The variety of names for Pagan in the inscriptions give an interesting picture of Pagan and the lands immediately surrounding it. The classical name for Pagan is Arimaddanapura - The City of the Enemy Crusher, and early Mon and Burmese inscriptions frequently refer to the city by this name. It is also called by its native name which the Mon mentioned as Pokām⁶ or Pukām⁷ or Bukām.⁸ The Burmese way of spelling this name is either Pukam or Pukam. The earliest mention of the name was in A.D.1093 in connection with Thikzin Ma.

He shall become King of the Law in the city of Pokām that is (otherwise) named Arimaddanapūr ...⁹

Of the land that surrounds Pagan, the Mon gave it the name of Tattadesa¹⁰ - the Parched Land, which is the Dry Zone of Upper Burma or "at least the part thereof in which Pagan stands."¹¹ This name suggests that Pagan and its neighbourhood were, just as they are today, semi desert land of thorny scrubs. This rain shadow area in the middle of Burma cannot have been a wet forest land thick with undergrowth until the great temple builders appeared in the 11th and 12th centuries who completely deforested the area as their brick kilns demanded enormous supplies of firewood and turned it into a semi desert waste.¹² The monk Disāprāmuk who led the peace mission to China from Pagan in A.D.1285 called his country Tambadipa - Land

1. *JBRS*, XIV, ii, pp. 97-9, English translation of the text

2. G.H. Luce: "Fu-kan-tu-lu", *JBRS*, XIV, ii, p. 94

3. Aymonier: "Première étude sur les Inscriptions Tchamées", *JA*, jan.-fév. 1891, pp.28-9; Finot: "Notes d' Epigraphie", *BEFEO*, III, p. 633

4. Finot: *Op. cit.*, p.634

5. R.C. Majumdar: *Champa* III, p. 209

6. *Ep.Birm.* I, ii, VI²⁵, tx.150, tr. 151; VIII A², tx.156, tr. 163, VIII A¹⁰, tx.157, tr.164; VIII B¹⁴, tx.161, tr.167; VIII B²⁰, tx.162, tr.168

7. *Ibid.*, III, i, IX F¹⁵, tx.19, tr.51; IX G¹⁹, tx.22, tr.54

8. *Ibid.*, XI², tx.71, tr.72

9. *Ibid.*, I, ii, VI²⁵, tx.150, tr.151

10. *Ibid.*, I, ii, I F¹⁶, tx.106, tr.125; I F²¹, tr.125; I F³⁴, tr.125-6; I G²⁵, tr.127; H², tr.128

11. *Ibid.*, I, ii, p.125, n. 7

12. G.E. Harvey: *History of Burma*, p.16. See J.C. Mackenzie: "Climate in Burmese History", *JBRS*, III, pp. 40-6 and also *JBRS*, XXX, i, pp.289-90 and pp. 307-8, n. 38

of Copper.¹ Pagan ultimately became the core of the Burmese empire.

In the time of its power and splendour during the reign of Cañsu II (1174-1211) the empire was recorded to extend as far as the River Salween in the east, Mount Macchakiri (Chin Hills) in the west, Takor (Tagaung) and Na Chon Khyam (Ngasaunggyan) in the north and Salan Kre(?), Sacchitani(?), etc. in the south.² Probably the outlying districts of the empire broke away as the central government lost grip for Disāprāmuk told the Taruk king (Kublai Khan) that his country Tambadipa, was small and therefore of little importance save that Buddhism flourished there.³ It is of importance to note that the Pagan expansion started only in the 11th century.

The empire grew in this way. At first local chiefs ruled the neighbouring villages of Pagan and were addressed as mañ (king).⁴ Kyanzittha before he became king of Pagan was mañ of Thiluin, a village in Wundwin township. From among these mañ, it seems that the mañ of Pagan rose to power and made all other mañ subject to his control. Thus he became mañkri - The Supreme King. After the subjugation of the immediate surroundings, it was but natural for the mañkri of Pagan to expand and acquire a muññari - the lands of conquest. The first mañkri who started the programme of expansion was Aniruddha. There are no inscriptions of Pagan dated anterior to Aniruddha and therefore it would not be far too wrong to begin the dynastic history with him.⁵

Aniruddha (?1044-?1077) although he was popularly known as Anawrathaminsaw gave his regnal title in pure Sanskrit form Mahārajā Sri Aniruddha-deva.⁶ Seals of Aniruddha on terra-cotta votive tablets found in a wide range of area throughout Burma give a rough idea of the extent of his power. Therefore it is of no mean importance, to go into a close study of these seals here.

A great number of seals were unearthed and very roughly they fall into two categories; (i) seals having Sanskrit inscriptions without mention of Aniruddha and (ii) seals bearing the name of Aniruddha. There is a strong suggestion that group one seals were imported from India and group two seals were made locally.⁷ Regarding this Dr. Sten Konow's views⁸ are worthy of note.

Some votive tablets with a bilingual inscription in Sanskrit and Pali were also brought to light. They are evidently imitations of similar tablets deposited in Buddhist temples in India, especially in Bodh Gayā. The Burmese tablets are casts from a mould and the Sanskrit legend, which states that the tablet has been prepared by King Aniruddha must have been incised on the mould. On the lower rim of

1. Pl. 271²⁷, 30 (1285)

2. Narapatisitthu of the chronicles.

3. Pl. 19a⁶⁻⁹ (1196). Salan Kre probably is Cape Salang or Junk Ceylon.

4. Pl. 271³⁰⁻³¹ (1285)

5. Pl. 143a¹⁶

6. The only king before Aniruddha mentioned in the stone inscriptions was Caw Rahan who probably is Taungthugyimin or Nyaungu Sawrahan of the chronicles. He does not seem to have been a heretic, as he was labelled in the chronicles; he built a Siñha on Mt. Turan. Pl. 36¹ (1212)

7. Pl. 568a¹⁻²

8. ASB, 1915, p.16, para 43

9. L. Finot however refused to accept this view and explained the improbability of the moulds having been imported from India. Finot: "Un Nouveau Document sur le Bouddhisme Birman", JA, juillet-aout, 1912, p.130 n.1.

the tablet a Pali legend to the same effect has been incised by hand. The whole arrangement leads us to infer that the moulds have been prepared, with the Sanskrit legend, in India and that the Pali inscription has been subsequently added because Sanskrit was not understood. The tablets cannot, at any rate, be used to prove that Sanskrit was the language of the Buddhist Church in Burma before Pali was introduced. It has been urged that the form of the name Aniruddha instead of the usual Pali Anuruddha points in that direction. But supposing that the mould for the tablets was executed in India, Aniruddha would be the only possible form and the king's name, Anawrata, which can only be derived from Anuruddha and not from Aniruddha, proves, if anything, that the knowledge of Pali had penetrated sufficiently to influence the coining of personal names.¹

The next point of discussion would be the description of these seals.

The seal has, generally a

Buddha seated cross-legged with the right hand in the bhūmisparśa-mudrā and the other lying in the laps, palm upwards, on a lotus-throne under a foliated arch supported on pillars and surmounted by a hti. Some leaves, picturing the Bo-tree, may be seen on each side on the crown of the arch beneath the hti; there are also, on each side of the Buddha, two stupas with an elongated ringed finial, ... which has become the distinctive finial of Burmese pagodas for well nigh a thousand years.²

Below this, is a Sanskrit (sometimes a mixed Pali and Sanskrit) inscription which runs :

Eso bhagavā mahārāja Siri Aniruddhadevena kato vimūttattham sahathe nevāti.

Desiring that he may be freed from Samsāra, the Great Prosperous King Aniruddha himself made this image of the Lord.

There are also some terra-cotta votive tablets with the seal of Aniruddha and a relief figure of the Buddha flanked on either side by Avalokitesvara and Maitreya.³ These seals, vary slightly in size and some details but all bear the name of Aniruddha. They are found in and around Pagan⁴ and in places as far north as Nwa-te-lè Ywa-haung (a mile from Nga-o on the Shwei) of Mongmit State⁵ and as far south as Twantè.⁶ They are also found at Tagaung,⁷ Meiktila,⁸ Minbu⁹ and Prome.¹⁰ A tablet found in the relic chamber of the Shwesandaw pagoda has an inscription in Pyu in addition to the name of Aniruddha and therefore it is thought that when Pagan power spread over Lower Burma, Aniruddha removed the relics from some old pagodas of Sriksetra to be reenshrined in his new pagodas. Anyhow, the wide extent of the find-

1. Sten Konow: "Epigraphy"; *ASI*, 1905-6, p. 170.
2. Chas. Duroiselle: "Excavations at Pagan", *ASI*, 1926-7, pp. 162-3.
3. Tablets found at Sameikshe, Meiktila; *ASI*, 1921-2, pp. 90-1.
4. *ASI*, 1912-13, p. 89; *ASB*, 1913, p. 16; *ASB*, 1922, p. 44; *ASI*, 1926-7, pp. 162-3, 169; *ASI*, 1928-9, p. 111; *ASI*, 1930-4, pp. 177, 178, 188; *ASB*, 1940-1, p. 32.
5. *ASB*, 1948, pp. 8-9.
6. *ASB*, 1915, pp. 14-7.
7. *ASB*, 1916, pp. 37-40; *ASI* 1927, pp. 62-3.
8. *ASB*, 1920, pp. 23-4; *ASB*, 1922, p. 10; *ASI*, 1936-7, p. 165.
9. *ASB*, 1905-6, p. 10; *ASB*, 1911, p. 27; *ASB*, 1912, p. 19; *ASB*, 1913, p. 16.
10. *ASI*, 1907-8, pp. 38-42; *ASI*, 1911-2, p. 144; *ASB*, 1912, p. 13; *ASB*, 1913, p. 16.

spots of these seals of Aniruddha strongly supports the fact that he was a king of great imperialistic designs and his power extended from places as far north as Mongnit to the mouth of the Irrawaddy. In an inscription dated A.D. 1207, he was mentioned as Cakkrawatiy Anuradha¹ - the Universal Monarch Anuruddha, which also shows that even in the esteem of the Burmans who lived in about a century after his death he was already a great conqueror. But his conquest of the delta is really a problem of much debate.²

We have the story of Aniruddha's conquest of Thaton in 1057 thus :

In 1601 A.B. and 419 S. (A.D. 1057), King Anuruddha, the Lord of Arimaddanapura, brought a community of priests together with the Tipitaka (from Ramāññadesa) and established the Religion in Arimaddanapura, otherwise called Pugama.³

So says the Kalyāni Inscription of Rāmādhipati (Dhammazedi A.D. 1480). It also gives a hint that this was possible only because the Mon king Makuta (Manohari or Manuhā)⁴ was very weak at that time. Unfortunately, no contemporary record is found relating to this memorable episode. The motive of that conquest, the tradition says, was purely religious. But it is also possible that Aniruddha originally marched against some trading settlements (Indian?) in the delta and "the sack of Thaton was an after-thought."⁵ Another possible reason was that the Shan Yun were constantly annoying the Mon country and the Mon had invited intervention. It seems that he had "played the role of the lion who, called to intervene between two warring jackals, solved the difficulty by devouring both."⁶ After this conquest, a deliberate effort was made to transplant a culture that was Mon into the centre of a new and vigorous but somewhat raw ethnic group that was Burman. As such, the results of this conquest were momentous for the Burmans.

The introduction of Mon civilization had a long term effect. Culturally the conquerors were conquered. History affords many parallels of such happy results. A large number of inscriptions belonging to the period, immediately after Aniruddha, are in the Mon language. It is needless to say that the Burmans learnt the art of writing from the Mon.⁷ In architecture too, pagodas of that time like the Patothamya, Nagayon, Abeyadana, Gubyaukgyi, and Nanpaya are all of "Mon type".⁸ Thus it will not be very far from the truth to say that after A.D. 1057, for a certain period until the time of Cañsū II (A.D. 1174) or until the death of Thiluin

1. Pl. 160a⁶
2. "The Siamese chronicles assert that he attacked Cambodia and ruled over most of what is now Siam, obtaining the Hinayana Buddhism, which he established as the official religion of Bagan from Nakorn Patom. But there would seem to be no historical basis for such assumptions." D.G.E. Hall: *A History of South-East Asia*, p. 124; See also H. G-Q. Wales: "Anuruddha and the Thaton Tradition", *JRAS*, 1947, pp. 152-6
3. Taw Sein Ko: *The Kalyani Inscription*, (1892), p. 49
4. Pl. 358^{5,39} Professor Luce says "In old Mon inscriptions and the oldest of old Burmese, the sign for -u- was usually hung from the middle vertical of k and not (as always since) from the vertical on the right. It seems that archaic -ku- was later misread as -no- and king MAKUTA as king MANOHA, a name afterwards corrupted, naturally enough, into Manohari and MANUHA.". See also *JBRS*, XXXII, i, p.89.
5. *Ep. Birm*, I, i, p. 6; C.O. Blagden suggests the existence of "flouris' 'ng Indian Settlements" in the delta. In view of the fact that there is no direct evidence to support this, it is very unlikely that there existed Indian settlements in the Irrawaddy delta. The presence of an Indian trading community in some towns is however possible.
6. G.H. Luce: "A Cambodian? Invasion of Lower Burma"; *JBRS*, XII, i, pp. 39-45
7. Luce: "Peoples", *JBRS*, XLII, i, 64.
8. G.H. Luce: "Burma's Debt to Pagan", *JBRS*, XXII, iii, p. 121, n. 3 and "Mons of the Pagan Dynasty", *JBRS*, XXVI, i, 17

Mañ (A.D. 1113?),¹ allowing the time between 1113 and 1174 as the period of transition, the Burmese culture was more or less a copy of the Mon. In other words, 1057-1113 is the Mon period of Pagan culture. Apart from this Mon culture, there is another important result of this conquest of the delta by *Aniruddha*. It gives for the first time to the Burmans, an opportunity to have a direct overseas contact with Ceylon and possibly India.

These contacts are mentioned only in the chronicles. Desiring to have a tooth-relic to be enshrined in the Shwezigon pagoda, *Aniruddha* sent a mission to Ceylon to ask for it.² The chronicles of Ceylon make no mention of this mission. But a relationship of completely another nature is mentioned in the Cūlavarīsa.³ The king of Ceylon, *Vijaya Bāhu* (1065-1120) [Siri-singhabadhi] was engaged in a series of war with the Cola of South India and so he sent a fleet with many presents to ask for help from the king of Rāmañña. But by virtue of conquest, *Aniruddha* was already the lord of Rāmañña and therefore the king from whom *Vijaya Bāhu* expected help was *Aniruddha*.⁴ There is no mention of the date of this mission or the fulfilment of the request. But it might be sometime between 1060 and 1063 when *Vijaya Bāhu* was just a minor king trying to expel the Cola encroachments.⁵ Another mission, this time for religious purposes, was sent in 1071 when *Vijaya Bāhu* asked *Aniruddha* to send monks to carry out a religious reformation in Ceylon.⁶ This is worthy of notice as it opens for the first time a close religious alliance between Burma and Ceylon which was to become more important towards the end of the Pagan dynasty. King *Aniruddha* was succeeded by his son Mañ Lulan i.e. Sawlu in A.D. 1077.

Sawlu of the chronicles is recorded in the inscriptions as Mañ Lulan - the Young King. An inscription dated S. 573, Waxing 9 of Namkā, Tuesday⁷ (21 July 1211) mentions Mañ Lulan ordering an enquiry into a religious dedication. Another Pali inscription not dated, found at Mergui, bears the name of a king of Pagan and judging from the type of script, it belongs to the early period of Pagan. The regnal title of the donor mentioned in it is entirely different from the form of titles adopted by Thiluñ Mañ and his successors. Thus, a suggestion arises that this title Śrī Bajrābharanatribhūpati - The Victorious Bearer of the Thunderbolt, Lord of the Three Worlds, might belong to Mañ Lulan. It was in the time of his reign that the Mon whom his father probably subjugated, tried for the first time but unsuccessfully to free themselves from the Burmese rule. It was probably the Ngayamankan

1. *Rājakumār* (Myazedi) Inscription says that in A.B. 1628 Thiluñ Mañ became king of Pagan and after a reign of 28 years, he was 'sick unto death'. It seems that he never survived that sickness. This gives us A.B. 1656 or A.D. 1112 as the last years of his reign. But "List 73 inscription" tells differently. It says that in S. 513 Cañū I (Thiluñ Mañ's successor) was 63 years old and was on the throne for 37 years. Thus, S. 450 was the year of his birth and S. 476 (A.D. 1114) his accession or the end of his predecessor. Professor Luce splits the difference and dates his death provisionally in A.D. 1113.

2. *Hmannan*, para. 135a; *GPC*, pp. 88-91

3. Wijesinha: *Mahāvamsa* II, p. 81 (1909) and Wilhem Geiger: *Cūlavarīsa* I, p. 202

4. *ASB*, 1920, p. 17, para. 34

5 & 6. *Op. cit.* pp. 89-90. The date 1071 is fixed on the authority of the *Ancient Inscriptions in Ceylon* edited by Müller, p. 61. See also *Epigraphia Zeylenica* II, pp. 246, 253-4; Rāsanāyagan Mudaliyār: "Vijaya Bāhu's Inscription at Polannaruwa", *Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, XXIX, 1924; Wijesinha: *Op. cit.* pp. 89-90 and Geiger, *Op. cit.*, p. 214

7. Pl. 60a3. All dates in the Christian Era (Julian) are worked out from the tables by Sir A. Irwin: "The Elements of the Burmese Calendar from A.D. 639-1752", *Indian Antiquary*, 1910, pp. 289-315

8. Pl. 548a¹

rebellion.¹ This *Man Lulan* was succeeded by *Thiluin Man* in 1084.²

A great deal about this great king is known from inscriptions belonging to his reign which are in the Mon language. The name Kyanzitha seems to be the modernized form of Kalancaasā³ - the Officer Prince.⁴ But in the inscriptions he is *Thiluin Man* - the King of *Thiluin* or *Thiluin Svar* - The Lord of *Thiluin*. His regnal title is *Śri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja* - The Victorious Buddhist King, Sun of the Three Worlds. The Great Shwezigon Inscription⁵ says that in A.B. 1630, *Śri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja* became king in *Arimaddanapura* and upheld the Buddhist religion to its utmost benefit. That great personage, before he was king at *Pagan*, was in a previous existence also the founder of the exalted city of *Śriksetra*. He was at that time known as *Bisnū* (*Vishnu*), the sage and he received help from *Gavampati*, *Indra*, *Bissukarma* and *Katakarma* in building that city. In the words of *Gavampati*, the inscription gives a lengthy account in praise of the achievements of King *Śri Tribhuvanāditya*, the reincarnated *Vishnu*. This is the royal propaganda, wherein we find some vague suggestions of an insurrection, its suppression, and reconstruction and rehabilitation works carried out by the king after the trouble. Probably, this is about the Ngayamankan Rebellion. The *Mahāthera* with *Sai Arix* - the Order, helped and advised the king in the administration of justice and the extirpation of heresy. But the panegyric of the king is so high that he almost becomes a mythical hero. The inscription then continues to give the promises of *Bisnū*. He said that if ever he were to become a king at *Pagan*, he would rule righteously, conscientiously. That king would act as the chief bull ever leading the herd to better and sweeter pastures. He would also recognise the ancient rights of all local chiefs. Here again, in the words of *Bisnū*, we find *Thiluin Man* promising his beloved people that he would be just and humane and he would bring prosperity to all. The Myagan Inscription⁶ gives an addition to his regnal title. It becomes *Śri Tribhuvanādityadhammarājarājādhīrājaparamisvarabala-cakkrāvār* - The Fortunate Buddhist King, Sun of the Three Worlds of Men, Devas, and Brahmans, King of Law, Excellent King of Kings, Lord Supreme, Mighty Universal Monarch. This royal bombast is supported by more laudatory phrases than in the previous inscriptions. The Prome Shwezandaw Inscription (1)⁷ dated S. 455 Waxing . . of *Srāwan*? (3 June 1093) mentions that *Thiluin Man* belongs to the *ādiccavamisa* - the solar race in paternal descent. Another inscription⁸ says that "his mother (being) born of the *Viļva* line, his father of the Solar race." It is interesting to note that the king never thought of claiming any relationship with *Aniruddha* though all chronicles and one post-Pagan inscription⁹ maintain that *Aniruddha* was his father. Let us now discuss his acts of merit.

1. *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, p. 116, n. 11. It is only a vague information but as there was no instance of enemies threatening the peace of the city (*Pagan*) during the reigning years of *Thiluin Man*, it must have occurred before his accession.
2. *Rājakumār* (Myazedi) Inscription 1-2, *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, B, pp. 96 and 115. The Great Shwezigon inscription gives A.B. 1628 as the beginning of Kyanzitha's reign. The difference is explained as A.B. 1628 (A.D. 1084) being the year of accession and A.B. 1630 (A.D. 1086) being the year of Abhisēka (coronation).
3. *List 33*² (B II 903) and *List 50* (A 19)
4. *Kalan* means an officer (see *JBR*S, XXX, i, p. 305, n. 25). *Cacsā* in the light of Ava period inscriptions¹⁰ probably means a prince on administrative duty.
5. *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, pp. 90-129
6. *Ibid.*, pp. 131-43
7. *Ibid.*, p. 151
8. *Ibid.*, p. 167
9. *Hledauk Inscription of Taungpyon*, *List 50*¹, (A 19), *SIP*, p. 4

The Myagan inscription already mentioned records the construction of a reservoir for irrigation purposes by order of Thiluini Mai. It shows how much the King was intent upon the welfare of his people. This record has also a vague suggestion of Thiluini Mai's effort to bring about a carefully copied set of the Buddhist scriptures. The Alampagan inscription¹ is substantially the copy of the Myagan inscription except that it records the digging of a tank by order of Thiluini Mai. The Ayethama Hill inscription² records the repair of a pagoda in the Mon country by order of the king. It bears the date of S. 460 waxing 13 of Vaisakhha (Friday, 16 April 1098). Another inscription³ tells us many interesting things done by the king such as the erection of a religious building, the copying of the Buddhist scriptures, the sending of a mission to Bodh Gaya to effect repairs at Vijrasana—the seat of Adamant, the offer of the four necessities to the monks, his friendship with a Cola prince, his request to all his people to live in accordance with the laws of the religion and his generous treatment to birds and beasts. About a decade before his death he built a new palace, undoubtedly of wood, as we can find no remains of it now.⁴ The king left an inscription giving full details of the construction of his palace.

The Tharaba Gate inscription or the Palace inscription⁵ gives precisely the time and date of planning, building and rituals in connection with the building, but no year date is given. According to Dr. Sewell:

the end of the year 1101 A.D. and the early part of 1102 best fit the particulars given.⁶

Probably it extended from December of 1101 to April of 1102. Two interesting things in this account are, firstly, the great importance attached to Vaisnavite rituals at the time when Buddhism in its pure form was supposed to be thriving and secondly, high places of honour given to Mon notables. The Naga worship was mentioned twice.⁷ Another point equally interesting is the first mention on the epigraphs of the word Mirma (Burmans)⁸ side by side with Rmei (Mon) and Tircu (Pyu).⁹ Unfortunately none of these inscriptions mention the king's services as a senior officer of Aniruddha and his love affairs which are quite popular with the chroniclers.

The Rājākumār inscription¹⁰ however gives us the last scene of his Thambula story. It reveals the pathetic act of a disinherited son by his most beloved wife approaching his father's

1. *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, p. 143

2. *Ibid.*, pp. 143-7; see also *JBRS*, XXVIII, i, p. 92. This inscription, now in the Rangoon University Library has been traced as originally belonging to the Myatheindan Pagoda (Kyak Talan) at Ayethama Hill (2 ½ miles from Mayangon Station or Taungsim Station on the Moulmein railway line.)

3. *Ep. Birm.* I, ii, pp. 151-68. The Prome Shwesandaw Inscription (III)

4. Pagan had a very dry climate and wooden buildings might have been the cause of many fires. Another palace was constructed in 1204 (Pl. 271). A great fire that razed the whole city to ashes occurred in 1225 (Pl. 122a²). The building of palaces in wood is not a practice confined to Burma alone. It is spread all over S.E. Asia. See C. Duroiselle: *Guide to the Palace at Mandalay*, (1925) p. 6

5. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, pp. 1-63

6. *Ibid.*, p. 3

7. *Ibid.*, IX H¹⁰ p. 56 and H¹⁵ p. 57

8. *Ibid.*, IX B⁴² p. 42

9. Luce: "Peoples", *JBRS*, XLII, i, 35

10. Popularly known as the Myazedi inscription, *Ep. Birm.* I, i.

death-bed to report his meritorious deeds done on behalf of the father, who in reply exclaimed *this a this a* - Well done! Well done! Prince *Rājakumār* was the son of *Thiluīn Mañ* and Thambula or *Trilokavatārāstikā* - The Ornament of the Three Worlds. Why *Rājakumār* was not given the throne after his father's death is a problem indeed. The *Glass Palace Chronicle* gives this answer. *Mañ Lulan* (Sawju) on the advice of his counsellors recalled *Thiluīn Mañ* (*Kyanzittha*) soon after his accession. *Thiluīn Mañ* left Thambula who was with child, commanding her to bring him the child when born if it be a boy. *Thiluīn Mañ* became king later and married his daughter to *Sawyun*, son of *Mañ Lulan*. A young prince was born of this union and the king made this grandson his heir. The rightful heir i.e. son of Thambula came late (two years after his accession to the throne) and therefore the king could only make him a governor.² Without giving the year in which the grandson was born, the story appears quite sound. The epigraphic evidence refutes the story.

The king ascended the throne in A.D. 1084 and in A.D. 1086 his son *Rājakumār* who was then seven years old appeared at the court. The grandson, who was made heir, was born in A.D. 1088 according to "List 73"³ inscription. Therefore it is impossible to believe the story that *Cañsū I* being made heir was accidental. It seems that political expediency required the king to do that deliberately. An inscription⁴ the script of which does not seem to be contemporary suggests an altogether new theory. It says that *Asawatdhammā* son of *Sudhammarac* (son of ? *Makuta*), planned a rebellion but King *Narapaticāñu* appeased him by promising to marry his own daughter *Rhweimsañ* to *Nāgasman* the son of *Asawatdhammā*. With this marriage tie, he peacefully and wisely averted the danger of a Mon rebellion. To later inscription writers, any king of Pagan can be *Narapaticāñu* and therefore it is not impossible to take this king as *Thiluīn Mañ*. He might have contracted this marriage tie between his daughter and the great grandson of *Makuta* (*Mañuha*) during the *Ngayamankā* rebellion and even promised the throne to the offspring of that union so that both Mon and Burman could accept the next king without question. If that is true, *Thiluīn Mañ* must be considered as the most statesman-like of all the Burmese kings. But it was unpleasant for later Burman patriots to remember this and therefore they probably tried to forget it. Later Burmans also tried successfully to reverse his language policy.

He used the Mon language in all his inscriptions and this strongly suggests that he used Mon as the official language of his kingdom and with this, he hoped that the two peoples would soon forget their racial differences and become a single nation as Saxons and Normans mixed freely and became the English nation. Anyhow this language policy did not survive for long its patron. There was a transition period from 1113 to A.D. 1174 during which time the use of Mon language was gradually replaced by Burmese until the time of *Cañsū II* (1174-1211) when the Mon language was no longer used. *Thiluīn Mañ* was succeeded by his grandson *Cañsū I* who was popularly known as *Alaungsithu*.

As mentioned above, *Cañsū I* probably was the son of the Mon prince *Nāgasman* and the Burmese princess *Rhweimsañ*. He was born in A.D. 1088⁵ and ascended the

1. The *Rājakumār* Inscription Mon face, line 17, *Ep. Birn.* I, i, p. 55

2. *Hmannan*, paras. 132 and 139; *GPC*, pp. 100 and 108

3. *List 73¹⁻²* (A 28) mentions that this successor of *Thiluīn Mañ* was 63 years old in S. 513. Therefore his year of birth was S. 450 (A.D. 1088).

4. *List 346* (A 8). This inscription is dated A.D. 1274

5. *List 73¹⁻²* (A 28) and Pl. 173¹⁻²

throne in A.D. 1113.¹ His name *Cañsu* is the burmanised *Jayasūra* - The Victorious Hero.² In post-Pagan times, he is usually mentioned as *Alaungsithu* - The Future Buddha, The Victorious Hero. His other names were *Saktaurhāñ* - Long Life, *Rhuykū Dayakā*³ - Donor of the Shwegu Temple, and *Śri Tibhuvanādityapavaradhammarāja*⁴ - Sun of the Three Worlds, Most Excellent King of Law.⁵ The name *Saktaurhāñ* implies that he lived long but we cannot tell with certainty the year of his death. According to the chronicles he ruled until S. 529 (A.D. 1167).⁶ But the *Dhammayangyi* inscription⁷ tells us that his successor had finished building the *Dhammayangyi* pagoda in A.D. 1165 and therefore his rule terminated one or two years earlier—probably in A.D. 1163. If so, he reigned for fifty years and died at the age of seventy five. He left a very important record.

This most interesting record of *Cañsu* I's is a Pali-Sanskrit inscription of two faces set in the wall of the *Shwegugyi* temple of Pagan (A.D. 1131).⁸ Except for the date which is written in Sanskrit, the rest of the inscription is in Pali verse of great poetical merit. Professor Pe Maung Tin says:

It is such good Pali. Some verses of the prayer remind us of the canonical *Mettasuttā*, or the Discourse on Love.⁹

The last stanza of the inscription mentions the name of the donor and the dates of the beginning and completion of the shrine.

Thus the writing on this stone is made by the King *Śri Tibhuvanādityadhammarāja*, who is endowed with mindfulness, firmness, intelligence, character, who is a seeker of the constituents of *Nirvana*. Prosperity! The cave¹⁰ was begun on Sunday the 4th day of the dark half of the month of *Vaiśakha* (when the moon was) in conjunction with the constellation *Uttarāsadhaka* and (the sun was) in Leo in *Saka* year 1053. This cave was completed on the 11th day of the dark half of the month of *Margasīra* on (Thursday) at the conjunction of the sun with the constellation *Vaiśakha* in 1053 *Saka* year.¹¹

This is the one and only instance of the *Saka* Era of A.D. 78 being mentioned in the Pagan inscriptions. The dates correspond to Sunday 17 May 1131 and Thursday 17 December 1131.¹²

1. See above, p. 10, n. 3

2. PI. 365a¹

3. PI. 60a⁴

4. PI. 311b¹⁸

5. PI. 118; PI. 241

6. GPC, p. 132

7. PI. 4 & 5 (1165)

8. PI. 1-2

9. JBRs, X, ii, p. 67

10. The term "cave" used here means an artificial cave and not a "cave-temple" like Ajanta of India. Perhaps, "fellow-pagoda" is a better translation for the Burmese word *ku*. See also JBRs, XXVI, i, p. 45

11. JBRs, XXII, iii, p. 151

12. In checking up the dates and rendering them into equivalents in the Christian Era, with the help of Sir Alfred Irwin's Charts (14, 1910, pp. 289-315), I find that second Tagu is used instead of second Wazo in this intercalary year of S. 493.

The king is alleged to be a great traveller¹ even visiting places far beyond Burma by land and sea but we find no mention of his travels in the inscriptions. As mentioned above, he lived probably for seventy five years and died in A.D. 1163. The Mount Thetso inscription² gives a list of early Pagan kings and thus we are able to tell who succeeded *Cañsū I*.

It records that on S. 573, waxing 9 of *Namka* (Tuesday 21 July 1211), the daughter of *Marhak Sañ Nā Sok Sañ*, the clerk of *Kamkun*, poured water and dedicated to the pagoda the land which was exempted from revenue as a result of a legal enquiry of *Mañ Lulap*. Then it continues:

...*Thiluin Mañ lak thak le hwat e'* / *Sak Taw Rhañ lak thak le hwat e'* / *Im Taw Syan lak thak le hwat e'* / *Narapti lak thak le hwat e'* / ...²

It was exempted also in the reign of *Thiluin Mañ*; also exempted in the reign of *Sak Taw Rhañ* (*Cañsū I*); also exempted in the reign of *Im Taw Syan* (*Kalagya*); and also exempted in the reign of *Narapatī* (*Cañsū II*).

True to tradition *Nātārāmyā* after becoming king on Thursday 10 waxing of *Tuiñslāñ*, S. 573 (18 August 1211)³ also granted the same exemption. Thus according to this inscription, *Cañsū I* was succeeded by *Im Taw Syan* - The Lord of the Royal House.⁴ In old Burmese, a palace is called *im taw* and therefore the name implies that he built a new palace. In the chronicles he is Narathu or Kalagya. We find no epigraphic evidence about his deceit and cruelty as mentioned in the chronicles. We cannot also ascertain that being angry with the king, the *mahāthera Panisakū* went over to Ceylon. But the Sinhalese chronicle *Cūlavañsa* records charges against the King of *Ramañña*.⁵ It says that the two kingdoms i.e. *Lañka* and *Ramañña*, since they belonged to the same faith, had friendly relations for a long time. Trade between the two countries also flourished. Then suddenly the foolish king of *Ramañña*, who was then *Im Taw Syan* ill-treated the Sinhalese merchants and took exorbitant rates on all exports, largely elephants to *Lañka*. To avenge this King *Parākkramabāhu I* (1153-1186) sent an expedition to Burma under general *Ādicca*. As a result the Burmese king was killed. It even claims Sinhalese suzerainty over Burma henceforth. The Devanagala inscription gives the date of this invasion as A.D. 1165.⁶ The Burmese chronicles say that Narathu (*Im Taw Syan*) died at the hands of Indians from Pataikkhaya.⁷ The Dhammayangyi pagoda of Pagan is attributed to him and its inscription⁸ is dated A.D. 1165. Therefore it seems that he was king only for a short period (1163-5) during which time he built that pagoda and it was left unfinished when he was assassinated by the Sinhalese in 1165. According to the Mount Thetso inscription quoted above, he was succeeded by *Cañsū II*. But between *Im Taw Syan* and *Cañsū II*, there was an interregnum of nine years. The chronicles try to fill in this blank with a fictitious king called *Minyin Naratheinkha*.⁹

1. *Hmannan*, para. 141; *GPC*, pp. 113-22

2. Pl. 60a⁴⁻⁵

3. This date in Pl. 60a⁹, S. 573, waxing . . . of *Tuiñslāñ* Thursday is completed from the date given in Pl. 90¹

4. This name does not apply to all kings of Burma as Pharaoh - the Great House, is used for all kings of ancient Egypt

5. *Wijesihpu: Mahāvarīsa II*, pp. 189-92 and *Geiger: Cūlavañsa II*, pp. 64-70

6. See S. *Paranavitana*: "Devanagala Rock-Inscription of *Parākkramabāhu I*", *Ep. Zey.*, III, vi, pp. 312-25

7. Pataikkhaya is in Tippera district, north east of Chittagong. See also *Harvey: Burma*, pp. 326-7

8. Pl. 4 & 5 (1165)

9. *Hmannan*, para. 143; *GPC*, pp. 133-8

The chronicles have one Minyin Naratheinhka (1171-4) as the king before *Cañsū II*. This is clearly a mistake because *Narasiṅgha Uccanā*, whose regnal title was *Sri Tribhavanādityapavaradhammarājadhirājadānapati*¹ was son and successor of *Nātonmyā*² and not of *Im Taw Syāñ* (Kalagya). *Nātonmyā* ascended the throne on Thursday, 10 waxing of *Tāuslañ*, S. 573 (18 August 1211)³ and reigned for about twenty years. We find in an inscription⁴ that in A.D. 1231, a king (his name is illegible) made a dedication and shared the merit with his younger brother *Klacwā*. *Klacwā* ascended the throne on 4 Waxing of *Nāmikā*, S. 547 (19 July 1235).⁵ Therefore, it is possible that *Klacwā*'s elder brother and his predecessor (*Narasiṅgha Uccanā*) ruled from A.D. 1231 to A.D. 1235. A law suit recorded in an inscription dated A.D. 1259⁶ says definitely that from *Nātonmyā* to *Tarukpily* there are five kings, perhaps excluding *Mañ Yan* whose reign was so short that his name was left out of the list. The corrected dynastic table shown below will be of much help to understand this.

KINGS OF PAGAN 1044-1287⁷

1. <i>Aniruddha</i>	?1044-?1077	(1. Anawrathā, founder of the empire	1044)
2. <i>Mañ Lulañ</i>	?1077-1084	(2. Sawlu, son of 1	1077)
3. <i>Thiluñ Mañ</i> [Usurper]	1084-1113	(3. Kyanzittha, son of 1	1084)
4. <i>Cañsū I</i>	1113-?1163	(4. Alaungsithu, grandson of 3	1112)
5. <i>Im Taw Syāñ</i>	?1163-1165	(4. Narathu, son of 4	1167)
Interregnum	1165-1174	(6. Naratheinhka, son of 5	1170)
6. <i>Cañsū II</i> [Aniruddha Line]	1174-1211	(7. Narapatisithu brother of 6	1173)
7. <i>Nātonmyā</i> , son of 6	1211-?1231	(8. Htilominlo or Nantaungmya, son of 7	1210)
8. <i>Narasiṅgha Uccanā</i> , ⁸ son of 7	?1231-1235		
9. <i>Klacwā</i> , son of 7	1235-?1249	(9. Kyaswa, son of 8	1234)
10. <i>Uccanā</i> , son of 8	?1249-1256	(10. Uzana, son of 9	1250)
11. <i>Mañ Yan</i> , son of 10	?1256		
12. <i>Tarukpily</i> , son of 10	1256-1287	(11. Narathihapate or Tarokpyemin, son of 10	1254)

1. Pl. 138¹ and Pl. 568b⁵⁻⁶2. Pl. 138² and Pl. 200¹3. Pl. 90¹4. Pl. 672,⁹5. Pl. 90¹⁴⁻¹⁵ and Pl. 181¹6. Pl. 193⁷7. Names and dates in parenthesis are from *Handbook of Oriental History*, (1951), p. 1318. The chronicles combine this king's name with No. 11 King *Mañ Yan* and thus a fictitious name of King Minyin Naratheinhka appears and he is made the predecessor of *Cañsū II*.

CHAPTER II

HISTORY OF BURMA II 74-1287

WHILE Mon together with such languages as Pali, Sanskrit, Pyu and Burmese was used during the transition period, with the advent of Cañsū II we come to the Burmese period of Pagan culture as opposed to the Mon period in the first half of the dynasty. It seems that a reaction against Mon influence set in and a burmanising movement, which in the course of the next three centuries influenced Mon much more than Mon had done Burmese, started with full force. With the change in language came an entirely different style of writing. The Burmans started writing their language in a simple and straightforward way. They used short sentences probably because they were less sophisticated and more vigorous than the Mon or the later Burmans. An example of the new style is given below :

/ o / Uiw, Klaw Sañ kloñ plu pri / Sākarec 560 Ta (po) la pleñ lhvat (e) kloñ 3 chōñ (sa) ñkan achū cum 2 pā sañkan 2 . . . ñ (p) iy tum . . . si pateñsā 1 pañ nwā ma 1 lhū e / sāñsarā (leñ rā rā) chuñ nrāy luw nrāy ma luw (plañ cum sate) . . . luw sāñsārā achum nyurapan tuiñ (khyāñ e) / / lup sū khapañ ra ca pā ci / / o / / chimi dhoñ 1 (e) piy e kathin le piy e kadhi (n) . . . so ap 40 ñā cā karā 20 / / luim khwāk 4 khlap sapit ta luim. khōñ loñ 1 chū khri (n) hap 20 nañ cwā rañ atuñ ma si liw sa te2

Having built a monastery, I, Uiw, Klaw Sañ, on 11 February 1199, dedicated (to the Religion) three monasteries, two complete sets of monastic robes, two robes, a padesa—wishing tree—and a cow. Wheresoever I wander in samsara I wish not misery like hell. May (the wishes) be fulfilled, I wish nirvana at the end of samsara. May all the workers (on the pagoda) share my merit. I gave a thousand oil lamps, kathina robes, forty needles, twenty jars, four cups, an almsbowl, a bell, twenty khri nhap.³ My capital is small; my wants infinite.

For the sake of comparision, an extract from a Mon inscription written in praise of Kyanzitha is given below.

/ smiñ dewatāw / gēy kāl kirmūn gna smiñ Śrī Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja goñ yañ pnāñ c-ññ ma jnok kum ci yal gabbha tlūñ / yañ nimir jirnah dumihic nukṣat durāhic stlūñ ta gna smiñ Śrī Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja goñ / gēy kup cinleñ gna smiñ . Śrī Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja goñ sñūk kṣeh pumirey moy ma nom ku punras row kṣeh ma das not kirkūl mat brey scinleñ ci stum bah row tney ma tāw kum /⁴

"O king of devas! In the time of the reign of King Śrī Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja, if another army should come, a good omen of victory, an auspicious constellation shall come before King Śrī Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja. In the time of

1. Cañsū I's Shwezigon Inscription Ep, Birm., III, i, No. X, pp. 68-70 is in Mon, the Shwegugyi Inscription (Pl. 1 & 2) is in Pali and Sanskrit, Rajakumrī Inscription is in Mon, Burmese, Pyu and Pali. The Burmese inscriptions of this transition period are Pl. 110, Pl. 111-112, Pl. 3, Pl. 4-5.

2. Pl. 117b

3. Probably sandals for monks.

4. Ep, Birm., I, ii, 1 C¹⁵⁻²², pp. 118-9.

war King Sri Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja shall ride upon a noble steed that has swiftness even as the steeds that are of the breed of the clouds, (and) shall fight (and) shall shine like the noonday sun."

With the change in the language came the change in architecture.

A new style of architecture gradually replaced the "Mon type". Professor Luce gives a very good picture of this change.

The Burman, in contrast with the Talaing of those days, was an unromantic matter-of-fact person. He wrote in prose and not in poetry. He described simply, without exaggeration - very differently from Burmans of latter days. The dim religious light, dark corridors and rich lurid colouring which Mons liked in their temples he disliked. And when he borrowed their style of architecture he soon knocked out big open doorways on all sides of their murky bat-ridden temples, and let in sunlight; and his taste in colour and design was far brighter and lighter than theirs!

Let us now study the nature of the early Burmese inscriptions.

Largely the inscription pillars were put up to record their dedications. They dedicated lands, slaves and various kinds of commodities to pagodas and monasteries. This is the main form of their investment as they believed that in so giving away their property they would ultimately attain *nirvana*. They took every care to record what they had given away in charity. The slaves were listed by name, nationality, age and status. The area, class and extent of the lands were given in detail. Witnesses to their good deeds were cited by name and position. Dates were given for all specific occasions. In conclusion they blessed all supporters of their meritorious works, cursed all infringers of them and prayed for the boon of eternal peace. Thus, the inscriptions they left behind are brief in statement but contain historical material and are never dull to read. As the use of the native tongue became popular, it seems that everybody who could afford a dedication would think his work of merit incomplete unless he recorded it on an inscription. Thus, we have more epigraphs in this latter half of the dynasty than in the earlier one. Thanks to these we know more about their kings than we know about their predecessors. Still, little is known of Cañsū II except the date of his accession, how many queens he had, and his children.

The Saw Min Hla inscription² (which is a copy made in Bodawpaya's reign from the one made by Saw Min Hla the *aprontoau*³ - concubine - of Cañsū II) definitely mentioned that "in S. 536 (1174) Cañsū Mankri ascended the golden mountain" i.e. the throne. Cañsū II had six queens and many concubines. The queens were :

1. *Toñphlarisan* - The South Queen
2. *Miacphlarisan* - The North Queen
3. *Caw Mrakan Sañ* - The Queen of the Emerald Lake
4. *Vañamisikā (Uchokpan)* - The Ornament of the Head
5. *Caw Ahwan* - Queen Paragon
6. *Veluvati* - Queen Gift of Bamboo

1. JBRS, XXII, iii, pp. 121-2

2. Copy. List 7157 (B. II. 839)

3. *Aproni* is the term used for lesser wives in the law books. See D. Richardson : *The Damathat or the Law of Menoo*, p. 94. Probably *aprontoau* here means "Royal Junior Wife".

Queen Toṇphlaṇsañ¹, though her name implies that she was Cañsū II's chief queen, was actually not. Probably she had no children. Queen Markansañ's son inherited the throne and therefore she stood next below Markansañ in position. The Mahadhi inscription (1211)² gives the names of the donors listed in order of their rank and position and thus we are able to give the names and status of Cañsū II's queens. It says that in S. 573 Waning 7 of Santu, the Mahāthera Dhammavilāsa dedicated some ornaments, 119 slaves, 14 oxen and 100 pay³ of land from the Kanplah region to the Tilomanguir pagoda (?Trailoklubohbuil - The Great Happiness of the Three Worlds.)³ After him the great King Cañsū II dedicated to the same pagoda 50 pay of land from Waranut and 30 pay from Mapaṇcara Hurānay village. Next, Nātoñmyā, who was still the Crown Prince at that time, dedicated 100 pay of land from Khaminmū. Next, Queen Mrakansañ (Nātoñmyā's mother) dedicated 50 pay of land from Mapaṇcara lake area. Next, Queen Toṇphlaṇ Sañ⁴ dedicated 40 pay of land from Toṇplun. Next, Queen Miacphlaṇsañ dedicated 30 pay of land from Putak. Next, Queen Uiw Chok Pan's three sons were dedicated as slaves to the pagoda by the great King Cañsū II and he himself redeemed them by dedicating 30 pay of land from Ui Chok Kuiw. Then, Princess Acaw Mai Lha who was the only sister of Nātoñmyā, dedicated 30 pay of land from the Calan area, 20 from Rwā Sā, 20 from Mapaṇcara and 10 from Sa Yoñ. The land dedicated were therefore 510 pay in total.

The Midwedaw inscription (1179)⁵ mentions that the Queen Toṇphlaṇsañ dedicated her slaves and lands of Lak Pari village near Krā Puiw. Queen Miacphlaṇsañ, according to the Mahadhi inscription quoted above, holds a third position⁶ among the queens of Cañsū II. In old Burmese, the word mlacphlaṇ or mlac ok means the north and later it is shortened to mlok. Usually the north queen occupies a second position. We have another mention of her name in the Laydaunggan inscription⁷ but unfortunately, it is largely illegible except for the blessings and prayers. Queen Caw Mrakansañ, as the mother of Nātoñmyā (1211-1231) the son and successor of Cañsū II, was considered very important, although she was of humble birth.⁸ The interesting story of the king's whitlow and her tender care of it,⁹ according to traditional accounts, has one weak point so that we feel reluctant to accept it in full. According to the story her son Nātoñmyā was the youngest among the king's sons,¹⁰ but in token of love, the king promised her to name him his successor. Epigraphic evidence shows that he was not the youngest son.¹¹ The queen's dedication of lands to the Mahāthera

1. A king in Burma when giving audience faces east with his chief queen on his right side i.e. the south. Therefore the South Queen is the Chief Queen.

2. Pl. 34

3. Ink Inscription Pl. 367b. (Burmese)⁷ and (Pali)⁴. Bāruci was the original builder of this pagoda. But he died in 1125 without completing it. Sam Tra Uil continued the building which was completed in 1217 and he gave the name Tilomanguir (Trailoklubohbuil) to this pagoda in 1223. It is very interesting to note that the name of this pagoda sounds very much like a Mon name and that such a name was given to a pagoda at the time when burmanization was in full force. Probably, this name is corrupted into Htilominlo.

4. Pl. 34⁸

5. Pl. 256^{3,20}

6. Pl. 34⁹

7. Pl. 342

8. Hmannan, para. 143; GPC, p. 141

9. Ibid., para. 143; GPC, p. 141. See also Harvey: Burma, pp. 58, 329

10. Ibid., para. 143; GPC, p. 151

11. See below pp. 19-20

Dhammarājaguru, tutor of her son (*Nātoñmyā*) and daughter (*Acaw Mañ Lha*)¹ is recorded in the Mahadhi inscription.² It seems that she died some time between 1220 and 1231 as one of her grandchildren in 1239 recorded the dedication of some lands and slaves which originally belonged to the old grandmother Queen *Škhiñ Phīlwā Marakan Sañ* and had devolved through *Nātoñmyā* who died in ?1231 to the donor of the *Hsinbyushin pagoda*.³ In 1244, when another grandchild *Sattyā* made a dedication at the *Thinganyon pagoda*,⁴ he expressly prayed that Queen *Marakan Sañ* may also get the merit of his good deeds:

...i suiñ nā plu so koñ mhu kā phurhāloñ Cañsū mañkri amiphurhā Marakan Sañ rā
cay sate...

The last mention of her name in the inscriptions is in a legal case of 1291 when her name is referred to as the original owner of the land in dispute.⁵ Queen *Vatamiskā*, also known as *U Chok Pan* - The Ornament of the Head, was fourth in position among the queens of *Cañsū* II.⁶ She was the younger sister of *Uiw, Thak Plañ Sañ*⁸, the Lady of *Tuin Sañ*⁹ and *Sūlāphirac*¹⁰ husband of *Kroñtau Sañ*.¹⁰ She had three children (or 'sons') who were once dedicated to the *Tilomañguir* pagoda by *Cañsū* II and were later redeemed.¹¹ The three children were *Rājasūra, Gaṅgāsūra* and *?Pyamkhi*¹² who with the exception of the last, figured as the most important persons next to the king in the state, during the reigns of *Nātoñmyā, Narasiñgha Uccanā* and *Klacwā*. They were given high places of honour, probably because their mother Queen *Vatamiskā* came from a very highborn Sinhalese family. We know very little about Queen *Caw Alhwan*. The *Dhammarājika* pagoda built by *Cañsū* II was completed in 1198 and in 1200, Queen *Caw Alhwan* dedicated slaves to that pagoda.¹³ In 1231-2, the queen and her daughter *Sattikāñi* made another dedication of slaves to the same pagoda.¹⁴ The last queen in our list is *Veluvati*, of whom the chronicles write a very lovely but quite mythical story.¹⁵ She was found in a giant bamboo "born of heat and moisture" and she had all the attributes of a lovely damsel except that her ears were too big and she was pot-bellied. When brought to the palace she was first offered to king Minyin Naratheinhka who refused to accept her because of her big ears and stomach. The queen-mother cut her ears to the right size, put her on a diet and gave her to *Cañsū* II who was then the Crown Prince.

1. Pl. 34¹¹, Pl. 63a⁷

2. Pl. 63a¹⁰

3. Pl. 133²⁶

4. Pl. 153a^{5-6,11}

5. Pl. 272²⁸

6. Pl. 915, 94a⁶, 145¹⁴ (*Uchokpan*)

7. Pl. 34¹⁰. (*Uiw Chok Pan*)

8. Pl. 143a⁷, Pl. 143b⁵, Pl. 145¹³

9. Pl. 144²¹ (father of Queen *Caw*), Pl. 145^{14,15}

10. Pl. 145¹⁵

11. See above p. 17

12. *Rājasūra* - Pl. 90²⁰, Pl. 91⁶, Pl. 94a^{6,21}, Pl. 104¹⁴, Pl. 374³⁰, Pl. 375⁹, Pl. 376^{9,47}. *Gaṅgāsūra* - Pl. 90²⁰, Pl. 186⁷, Pl. 374³⁰. *Pyamkhi* - Pl. 42¹⁴, Pl. 94a²⁶, Pl. 186¹

13. Pl. 369b¹⁶

14. List 163¹³ (A 50)

15. *Hmannan*, para. 143; *GPC*, p. 135

"When her ear was cut aright she bore a marvellous beauty insomuch that all men seeing her were dazed and could not stand upright." It was because of her beauty that *Cañsū* II quarrelled with his brother (King *Minyin Naratheinkha*) and eventually the King was killed and *Cañsū* II succeeded him.¹ Unfortunately, as mentioned above, epigraphic evidence shows that there was no intermediate king between *Im Taw Syan* and *Cañsū* II. Nor can we find mention of *Veluvati*'s son *Jayasūra* in the inscriptions. In the Sulamani inscription (1175)², this *Veluvati* was mentioned as the donor of the *Nadaungtāp* pagoda. We can trace only two names from among the king's concubines and they were *Aproñsou Co Man*: *Lha*³ and *Moñma Khan Mi Nay*⁴ who made a dedication in 1198. In another dedication dated 1206 this *Khan Mi Nay* was mentioned as *Co Khan Mi Nay*. She probably was promoted then to queenship because we have many instances in the inscriptions showing that only queens and princesses used the prefix *Co*. Perhaps she was the king's favourite. *Cañsū* II must have had many children, of whom we know that *Nātonñmyā* and Princess *Acaw Manlha* were born of Queen *Mrakan Sañ*, *Rājasūra*, *Gañgasūra*, and *?Pyamkhi* were born of Queen *Vañamisikā* and Princess *Sattikāmī* born of Queen *Caw Alhwan*. There were three others, namely *Kramsuñkri* (father-in-law of *Samantasū*),⁵ *Siñghapicañ* and the wife of *Byaggasūra*,⁷ but unfortunately we cannot trace the names of their mothers. *Cansū* was succeeded by *Nātonñmyā* on 18 August 1211.⁸

In the inscriptions, the new king is known as *Nātonñmyā*⁹ or *Nātonñ Skhin*¹⁰—The Lord of the Ear Ornaments. The chronicles name him *Nandaungmya* because his mother made many entreaties to *Cañsū* II that he might succeed to the throne.¹¹ This does not hold good any longer. *Nātonñmyā*, though his mother was a gardener's daughter,¹² was undoubtedly able and efficient and not the youngest son of *Cañsū* II as alleged.¹³ He succeeded to the throne superseding the three sons of *Vañamisikā*, who by blood, seem to have had a better claim to the throne. Perhaps, *Nātonñmyā*'s gentleness and affability won their superficial submission.¹⁴ All or at least one of them, i.e. *Pyamkhi*, however might have been plotting against him who in their eyes was a usurper. Ultimately in alliance with Prince *Siñghapicañ*, and Prince *Klacwā* (younger son of *Nātonñmyā* who later became king in 1235), *Pyamkhi* rebelled.¹⁵ Undoubtedly the attempt failed and most probably *Pyamkhi* and

1. *Hmannan*, para. 143; *GPC*, pp. 135-6

2. *List* 97 (*UB*, I, 173)

3. *List* 715 (*B*, II, 839)

4. *Pl.* 292

5. *Pl.* 51³, *Pl.* 83²

6. *Pl.* 41¹⁰, *Pl.* 42¹⁴, *Pl.* 7427, *Pl.* 133¹⁶

7. *Pl.* 162¹⁵, *Pl.* 182a⁹

8. *Pl.* 901

9. *Pl.* 312-3, *Pl.* 346, *Pl.* 63a2-3, *Pl.* 64², *Pl.* 186⁵, *Pl.* 239¹¹, *Pl.* 272²⁹

10. *Pl.* 41³, *Pl.* 231b¹, *Pl.* 273¹

11. Probably the chroniclers read *Nan:tonñmyā*: (*Nandaungmya*) instead of *Nātonñmyā* which is quite possible and had to fabricate a story to support their reading.

12. *Hmannan*, para. 143; *GPC*, p. 141

13. *Ibid.*, para. 143; *GPC*, p. 151

14. *Ibid.*, para. 143; *GPC*, pp. 150-1

15. *Pl.* 42¹⁴, *Pl.* 186¹¹

Singhapicāñ were executed; but the king forgave *Klacwā* and *Pyamikhi*'s son (name unknown) possibly because of their youth. It seems that, *Rājasūra* and *Gaṅgasūra* remained loyal to *Nātonīmyā* henceforth. When *Klacwā* ascended the throne, they two together with the ministers *Mahāsamanta*, *Amritta* *Lakyā*, *Anantajayapikrama* and *Mahāsatti* were appointed to form a royal commission enquiring into the authenticity of the religious lands, especially the *Hañ Ram Pa-Ak* lands dedicated by *Jayapayattati*.¹ If the evidence was weak, King *Klacwā* was intent upon confiscating them as he was very much concerned with the dwindling of the state revenue owing to the ever increasing extent of the religious lands from which he could collect nothing. When appointing the said commission, *Rājasūra* and *Gaṅgasūra* were described as *mañ phathuy* – the king's father's younger brothers i.e. *Nātonīmyā*'s younger brothers.² Thus we come to the conclusion that *Nātonīmyā* was, if not the eldest, one of the senior sons and definitely not the youngest son of *Cañsū II*. Likewise another name of the king *Htilominlo* – the Choice of the White Umbrella as well as his Predecessor – cannot be taken as true.³ He is also called *Uccanātha* a name adopted for the first time by a Pagan king. Probably, the name is *Uccanātha* – the High Protector – which has a close resemblance to *Uccadeva* a name by which *Vishnu* is sometimes known. His regnal title is *Sri Tribhavanādityapavārādhammarājā* – The Victorious King, Sun of the Three Worlds, Most Excellent King of Law.⁴ As mentioned above, he was Queen *Mrakan Sañ*'s son and his younger sister was Princess *Acaw Mañ Lha*. In his youth he was educated by a monk on whom he conferred the title of *Dhammarājaguru* when he became king.⁵ This monk was mentioned as the native of *Molañā*, a village to the east of *Dala* in Lower Burma. If he was a Mon by race, which is not unlikely, it is important to note that Mon still remained teachers and advisers at the Court of Pagan when the tendency at that time was to forget the Mon influence. We know more about the reign of this king than of his predecessors.

In the rebellion in the early years of his reign when his halfbrothers *Singhapicāñ* and *Pyamikhi* rebelled,⁶ and his younger son *Klacwā* sided with his enemies, the king had to depend largely on the services of his five ministers to quell it. When the trouble was over, he pardoned his son and the son of *Pyamikhi* and to his five ministers he gave each seven hundred pay of land as *ray chu* – the reward for valour. They were *Asañkhyā*, *Anantasū*, *Asawat*, *Rājasāñkrami* and *Caturañgasū*.⁷ Probably, *Pyamikhi*'s son surrendered to *Asañkhyā* because, it was the latter who brought the rebel prince back to Pagan and it was to him that the king gave all the former slaves of that prince. The minister *Anantasū* was the *Mahāsenāpati* – Commander-in-Chief, of *Nātonīmyā*. He and his wife built the Laymyakhna pagoda, Minnanthu, Pagan and left a great number of inscriptions recording their deeds of merit. One of these inscriptions⁸ records a law suit concerning slaves and tells us an interest-

1. Pl. 90
2. Pl. 90

3. Tentatively, the name *Htilominlo* is the corruption of *Tilomaniguir* which also is possibly derived from *Trañolklubhbuil* (Pl. 34², Pl. 367b⁷). See above p. 17, n. 3

4. Pl. 36⁴, Pl. 42¹⁶, Pl. 78b⁹, Pl. 90¹, Pl. 123³, Pl. 190a¹²

5. Pl. 312. Identical with the title of *Cañsū I*

6. Pl. 63a²⁻³, 13-14

7. Pl. 42¹⁴, Pl. 186¹¹

8. Pl. 42¹⁷, Pl. 190a¹²

9. Pl. 78b. See also Chapter X

ing story of how slaves were bought and sold or given away to settle debts. Another of his inscriptions¹ mentioned the procedure of an appeal court which was called *Atamī tryā*. The appeal court judges mentioned in it were *Cañsaphāñ Mlat, Baccrapatiy, Patañsa and Mahāway*. They were officially called *sañphama* i.e. judges, as distinct from ministers and governors. The minister *Asawat* (?*Asyathāma*) was in his civil duties, the *aklām tāñ so man̄ amat*² – Royal Registrar. His wife built a *kū* – hollow pagoda, in 1236 to commemorate his death and dedicated slaves to it. The reverse face of the inscription³ recording this dedication has a detailed account of the building-costs⁴ which gives us comparative prices of the commodities in the Pagan period. The minister *Rājasāñkram*⁵ was a prominent judge of *Nātonmyā*'s reign. The chronicles regarded him as the cause of *Tarukpily* being made king in 1256, superseding his elder brother.⁶ But we do not know how far it is true. It seems that *Rājasāñkram* became the chief minister during the reigns of *Nātonmyā*'s successors. The minister *Caturāngasū* was also a judge and his associate judges were *Mahāsaman, Kāñkaphirac, Atūlaisawir* and *Nāriñtasū*.⁷ Another important officer of the reign was *Sambyari Jeyyapwat* (*Jayapavattati*) who built the *Zeyaput* pagoda, East Pwazaw, Pagan and the inscription of that pagoda⁸ gives the exact dates of the accession of *Nātonmyā* and *Klacwā*, which were S. 573 waxing 10 of *Tāauslāñ*, Thursday (18 August 1211) and S. 597 Waxing 4 of *Narikā*, Thursday (19 July 1235) respectively. This inscription also gives another four associate officers of *Jeyyapwat*, viz. *Satyā, Cañkray, Kramaphat* and *Siri Indrapicāñ*. *Narasingha Uccanā* was *Nātonmyā*'s successor.

Nātonmyā was succeeded in 1231 by his elder son *Narasingha Uccanā*, whose regnal title was *Sri Tribhavanādityapavaradhammarājadānapati* – The Victorious King, Sun of the Three Worlds, Most Excellent King of Law, King of Kings, Lord of Charity.⁹ *Narasingha Uccanā* had probably two queens and they were Queen *Cāw* and Queen *Phwā Jaw*. Queen *Cāw* had two sons *Singhapat* and *Tryāphyā*¹⁰ and probably a daughter *Acaw Lat*. The North *Kūni* inscription (1241) records the meritorious deed done by Queen *Cāw*, the wife of *Narasingha Uccanā* and the mother of Prince *Singhapat* and Prince *Tryāphyā*.¹¹ *Acaw Lat* wife of *Jeyyasaddhiy* who served as minister to the king was probably her third child. She left an inscription dated S. 623 Waxing 5 of *Miwaytā* (3 August 1261) which is of immense historical value.¹² Because of this inscription, we are able to say that *Nātonmyā* was succeeded by *Narasingha Uccanā* and not by *Klacwā* directly as the chronicles say.¹³ It was written thus:

।। *Sri Tribhuvanādityapavaradhammarāja mañ so man̄kri sā im rhiy man̄ Nārasiñgha*

1. Pl. 79b¹⁷. See below p. 44 and Chapter III

2. Pl. 96⁶

3. Pl. 97

4. See *JBRS*, XXX, p. 327, n. 105

5. Pl. 371a⁵

6. *Hmannan*, para. 147; *GPC*, pp. 158-60

7. Pl. 125a²⁻⁴

8. Pl. 90^{1,15}

9. Pl. 138¹, Pl. 568b⁵⁻⁶

10. *Trāyaphyā* probably means *Dhammarāja* – the Lord of Law. In the post-Pagan period, it became so popular that many kings were called by that name.

11. Pl. 1382,³

12. Pl. 200

13. *Hmannan*, para. 145; *GPC*, pp. 154-5. See also *JBRS*, XXII, ii, pp. 100-2

Uccanā samī Acaw Lat mañ so mañsamī nhañ amātyā kri phlac tha so Jayyasaddhiy mañ so dāyakā moñ nhañ 2 yok sañ | chanawuti rogā | kuiw chay khrok pā so anā | battiñsakammā | krammā 32 | pañcavasati bhayā | bhuuy 25 pā | iy inhyā so bhuuy anā | samīsarā chuiw ñray khapañ khlup rā arap phlac tha so sabbañu purhā chu kuiw ra khlyāñ so kroñ |

Princes Acaw Lat, daughter of Narasiñgha Uccanā who was son and Heir Apparent of the great king Sri Tribhayanādityapavaradhammarāja (i.e. Nātoñmyā) and her husband Jeyyasaddhiy, the great minister - these donors husband and wife desire the boon of sabbaññuñāñāna - Buddhahood, which is the end of samsara and all the miseries like 96 diseases, 32 causes of evil and 25 calamities.

Another important queen of Narasiñgha Uccanā was Phwā Jaw. In the Minwaing inscription (1272)² she called herself the daughter-in-law of Nātoñmyā but she did not mention the name of her husband. He could have been either Narasiñgha Uccanā or Klacwā. When sharing the merit of her good deed said:

/ i suiw lhyāñ nā plu so koñmu akliuiw kā | / riy mliy khapsim so askhiñ phlac tha so mlat cwā so nā lañ skhiñ mañkri | / nā sā mañkri | / nā mliy mañkri | / i mañkri sum yok ca so noñ lā lat so mañ khapsim le nā atū ra ciy sate |

The reward of the good deeds thus done by me - may my most excellent husband lord the king, lord of the water and land; my son the king; my grandson the king - may these three kings and all the kings to come hereafter, get it equally with me.⁴

Definitely, her son the king and her grandson the king were Uccanā and Tarukpliy. She mentioned Klacwā in her inscription⁵ but not as her husband and from other inscriptions⁶ we have the name of the queens of the Klacwā. She was not among them. Therefore her husband the king most probably was Narasiñgha Uccanā. Thus, Narasiñgha Uccanā was succeeded by his younger brother Klacwā with whom he had shared his merit on making a dedication on S. 593 Waning 1 of Plasuiw⁷ (11 December 1231).

Klacwā became king on S. 597 Waxing 4 of Namikā, Thursday⁸ (19 July 1235). He was also known as Caw Kri.⁹ We do not know the name of Klacwā's mother. She died when he was very young. The Laymyakhna inscription (1253)¹⁰ set up by his aunt says:

/ / Sakarac 597 khu | / Ásin nhac Namikā la chan 4 ryak Krāssapatiy niy | / Klacwā mañ rhuy ton tak pri | / nā mi kuiw kā nā ma si luik | / nā mithuy muy ruy nā kri

1. Pl. 200¹⁻⁶

2. Pl. 234 & 235

3. Pl. 234³⁸

4. Pl. 235¹⁰⁻¹¹

5. Pl. 234^{26,28,32}

6. Pl. 246², Pl. 273²⁰

7. Pl. 67¹⁻²

8. Pl. 90¹⁴⁻¹⁵, Pl. 181¹

9. Pl. 234^{28,32}

10. Pl. 181¹⁻⁴

e, nā mithuy lhyān te nā mi e, hu ruy // im plu niy piy e, // im thon kywan lay le piy taw mū e, //

On 19 July 1235 Klacwā ascended the golden mountain. "I never knew my mother. My aunt brought me up and so I grew. Truly my aunt has been a mother to me." So saying, he built a house and gave it to me to live in. He also gave me household slaves and rice fields.

This aunt built a hollow pagoda and dedicated the slaves and lands given to her by the king to that pagoda in 1253. The house he gave was also turned into a monastery. It is a mystery still why Singhapati and Tryāphyā, the two sons of Narasiṅgha Uccanā by his chief queen, were ousted from the succession by Klacwā and why the succession reverted to the older branch of the royal family on the death of Klacwā. Probably the sons of Narasiṅgha Uccanā were too young when their father died and therefore their uncle was made king. But there must have been a sort of agreement between the two branches that after Klacwā the succession should revert to the older branch.¹ It seems that there was some opposition to Klacwā's succession. The Minwaing inscription² records a rebellion in the year following his accession. It says:

// Sakarac 598 khu // Kratuuk nhac Mlwaytā la chan nā ryak Tannhañkanuy niy // Siriyadhanā plac sa rhawackuiw Singhapikram plac pā e, // atuiw Skhiñ Cawkri Kwan Prok Nay nhuik niy taw mū so Singhapikram mayā min e, // atuiw kywan lan Pukam sā // niy ra ciy la siy // nā kywan // lay // uyan kā skhiñ yu ciy khlyān hu min e, // min taw mū piy rakā Pukam niy ra e, //

On 9 June 1236 when Siriyadhanā sinned (i.e. rebelled), his elder brother Singhapikram was involved in the sin. Our Lord Cay Kri (i.e. Klacwā) was sitting in the Kwan Prok Nay - the Small Variagated Hall, when the wife of Singhapikram said: "Your servant's husband - let him, I pray, be allowed to remain here at Pagan. My slaves, paddy lands and gardens - I would ask my lord to take them." (The king) allowed Singhapikram to remain at Pagan (but confiscated his estates).

Another inscription³ mentions that two monks were involved in a rebellion against Klacwā. This is the only instance we have in the inscriptions of our period of monks getting mixed up in politics.⁴ The king also had some trouble with the monks in a land dispute.

Klacwā probably was very much annoyed by the loss of revenue owing to a great increase of religious lands and therefore an attempt to confiscate the religious lands was one of the first measures he took after his accession. The Zayaput inscription says:

// Sakarac 597 khu // Āśin nhac // Narikā la chan 4 ryak Krāsapatiy niy ā // mārkri sā mān Klacwā rhuy ton tak ruy // akriy añā nhuik te mahādān mliy khapsin yū lat te //

On 19 July 1235 the great king's son Prince Klacwā ascended the golden mountain and after that mahādāna lands of up-stream and down-stream he took.

1. There was no rigid law for succession but usually the eldest son of the chief queen succeeded to the throne. There were however many exceptions.

2. Pl. 23431-4

3. Pl. 10224-5

4. See below Chapter VII for details.

5. Pl. 9015-16

In the course of this measure he confiscated the *Hañ Ram Pa-ak* lands dedicated by *Samibyan Jayapavattai* to a forest monastery. The monks raised an objection and therefore he had to appoint a commission to look into the matter. The commission reported that the monks were right and therefore the king had to re-dedicate the *Hañrami Pa-ak* lands to the monastery. Anyhow by this confiscation many pay of land were lost to the Religion for ever. But tradition required *Klacwā* to make dedications of land etc. during his lifetime and therefore some would be undoubtedly restored to the Religion. *Klacwā* made a big dedication immediately after his accession.¹ He even gave a hundred pay of land to the Brahmins who probably conducted his coronation.¹ It was in his reign perhaps between 1237 and 1248 that the monks *Subūticanda* and *Dhammasiri* went over to Ceylon for educational purposes.² Possibly a religious purification movement started after their return from Ceylon. The most important minister of the reign was *Mahāsamanta*³ who was the chief minister as well as the viceroy of the northern part of Burma. He was sometimes called the Viceroy of *Koñcañ*⁴ as he had to take charge of the *Koñcañ* area (near Bhamo) which was probably the northernmost part of the Burmese empire. *Klacwā* also tried to improve administration and ensure peace in his kingdom.

Towards the end of the reign *Klacwā* issued an edict against all malefactors dated 6 May 12495 and he decreed that his edict must be written on stone pillars and every village with more than fifty houses must have one erected in the village. Only eleven of these edict pillars have been discovered. Perhaps there were more than eleven but not so many as the king originally intended. The reason for this may have been that he died before the completion of his orders and that his control of outlying districts was weak. The promulgation of the edict against all malefactors is almost an admission of the general prevalence of unrest. His confiscation of the glebe lands was probably one of the causes of dissatisfaction in the country. The reconstructed text of this edict is given below.⁶

|| o || Sakarac 611 khu Mruikkasuir samiwichir || Kuchum la chut⁸⁷ ryak
 Krāsapatiy niy || Mākhā naksat || Methun lak || 5 nā rī pī || atuiw purhā Caw
 Kri Skhiñ Śri Triphayanātītyāpavārapaññitadhammarāja mañ so purhā rhan̄ taw ||
 rhiy⁸ thuy taw || nañ alwāñ so sū mya takā tuiw || ū sā thak ā || tañ lhā lañ ||
 nañ lū myā takā tuiw || i lū twañ so khyāñsā tamunyan so khyāñsā kuiw luiv so sū
 kā || i nā cakā kuiw ruiw siy so | yuri so mū ruy | lhamacok nā thoñ ruy nā ap e, ||
 aphay kroñ nhe hū mū kā || akrañ kroñ || iy nā cakā kā | mimi kuiw praññā phlañ ||
 kram̄ ruy chuiw so ma chuiw so ma hut cwāñ || mlat cwā so purhā skhiñ sabbāññ
 cakā kuiw mhi ruy chuiw sate ||

rhiy lwan so mañ tuiw kā || khuiw cā so sū tuiw kuiw kā || tam̄klañ lhuiw so ka
 ca so athū thū so sat khrañ phlañ | sat kun e, || thuiw suiw so sattawā takā tuiw

1. Pt. 102¹⁸

2. See below Chapter VIII for details.

3. Pl. 85²⁴, Pl. 90²⁰, Pl. 102⁷, Pl. 125a³

4. Pl. 158²⁰⁻¹

5. The date of the pillars are not all uniform. Some are dated S. 611 Waxing 9 of *Kuchun* (22 April 1149), and some are dated S. 611 Waning 3 of *Kuchun* (1 May 1249).

6. Pl. 166ab, Pl. 167-9, Pl. 170, Pl. 173-4, Pl. 343 and Pl. 345ab are all edict pillars and an almost complete text has been reconstructed out of them by Professor G.H. Luce. See also *JBRs*, XXVI, i, p. 70

7. Pl. 166ab, Pl. 167, Pl. 168-9 have *chan* 9; Pl. 170 has *chut* 3.

8. Pl. 166ab & Pl. 168-9 have *hū*; Pl. 170 has *rhiy*; Pl. 171-2 & Pl. 173 have *hu ruy*.

e / apyak acī kuiw ma tuiw so kroñ / satiawā takā tuiw kuiw || mimi sa kay suiw / ok miy lat ruy. / / krunā sañ tuij lat ruy || chuiw so cakā te || thuiw kroñ rakā / ruiw siy so yum so mū ruy / lha ma cok nā thoñ ruy nā ap e hū so te // asuwiñ mū ruy nā ciy su nhe / o, i mañkri kā / / mimi kuiw prañā phlañ kram ruy chuiw so ma hut takā || mlat cwā so purhā sakin // sabbañ cakā kuiw / mhi ruy chuiw so cakā te // i nā cakā kuiw luik mūkā / i lū twañ so khyamisā // tamunwan so khyamisā kuiw ma hway ra lyāñ so tū kāñ // i suiñ nhac lum mū ruy nā ap e ||

i mhya so khuiw ca kun so sū tuiw sañ kā / khyamisā ra amī sate hū ruy khuiw ca kun so te / / ayañ tuiw / khyamisā ra nuiw so sañkā / sū rhok sū rwā sū miyā sū sā / sū utsā / apyak acī / anuñ athak mu ra so kuiw khyamisā nuiw pan kyāñ so te // thuiw khyamisā hū2 so sañ-kā / kuiw sat l (a) lam so khyamisā te / thuiw kā khyamisā te ra e' lo / apyak acī kuiw te rok e'3 lo // thuiw le nañ tuiw krami kun (ap e,) ||

khuiw ca so sū tuiw sañ kā / mi lat so le / tamklañ lhyuiw so / rāñ puchitñ nhāñ pok so / samkrap nhāñ kañ so / a - û nut sò / apoñ alak phay so / myak chan thwac so / asā lhi ruy cā piy lā so / ariy chwac ruy (s)ā mā so / thiñ thwan4 ruy chí pū swan so / lañ rhuy mlup ruy thwan4 so / puyan cañ ruy chan nañ ciy so / saepañ phak ciy ruy tamisāñ nhac so / a(rhañ ma mluk) so / lañ phrat so || i y suiñ so ka ca saphlañ ayañ tuiw kā chuiw nray kri ārok kun so te / / ma mi so krā le / ip so / niy so / ryap so / swā so ka ca saphlañ le / / ta ciy sa lhyāñ le ayañ tuiw kā ma khyamisā cwam te // krok lan lyak lhyāñ ayañ tuiw kā kham ce kun sa5 te // im nkuik le ma niy cwam / niy pū muñ rwā lhyāñ kyañ so te / ma khuiw cā so sū tuiw sañ lhyāñ le / bhuñ i khs khs te rok lat mūkā // im twañ lhyāñ niy kyañb mū le / nhāñlum kā / chuiw nray kri cwā so mat lo7 / / khuiw cā so sū tuiw sañ kā / aphay hu khs lip nhe / yakhañ acan can ka khuiw cā so sū tuiw sañ kā ta yok tañ lhyāñ le lwat e hū so sañ kā ma hiy phū // krā cwā achurñ kā / nhac sumi nhac mruñ kā j ma krā phū ma lo // i y cakā kā yakkhu (chuiw) sā ma hut / trya twañ le i y suiñ min e,8 // siy lyaw ruy khuiw cā so sū kā / nray kri prittā asūrā tiritchan apay 4 pā so sañ kā ayañ khuiw sū9 im lhyāñ mañ e, // siy lhyāñ rok liy tum tum te hiy e, // ma siy mi lhyāñ10 le / pham mi lhyāñ / sū khuiw hū ruy11 / mañ nhup lat e, // mañ le / cami ta lam / khuiw so hū amāñ ma tañ mū ruy // khuiw mūñ chan kram so sū khuiw piy 2 e, // thuiw sū tuiw le cit ciy miy e,12 // khuiw so ma hut cañ mū kā / lhwat e, // khuiw sa hut cañ mū kā / amunwan cā kuiw phat ciy e / amunwan cā twañ akrañ sū khuiw sañ / i mañ so / aplac te phlac mū kā / i mañ so13 tan. piy te piy ap e, hū piy e, // mañ sū khuiw

- Pl. 170 has am so hut tā.
- Pl. 166ab and Pl. 168-9 have hut.
- Pl. 168-9 and Pl. 170 have kun.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have twañ.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have hi.
- Pl. 168-9 and Pl. 170 omit kyāñ; Pl. 166ab has salyak.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have rok e.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have piy ma lo.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have sulkhuiw.
- Pl. 170 omits lhyāñ.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9 omit ruy.
- Pl. 166ab, Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have cat ruy.
- Pl. 170 has merely amunwan cā kuiw kram ruy tan piy re.

aplañ nhañ i munwan cā kuiw nuiñ krami ruy / thuiw aplac nhañ tañ ap so tan. kuiw mū e,¹ // iy kā mañ ta kā amunwan hut-tā //

kuiw sū tuiw sañ kā i lū twañ le athū thū so sat khrai ā rok kun e // asuiw sat khraiñ nhe hū mū kā ariy² nay sami chū tap ruy khat so / achū hiy so krim lumi nhañ khat so / nā lhi so / nhā khoñ lhī so / khriy lak phrat so // thiip thwañ ruy sami pū ray ray thañ ruy / ū nok kluik 2 chū lyak siy so / khram twañ kan phi³ ruy chimi nhī so ch(arī) yok (rā) ariy ryan ruy chām choiñ nāñ phī ruy ū riy chwac pri so ū khoñ khwam khañ sami lhañ kan nhañ khat so / lakwai pukhum / lakyā pukhum ok suiw puchac kan ariy chwac phi ruy ok so ariy kā (a)khriy suiw khla e⁴ / athak so ariy kā ū khoñ suiw lhī lay so / ariy khapañ chwac pri so kā awañ riy kā apa suiw thā ruy lhāñ so (l m)iy ūhap nhami ariy kuiw katkriy nhañ ryan so // asā hiy rā / khit ruy lhī so // lak tan ton rhiy phrat so⁵ / khriy puchac rhuy phrat so / sami khwā a khu cwap ruy twā ciy so / acōn ip ciy ruy nā twañ tamāñ nak so⁶ // khriy 2 phak sumi ruy pau 2 lheñ so tū nhañ (n)u(p) 2 thū ruy / kuiw khapsim uiw khyāñ suiw khuy bhi ruy lheñ so / ariy kuiw sañ thum nhañ cat ruy / sami parā chā plā reñ swan so / arhañ lhyāñ kuiy (cā) ciy so / lañ phrat so / kuiw lak (khap) añ amhuik rec ruy mi phut so // i suiw so sat khrañ sañ kun e, //

thuiw mruiw tamunwan le / Tāpana mañ so ūray kri nhyuk le kyak kun e, // thuiw (ūray kā) kuiw alūñ lhyāñ [atwañ apa (ūray cī) plāñ lyak] tok (tha) su te // ayañ tuiw kā mi acā phlac (iha) su te // nīy nā atuñ (chañ ūray) kun (rā e, // i s)uiw kliw(i)y (iha) sate (l) ūray asak mlañ khrañ kā ūray asak (hū) kā anhac ta sin te lū nhac phlañ twak [tum] mūkā akutiy ta ... nhac hiy e, / khuiw ca.lyak e, ma khuiw (ca yo)ñ mū so ūkhuiw khrami khrañ kā lū phlac ruy / ariñ warñ twañ thwak sa kā / lañ ma mrañ ra mu ruy siy so kā tac kamphā lhyāñ khrami te / tac kamphā khrami pri ruy / lū phlac lyak rhañ tum so le / kuiw nik-kā wat rum cā rum lhyāñ mrañ / chuiw ūray kri lhyāñ phlac sate // uc(c)ā ra nrā tum le ayañ tuiw lak rwan / akrāñ akhrañ sañ phlañ (tañ) khlyāñ so uccā sañ / ma tañ cim so ūhāñ // lhiy mlok so // im loñ so // ka ca sa phlañ phuiy nhañ 2 phlac⁸ e // khuiw ca so ayyañ kroñ kā / taninnwan so chuiw ūray kri rok bri ruy // tamunwan so kh(yam) sā // i lū twañ so kyam(sā) ra kroñ aphy (nhe hu) mu kā // akrāñ kroñ (hū e i nā cakā) mi 2 kuiw prañā phlañ krami ruy chuiw so ma hut cwam⁹

.....(cha)y
kruy chay / su khlaw saphlañ lañkon / su ta .. s(a) lumi la saphlañ lañkon / tryā sa phlañ / asak (muy ap) e / i suiw kyan mukā / i lū twañ cañcim khyamisā khway wa

1. Pl. 170 omits this sentence mañ sū khuiw...tan kuiw mū e.,

2. Pl. 170 has sariy.

3. Pl. 168-9, Pl. 170 have kat.

4. Pl. 170 has ok so ariy ka thak so lhī liy e.

5. Pl. 170 has atwañ riy, kā apa suiw thā ruy / lhiwam so, ariy kuiw kat kriy nhañ ryan sate // asā hiy rā / / khit ruy lhāñ sate / / lak tantoñ rhway⁷ phat so /

6. Pl. 168-9 & 170 have ruy.

7. Pl. 166ab & 170 have sate.

8. Pl. 166ab, Pl. 170 have kri sañ rok kun.

9. Pl. 166ab, Pl. 170 omit so khyamisa...ma hut cwam.

so phlac am̄ sate / althū le piy ap e / satañ le sum̄ ap e /ap e /
 thuiw suiw mu pri ū kā / tamunwan nhuik
k le / Sakrā mañ cañcim / ma lway ra lim sate / tamunwan so
 // i lū twāñ so // cañcim khyāñsā ra am̄ so kroñ kā / khuiw so akyāñ / ma kyan ap /
 koñ so akyāñ kā kyan ap e

i suiw nā niu koñmu kluiw kā / niyrapan paccāñ le phlac ciy sate / sattwā tañā
 le khyāñsā ciy sate / muiw liy le koñ le ciy sate prāñ tay le khyāñsā ciy sate /

444 klokāñ tuiñ chok s(ā) kā niy kyan le phway / tañchon plu / pitān chañ cwā kri
 cut / ta rwā ma lwat chok ciy te / rwā nay cwā achum̄ kā a-im. (50) y(hu)y chok ciy te
 ta la mà lwat la plāñ satañ niy nhuik rwā sūrok sūkri rwā sañ khapañ ra so tancāñ
 chañ lyak pok 2 tanchoñ (panton) kawthā nhañ pucaw / cañ pasā le ti / i (suiw mū.ru)y
 klok cā tuiñ cā kuiw nā ciy kun sate chok (ū) so (purhā Cawkri) cwā mū ciy sate cā
 phat sa sū le (ryā)...tanchā chañ ruy [phā] ciy sate tuiñ ma hiy so rwā nay rhok
 nay tuiñ pañ khaw ruy / tuiñ hiy rā suiw nā pā ciy kun (e//)

On Thursday 6 May 1249 our lord Cawkri (i.e. Klacwā whose regnal name is) Sri Triphavanātityā pavarapanditadhammarāja ordained thus. Those desiring prosperity in this life and in lives hereafter should obey my words with respect and belief and listen attentively. Because I do not speak in my own words or wisdom but I speak after the words of the most excellent and omniscient Lord.

Kings of the past punished thieves by divers tortures starting with impaling. I desire no such destruction. I consider all beings as my own children and with compassion towards all, I speak these words. That is why I say that my words should be obeyed with intense reverence. Listen to my words with attention because they are spoken after the words of the most excellent Lord. Obedience will give one prosperity in this life and in lives hereafter without fail. With attention listen!

Do those who live by thieving think that they gain this way? They acquire prosperity by destroying other people's villages, wives, children, goods and chattels. Gains thus acquired will be the very cause of their own destruction in the end. Do consider whether these acts are really beneficial or not.

When caught a thief is to be punished with one or the other of these punishments. He is impaled. His berast is split open with the axe. He is roasted. His intestines are taken out. His legs and limbs are cut off. His eyes are taken out. Patches of his flesh are taken off. He is skinned and smeared with salt. His skull is split open and boiling oil poured in. He is buried in the earth up to the neck and a plough driven over him. He is skewered to the ground and trodden over by elephants. He is pinned alive to a tree. He is buried alive. He is beheaded. Under such tortures he experiences great misery. Even if he goes scot-free he cannot have peace of mind while sleeping, living, standing, going, etc. He does not prosper even in the least degree. He lives in constant terror. He becomes an outlaw and thus he cannot have proper shelter from sun and rain. Even those who live peacefully at home suffer a lot when they are sick, the misery of this homeless man when sick would be unthinkable. No thief has ever escaped punishment

until now. Perhaps, he manages to evade the law for two or three years but in the end he is caught and punished. He can never escape. According to "the Law", after death, four *apāya*, viz. *niraya*, *tiracchāna*, *peta* and *asura* will be his abode. There can be no alternative. Before death, when caught, a thief is brought before the king who asks his judges to try him. If the verdict is not guilty, he goes free. If found guilty, amunwan -?Criminal Code, are referred to. Punishment varies with the nature of the offence and he suffers according to the degree of his crime. This is the way of all kings.

The thief shall suffer various tortures such as being flogged with a leather strap with iron thorns; being beaten with a cane with thorns; having his ears and nose cut off; having his legs and limbs torn off; having his skull trepanned and molten iron poured in so that the brains boiled like porridge; having his mouth fixed open with a skewer and a lighted lamp put inside; being skinned in strips from the neck to the hips, so that the skin falls in strips round the legs; being skinned alive from the neck downwards and having each strip of skin as soon as removed tied by the hair so that these strips form a veil around him; having bits cut out of the flesh all over the body; being horse-shoed and made to walk; having the head nailed to the ground by a spike through both ear-holes and then being dragged round and round by the legs; being pounded till the whole body is as soft as a straw mattress; having the body curled into a bundle and chopped to piece; having cuts made all over the body and salt or alkali rubbed into the gashes; having bits of flesh cut off while alive and given to the dogs; being beheaded and being wrapped with rubbish and baked alive. These are the punishments that a thief has to suffer.

Besides, in the next existence, he will be cooked in the *Tapano* hell. In this hell, the whole body, both inside and outside is burnt all day and night without intermission for one hundred thousand years which is the equivalent of ten millions and . . . years of our human world. When born to mankind again, he is born blind, and will live in great poverty. Great calamities will frequently visit him. I speak these words Thus it is essential to lead a good life. As a reward, one will enjoy wealth and prosperity. Make donations and practice piety. In the next existence In order to get prosperity, one should not steal but live a life of goodliness.

May this good deed be an attribute to the attainment of *nivana*. May all beings enjoy prosperity. May the rain and wind be also good. May the capital be prosperous.

444 inscription stones must be made. A pavilion is to be built (to shelter each inscription) placed under a grand canopy. All villages without exception must have these inscriptions. Villages having more than 50 houses must have this inscription set up. On full moon days, all villagers must assemble round this pillar with music and offerings. The village headman must wear his ceremonial robe and read aloud this inscription before the assembly. People from small villages where there are no

such pillars must come to a nearby big village to listen to the reading of this inscription.

Probably *Klacwā* copied and translated the relevant portions of the punishments from the sacred texts such as the *Majjhima Nikāya*¹, the *Anguttara Nikāya*² and the *Milinda Paññā*³. Contrast this *Klacwā* who translated such horrifying tortures with the picture given by the chronicles⁴ of a devout king translating the *Paramatthabindu*. It is more than likely that he had no intention of being so cruel but that he was trying to frighten them into goodness. With this threat, *Klacwā* intended to keep law and order in his realm. He probably died soon after this edict because we would have had more of these edict pillars if he had lived longer to execute his plan to its fullest extent. His successor *Uccanā*⁵ obviously did not intend to continue his good work.

Uccanā who succeeded in 1249 was *Klacwā*'s nephew. He was the son of *Narasingha Uccanā* and Queen *Phwā Jaw*. His regnal title was *Sri Tribhavanadityadhammarājajayasūra*. He married *Sumlūla*, the daughter of *Klacwā*.⁶ He also married the daughter of a turner and the son of this union later became king *Tarukpily*. *Uccanā* ruled until 1256 when:

... *Uccanā man akriy lā kha ruy Tala lhyān pyam tau mū liy kun e*,⁷

King *Uccanā* came downstream and he (together with his retinue) passed away
(? was massacred) at *Tala*.⁸

Therefore *Uccanā* was also known as *Talapyam Man*⁹ - the king who died at Dala. He was succeeded by his son *Man Yan*.

Man Yan's reign was extremely short. This *Man Yan* was given precedence over *Tarukpily*; probably he was *Sumlūla*'s son. It seems that he was also assassinated. The Shinbinbodhi inscription¹⁰ records the gifts made by *Man Yan* to his nurse *I Poñ San* and it goes on to state that after *Man Yan*'s death his successor King *Cañstū* (i.e. *Tarukpily*), confirmed his elder brother's gifts to *I Poñ San* who was his nurse too. Unfortunately, that is all we practically know of *Man Yan*. Now we come to the last king of the Pagan dynasty.

Man Yan was succeeded by *Tarukpily*¹¹ in 1256. The accession is recorded as follows.

1. Lord Chambers: *Further Dialogues of the Buddha*, Vol. I, pp. 61-2

2. F. L. Woodward: *The Book of Gradual Sayings*, Vol. I, pp. 42-3

3. T.W. Rhys Davids: *The Question of King Milinda*, pp. 276-8

4. *Hmannan*, para. 145; *GPC*, p. 155

5. Pl. 164¹⁻²

6. Pl. 158¹⁴

7. Pl. 158¹⁸. See also Pl. 296⁵

8. The word *kun* signifies plural and therefore he was not the only one to be killed there. The chronicles mentioned that he was killed in an elephant hunt at Dala (*Hmannan*, para. 146; *GPC* p. 158).

9. Pl. 296¹

10. Pl. 218a². See also Pl. 219b²

11. Pl. 233¹¹

// *Sakarac* 617 *khu Cissa nhac Tapon l Chan* 13.ryak 5 *niy Talapyam Man Phon Chan* *Pan kli miliy yu tau mu rakā* ... *thuiw yu sa nhac akriy Tala lā rā'pyam* *taw mū liy e' sā Panpwsaāñ Mliy* *rhuy ton ra liy e rhuy ton ra pri Pukam rok lat te rok pri so khā Sakarac* 618 *khu Asat nhac Namiyun la twañ ratanā sum pā rhuy niy ruy*...1

On 8 February 1256, *Talapyam Man* confiscated the *Phon Chan* land at *Pankli* (in the Chindwin area.) In that year of confiscation, (*Uccanā*) went downstream to *Tala* and died there. (His) son *Panpwsaāñ Mliy* - the grandson of the turner-received the golden mountain, he reached Pagan. After arriving there, in (May) 1256 he appeared before the Three Gems (and returned the lands to the monks).

When *Uccanā* went downstream to Dala early in 1256, he probably left *Man Yan* at the capital to look after the affairs of state and when he died, *Man Yan* became king but through some court intrigue he was removed and *Panpwat Sañ Mliy* finally became king.² Then he came back to Pagan. In May 1356 he was already in Pagan carrying out his kingly duties. In about November 1256, he was crowned king.³ Although he was popularly known by the name of *Tarukpily* - the king who fled from the *Taruk*, the name that he received after the 1287 Mongol invasion, he was called *Panpwat Sañ* - the Turner-after his maternal grandfather or *Uccanā*⁴ as his father was known or *Cahsu*⁵ as most of the kings of Pagan would like to be called after their famous ancestor *Cahsu I*. He built a pagoda in memory of his grandfather and therefore he was also known as *Panpwat puthuiw tan dāyakā*⁶ - the donor of the Turner's pagoda. His aunt *Ari Caw* described him as:

// *asariy hiy so purhā tryā sañghā ratauā sum pā sa nhui* // *ruiw siy mlat cwā so* // *cuīw sā mañsa amātyā buil pā chan phlū cq so ratanā khu nhac pā skhīn phlac so* *klwan 4 kiwan thwan so niy kay suiw qhin jaw aroñ awā tok pa cwā so asariy hiy so* // *Śri Tribhuvanadityapavaradhammarājā man so* // *tryā man ...7*

The just king *Śri Tribhuvanadityapavaradhammarājā*, the Glorious, who reveres and honours the Three Gems of the Lord, the Law and the Order, who is the Lord of the Seven Gems such as the sons of administrators, the sons of the kings, the ministers, and followers and the white elephant, and who shines with colour, fame and influence like the sun that shines over the four islands . . .

Apart from this panegyric we know very little about him. We are therefore neither able to support or refute what the chronicles say about his being glutinous, vain and oppressive and about the Mon rebellion in lower Burma during his reign. It is fortunate for students of history that there is an inscription which tells us part of the story of the Mongol invasion⁸ during *Tarukpily*'s reign.

1. Pl. 2964-7

2. The story given in the chronicles is that at Dala hunting lodge *Uccanā* was killed by a must elephant and though *Panpwsaāñ Mliy* was a junior son of the deceased, the great minister *Yazathingyan* removed the rightful heir and placed him on the throne. (*Hmannan*, para. 147; *GPC*, pp. 158-9).

3. Pl. 186⁸

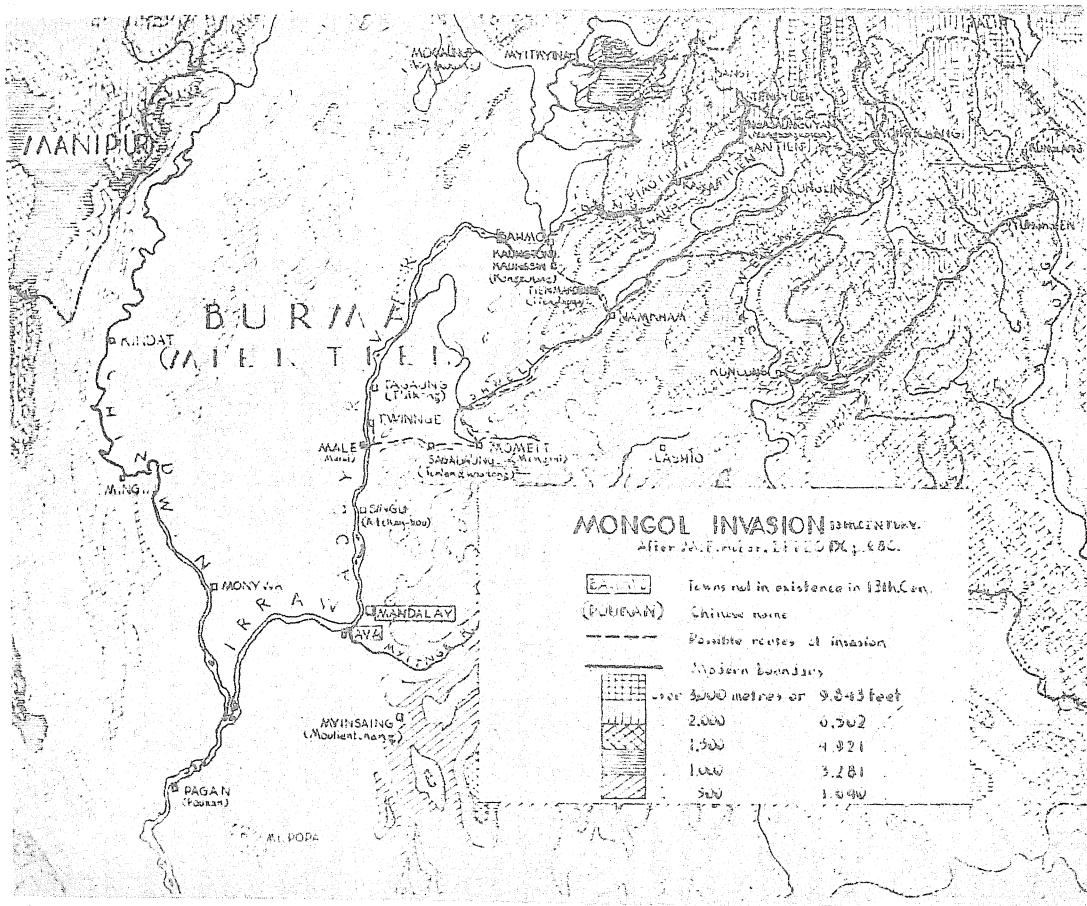
4. Pl. 296⁵

5. Pl. 218a⁵

6. Pl. 158²⁻⁴

7. Pl. 24918-19

8. Pl. 271¹⁻³⁷. For translation see also *JBRS*, XXVI, i, pp. 53-4.



Evidently the minister *Intapacra* had chosen the wrong moment to do a meritorious deed. Before he completed building the monastery the Burmese invasion of Yunnan began and he was called away from the capital on military duty. It seems that from the time of *Cañsū II* (1174-1211) Ngasaunggyan was the northern limit of the empire¹ and Kaungsin was the administrative centre for northern Burma.² *Intapacra* must have been a worthy officer to have received the command of an important fort. Perhaps he died defending it when Mongols took it on 3 Dec. 1283. Kaungsin fell on 9 Dec. The Mongols penetrated as far as south to Tagaung which was captured in January 1284. Hence Upper Burma became a province of China called Ch'eng-mien. Then only was the king at Pagan convinced of the Mongol strength and the vulnerability of his capital. He decided to leave it and went to *Lhañkla* west of *Prañ* and sent the Reverend *Disāprāmuk* on a peace mission to Peking. For the following events it is best to quote *Disāprāmuk* himself.³

|| // namo tassa bhagawato arahato sammā sami bnddhassa || Sakarac 647 khu
 Mrik(ksui)w nhac || Prañ anok phak *Lhañkla* nuiik mañkri niy thaw mū e' ||
 Anantapicañ *Mahāpuiw* kuiw Taruk e' alāalā kuiw si on mū liy hu ciy tau mū e' ||
 Ananta(pi)cañ *Mahāpuiw* chuiw e' || i amhu kā kri cwa || tum ta pai le lhwat ra
 sañ ma hi || suwa(nna)lip plu am sañ le ma hi || // *Syañ Disāprāmuk* te pā mū kā
 amhu choñ am || i suwihū pan rakā || nā kuiw khaw ruy mañkri i amhu nhañ e' ||
 Taruk mañ chui(w) e' || i suwanñalip kā mañ lhwat e' sañ (ma hut || a)mat tuiw lhwat
 lat so || (su)panñalip takā || (i) sukhamin kā (mañ ciy).....lhwat te (hi) *Ihañ tha* ||
 khaw (khliy) nā sukhamin mū am hu khaw e' || *Pukam* (mahārac kā || ma)ñ tuiw kā
 tanman kuiw ma khyup ryā (sū) kuiw *Ihyañ* nā tuiw tanman (mū) *Ihyañ* (am hū) ruy ||
 suwanñalip plu ruy nā kuiw lhwat e' || (*Ta*)ruk prañ rok liy e' || Taruk mañ kā ||
Pukam suiw (puiw) cim hu ruy (|| *Susuttaki*) mañ sā (su)ray 20000 || *Pu(ñadha)*-
 mmikā mahāthi || (*Sri*) Dhammikāsañghāthi || akloñ 70 kā *San(thwa)y Prañ* rok
 on *Ihyañ* khla ruy ciy sate || (santhan) lā e' sañ nhañ añi (ra)c cim hu
 tan ciy sate || nā rok (li)y e' || thuiw nuiuk tan lañ so syan (tui)w sañ
 nā kuiw lakchoñ laknak chak ruy i suiw chuiw lañ e' || nā syan kui(w)te
 mañ toñ tā cwa || mañ le saddhā cwa || *Pukam* sāsanā kuiw nā tuiw ma
 plu ra kroñ chuiw phi la(t piy) || nā le | i *Pukam* niy so sūtuiw e' || ni(y)
 rā kuiw lhwat phi ruy || (*Yachañ*) *Ihyañ* (wā) chuiw (li)y e' || *Tanchon-*
mhun kā *Tavit* tak liy e' || *Plasuiw* rok liy e' || Taruk mañ le'phac luiw cwa (hi ruy amiy
 amrū cakā) *Ihyañ* chuiw kra e' || prañ mhu kā ma chuiw ra || achum mha kā (prañ)
 tay cakā kuiw chuiw kra lat te || *panñit* i nā su ray 20000 nhañ mahāthi sañghāthi
 syan nhañ sāsanā plu liy hu nhañ e' || nā (chuiw) luik e' || mahārac i (sura)y (alum)
 || sañghā alum capā hi mha (te tañ) krañ am || (capā kā) prañ cañcim amryac ma
 (lo) || i surey tuiw sañ than kuiw (te cañ) ruy (cañ pri) kā (wam nā) ruy (ma) siy kun
 tha lo (krwan) so sañghā tuiw le prañ twañ ma wañ (wam || taw) suiw pliy ruy siy kun
 kham so takā || mañkri (pri pi) so amhu ma lo || uyan cuik so yokyā kā || riy swan
 ruy sac pañ kuiw kri ciy e' || añwan ma chit takā || sacpañ (si pri kā) te asī cā e' ||

1. Pl. 19a9, Pl. 276a², Pl. 277⁵, Pl. 423¹⁸⁻²³

2. Pl. 158²⁰, Pl. 186¹, Pl. 248¹¹ Most probably both Ngachaunggyan and Kaungsin are on the opposite bank of Bhamo.

3. Pl. 271¹⁻³⁷

Tampratik prāñ kuiw le riy swan ū lat siy nāy mū le sāsanā mlat cwā // mañkrī kā phurhā chu toñ so sū ma lo // apha Kotama sāsanā kuiw apyak ci)y lat siy // nā kā/kok pai cuik liy ū am̄ kok pay. prī pi so kā wañ // i suiw chuiw piy so te // Taruk mañ chuiw e' // i cakā twañ nā phuiw le pā e' // panđit lā ruy pliy pliy sa syān tuiw kuiw khaw liy kok pay le cuik liy // pri pi so nā kuiw lhawat lat tum // i suiw hā ruy nā lā ra sate // amhu le lyā ra lhyān sate // i suiw nā kleñcū hi rakā nā kuiw piy taw mū so // (Ha)nlāñ mliy 400 Kramitū mliy san muryāñ plyuiw khan cūñ 400 apoñ mliy 300 kywan nwā aluñ ratanā 3 pā kuiw rañ ruy Panpwat Rap ceti nhuik lhū e' //

Honour to him, the Blessed, the Saint, the Fully Enlightened. In S. 548 (1285) *Mrigaśīra* year, the king was staying at *Lhañkla* west of *Prāñ* (either Prome or the capital city of Pagan). He sent *Anantapicañ* and *Mahāpuīw* saying: "Find out about the movements of the *Taruk*". *Anantapicañ* and *Mahāpuīw* said: "This task is a very big one. There is no go-between to send. And there is no one to make the gold address" (i.e. to draft the royal letter). If only we had *Syañ Disāprāñyuk* with us, we should be able to undertake the task." Thus they petitioned. So the king called me and entrusted this task to me.

At *Sacchim* and *Hanlañ* we made no stay. Having made the gold address, we sent it to the *Taruk* king. The *Taruk* king said: "This gold address is not sent by the king. It is merely sent by the ministers; this gold address. As for this learned man, if the king did not send him (?) Anyway call him." So they called me as being the learned man.

As for the *Mahāraja* of Pagan, he made a gold address saying: "Kings should not imprison ambassadors. He is to act as our ambassador." Thereupon they released me. We reached the *Taruk* kingdom. As for the *Taruk* king, intending to send (an expedition) to Pagan, he had despatched Prince *Susuttaki* (with) 20,000 soldiers, the *Mahāthera Puñadhammikā*, the *Saṅghathera Śri Dhammika*, and (the monks of) 70 monasteries to reach the city of *Sañthway* (?Tagaung) and caused them to stop there. He caused them to halt there in view of the fact that the monsoon was heavy at the time.

In due course we arrived. Thereupon the monks who were halted there, presented gifts and presents to me and said as follows: "How the king is longing for you Sir! And the king is a good Buddhist! Please tell him that we could not preach the religion at Pagan (because no body is there)."

As for me, having passed the abode of these persons (due to) stop at Pagan, I spent Lent at *Yachañ*.¹ In *Tachonmhum* (November) I went up to *Taytu* (Peking).² In *Plasuiw* (December) I arrived there.

1. *Yachañ* is probably *Yachi* of Marco Polo which is today in the *Lo-tz'ū* district.

2. *Taytu* (T' ai-tu), the Great Capital, also known as *Qanbalig* (the Cambulac of Marco Polo), the Khan's city from 1267. *Handbook of Oriental History*, p. 212.

The *Taruk* king was well pleased and we exchanged words and questions, but nothing was said of state affairs. But at the end we talked of state affairs. "Pundit! these 20,000 soldiers of mine and the *mahāthera, saṅghathera* and the monks I am sending to propagate the Religion." I replied: "Mahārāja! All these soldiers, all these monks, will be steadfast only if there is paddy. Is not paddy the root of the prosperity of the kingdom? If these soldiers continuously eat nothing but missed toddy, will they not all die of pains in the stomach? And the remaining (?) monks, also, durst not enter (?) the kingdom (or capital). And if they run away into the jungle, they are all bound to die! O King! is not your work finished? A man who plants a garden, pours water and make the tree grow. He would never pinch the tips. Only when the tree have fruited, he eats the fruit. First pour water on the kingdom of *Tampratīkī*! Small it is, but the Religion is most excellent. O King! are you not one who prays for the boon of Buddhahood? Grant that the religion of Father *Kotama* be not destroyed! The Kingdoms that you, O King, have conquered are very many and very great. *Tampratīkī* kingdom is small, a mere appendage. Because there is the Religion, the *Bodhisattva* prefers (?) the kingdom. Let not the soldiers enter yet! As for me, I shall first plant rice and beans. When the rice and beans are full grown, then enter!"

Thus I replied; and the *Taruk* king said: "In these words my profit also is included. Pundit! Call the monks who were running hither and thither at the time of your coming and plant rice and beans. When they are full grown, then send them onto me!" When he had said thus, I had to go. And there was indeed a respite (?) or delay).

Out of gratitude to me for this, the king gave me 400 *pay* of land at *Hanlai* and 400 *pay* of land at *Kramitū*, including monsoon and dry weather paddy land and nursery-land – altogether 800 *pay* with slaves and cattle. All these I dedicate to the Three Gems at the *ceti* of *Panpwat rap* – the Turners' Quarter.

According to this inscription, when the *Taruk* came, the king did not go down to Bassein as mentioned in the chronicles¹ but took to the hills on the west of the capital or Prome. On the suggestion of his ministers *Anantapicāñ* (probably the minister who objected to the execution of the envoys in 1273) and *Mahāpuiw*, he sent *Disāprāmuk* to *Taytu* who arrived there in about December 1285. The *Taruk* came under command of Prince *Susuttiaki* (Hsüeh-hsüeh-ti-chin) and they were twenty thousand strong. Among them there were also monks from seveaty monasteries under the leadership of *Mahāthera Puññadhammika* who were to propagate Buddhism at Pagan. While negotiations were in progress, the enemy was in occupation of *Saihway* (Tagaung). *Disāprāmuk* said that he was successful in persuading the *Taruk* king to recall his army so that the kingdom of *Tampratīkī* might revive from the devastations of the invading army and send tribute soon. Everybody concerned at that time might think that the troubles were over. Unfortunately it was only a truce. The king on his way to the capital in 1287 passed through Prome where one of his sons poisoned him and internal troubles followed in the wake of it. The Yunnan government saw opportunities of taking advantage of this internal dissension and so disregarding the imperial orders, came

1. *Hmannan*, para 147; *GPC*. p.175.

down to Pagan with Prince Ye-sin Timur at its head and occupied the city. But they helped the royal family to re-establish itself. Thus, the next king after Tarukpily was Rhuynansyan.¹ who was anointed king on Monday, 12 Waxing of Miwaytā, S. 651 (30 May 1289). He sent his son Singhapti to receive investiture from the emperor,² but in A.D. 1297, he became pan kła mañ³ - the dethroned king, i.e. he was dethroned. Perhaps Rhuynansyan and Singhapti were put to death for being in league with the Mongols to put the country under foreign control. In an inscription dated 1302, we find mention of Taruk prañlā so Taktaumū mankri⁴ - the great king Taktaumū who went to the city of Taruk, which supports the fact that a scion of the fallen house went to Yunnan as a rival of Conac for the throne of Pagan. Perhaps this Taktaumū is Kumāra Kassapa (Kou-ma-la-kia-chipa-sou-tan-pa-tcho-li) of the Chinese accounts. But the king of Pagan was king only in name. Asaṅkhayā⁵ established himself at Myinsaing, his brother Rājasañkrami at Mekkaya and their youngest brother Sihasū at Pipple.⁶ These three were the real rulers and the king was a mere puppet in their hands. They dethroned Rhuynansyan in 1297 and put Conac on the throne. He was mentioned as Siri Tribhayanādityāpavaradhanmarāja Mañ Lulan⁷ or Talasukri⁸ in the inscriptions. Taktaumū was successful in convincing the Mongols that he was a better claimant to the throne of Pagan. So the Mongols came again in 1300. This time the objective was not Pagan but Myinzaing under Asaṅkhayā and his two brothers who perhaps played upon the nationalist sentiments against Mongol suzerainty and had been able even to take back Singu and Male from foreign control. The brothers were driven to defensive warfare only and their town was besieged. Gold offered by them, and summer heat of the dry zone of central Burma persuaded the enemies to raise the siege and go back.⁹ The province of Chéng-mien was formally abolished on 4 April 1303. Whether it was gold or heat that defeated the invaders, the three brothers put it on record as being due to their military prowess.

| atu mañ tha so | cac sūkri phlac so | Siri Asaṅkhya | Rāja | Sihasū mañ so | Taruk
cac kuiv nhip nañ nutñ sa | n̄ ackuiu 3 yok...¹⁰

Lords of the War without peer, Glorious Asaṅkhya, Rāja and Sihasū - the three brothers who suppressed the Taruk army . . .

From Aniruddha to Tarukpily there were eleven kings of the Pagan Empire which at

1. Pl. 282¹, Pl. 287a⁴, Pl. 417²

2. E. Huber "La fin de la Dynastie de Pagan" BEFEO, IX, p. 670

3. Pl. 286²

4. Pl. 396a⁴, Pl. 396b¹

5. Pl. 417²

6. These three places belong to the Eleven Villages. See Map 2

7. Pl. 290b³, Pl. 2922⁸

8. Pl. 392¹⁶

9. The popular story about this is that although the commanders of the invading army took the bribe, they did one act of good turn by letting their men help on the Kyaukse irrigation works and thus the Thindwe canal was constructed. (Harvey: Burma, p. 77) Unfortunately we find the mention of Sāñhway Mron in an inscription dated A.D. 1197 (Pl. 20a²) and therefore it is impossible to believe that the canal was only constructed in 1300 by the Chinese. If the Chinese had any thing at all to do with the canal it probably was repairing it. See below p. 43, n. 2

10. Pl. 276a⁴⁻⁵. See below p. 40

the zenith of its power probably included the whole stretch of land:

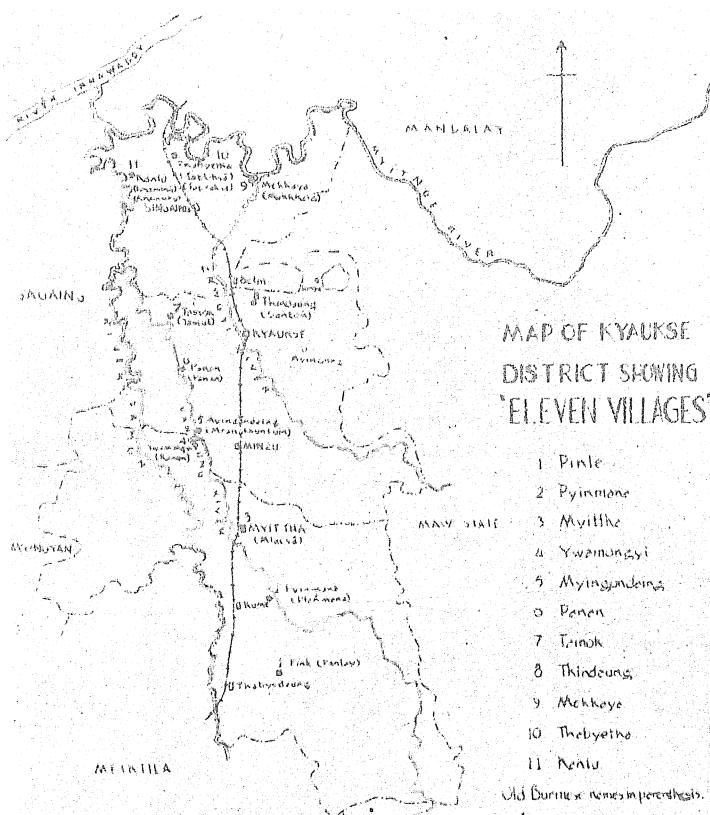
/ Pukamī añā Noñ U ca so Nā Chon Khyamī tuñ cñ Pukamī akriy Sariypaccarā ca sa kā Taway tuñ oñ...¹

from *Noñ U* to *Nā Chon Khyamī* upstream of *Pukamī* and from *Sariypaccarā* to *Taway* downstream of *Pukamī*.

The Salween river was the eastern boundary but in the west, although the chronicles claim that Arakan was in the empire² we find no epigraphic evidence to prove it. Probably the lords of Arakan recognized the suzerainty of Pagan. It seems that the city of Pagan was founded in about tenth century or early eleventh century and it remained the capital city right down to the end of the thirteenth century which is a very long time for a city in Burma. The best days were during the reigns of *Cañsū II* and *Nātorāmyā*. The Mon language was the official language of Burma until the death of *Thiluñ Mañ* in A.D. 1113 and the Burmese culture was very much under the influence of Mon in those days. Some historians prefer to call this early period 'the Mon period of the Pagan dynasty'. Then there was the transition period from 1113 to 1174 where the burmanization movement set in. Therefore, it was only from 1174 that the Burmans could have their own way both politically and culturally. After *Nātorāmyā* the empire began to decline. Probably the central government had lost control over the outlying parts of the empire and bandits and robbers infested the countryside. King *Klacwā* tried to improve the administration and check its downhill run but was not successful. The kings that followed *Klacwā* were easy going as was wont to happen in a comparatively long dynasty. Mon whom *Aniruddha* conquered in A.D. 1057 made an attempt to revive their national freedom early in the reign of *Thiluñ Mañ* but the king's diplomacy averted the danger to the empire. They never tried it again until the time of *Tarukpliy*. The king was inefficient and so internal troubles alone could have destroyed the empire. But the final blow came from the Mongols. They wanted recognition of their overlordship which the Burmans proudly refused. Even when the capital city was occupied, the Mongols tried to help the royal family to re-establish itself but there were no more great kings to weld the empire together again. Thus the story of Pagan ends with the story of a king whose name goes down into posterity as the king who fled from the Chinese.

1. Pl. 423²²⁻²³

2. Conquest of Arakan in A.D. 1118. See Harvey: *Burma*, p. 45

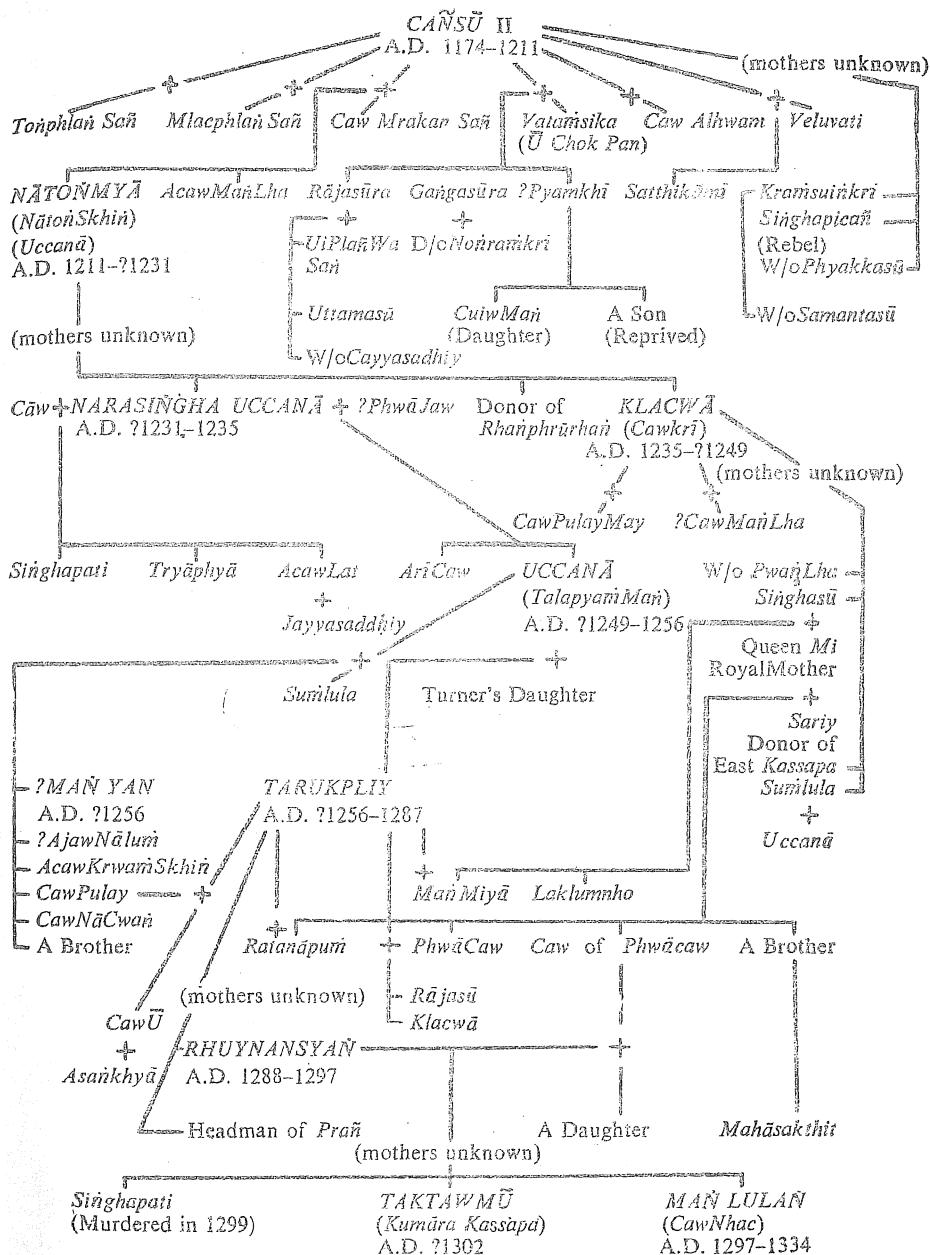


MAP OF KYAUSSE
DISTRICT SHOWING
ELEVEN VILLAGES

- 1 Pinte
- 2 Pyinmone
- 3 Myitthe
- 4 Ywamangyi
- 5 Myinsundar
- 6 Panen
- 7 Trinuk
- 8 Thindeung
- 9 Mekkeye
- 10 Thebyetha
- 11 Kanlu

Old Burmese names in parenthesis.

Genealogical Table of the Latter Half of the Pagan Dynasty



CHAPTER III

BURMESE ADMINISTRATION 1044-1287

THE traditional date for the foundation of Pagan which was to become the centre of the Burmese power in the 11th, 12th and 13th centuries is A.D. 849. But if the theory that the Burmans came into Burma sometime after the Nanchao raids of A.D. 832-5 is acceptable, the year A.D. 849-50 for establishing their capital at Pagan would be too soon. It might have been founded in the 10th century.¹

Before Pagan became the centre of the Burmese Empire which King *Aniruddha* and his successors built, there were many other Burmese centres or settlements around Pagan which would have had an equal chance of becoming centres themselves as they were all under the rule of local chiefs who invariably enjoyed the title of manī² - the king. Subsequently the manī of Pagan became manīkri³ - the great king-and was recognised as the leader of all Burmans. It seems that the Burmans when they entered Burma settled first in the fertile area called *chai ta rwā*⁴ - eleven villages, in the Kyaukse district. These eleven settlements were *Pañlay*, *Plāñmanā*, *Mlaçā*, *Rajun*, *Mrañkhuntiñ*, *Panan*, *Tamut*, *Santon*, *Makkharā*, *Taplaksā*, and *Khamithū*⁵. They spread out fanwise and dominated central Burma. The inscriptions of our period mention very often these first settlements in the Kyaukse area. They used the term *khruiñ*⁶ to denote their first home and *tuik*⁷ and *tuil*⁸ for the nearby places where they moved into subsequently. The word *nuihnam*⁹ came into use only when *Aniruddha* and his successors were able to enlarge their power and subjugate the neighbouring more or less alien settlements extending from *Koñcañ* in the north to *Taluñsare* and *Tawai* in the south.¹⁰ Of *Cañsi II* (1174-1211) it is mentioned in an inscription dated A.D. 1196¹¹ that he ruled an empire which extended from *Takon* and *Nachonkhyam* in the north to *Salaiñkre*¹² and *Sacchitani* in the south and from *Macchakiri* (Chin Hills) in the west to the *Salwañ* (River Salween) in the east. In A.D. 1292 soon after the Mongol invasion King *Rhuynansyah* (Kyawzwa) claimed that his empire had *Nachonñiñwā* in the north and *Tawai* in the south as its boundaries.¹³ This claim was rather of the past. But according to the above mentioned inscription of A.D. 1196 which gives the extent of the empire at the height of its power we find that the Pagan monarchy held sway over an area which is roughly the same as modern Burma with the exception of Arakan in the west, the trans-Salween area in the east and the major portion of the modern Kachin state in the north.

1. See above pp. 1-3. See also *JBRs*, XLII, i, 80

2. Pl. 143a¹⁶, etc.

3. Pl. 10a¹, Pl. 19a¹⁴, etc.

4. Pl. 162⁴⁻⁵

5. See Map 2.

6. Pl. 31¹¹ (6 *khruiñ*)

7. Pl. 12¹⁵, Pl. 20a¹², Pl. 423¹²

8. See *JBRs*, XXX, i, p. 304, n. 14

9. Pl. 19a⁵, Pl. 276a²

10. Pl. 19a⁹, Pl. 276a², Pl. 277⁵, Pl. 423²²

11. Pl. 19a

12. *Salaiñkre* probably is Cape Sajang.

13. Pl. 276a²

The King of Pagan was an absolute monarch and [his word was law. From Aniruddha down to the last days of Thibaw the idea of absolutism prevailed and therefore Sir George Scott's remark on Burmese monarchy is worth repeating here.

The King's power was absolute; his only restraint were his voluntary respect for Buddhist rules and precepts, general for all believers or particular to the kingly estate. Otherwise he was lord and master of the life and property of every one his subjects. No hereditary rank or title existed in the kingdom except in the royal family. Outside of that the king was the source of all honours. Official position was the only sign of rank and all officials were appointed or dismissed at the king's will. Dismissal usually meant absolute ruin, a step from the court to the gaol. On the other hand, any one, not a slave or an outcast might aspire to the highest offices in the state. The country and people were entirely at the disposal of the king and the only check on misrule was the fear of insurrection¹.

The inscriptions of our period express similar ideas on kingship. King Aniruddha is mentioned as cakkrawarij² - the Lord of the Universe. Queen Phwa Jaw when dedicating slaves and lands in A.D. 1272 described her husband King Narasiṅgha - Uccāna as

riy mliy khapsim so askhij phlac tha so mlat cwā so nā lañ skhij mañkri
my most excellent husband, lord the king, lord of all water and land.

About her grandson King Tarukpily she said :

// asariy hiy so purhā tryā saṅghā ratanā surā pā nhuik // ruiw siy.mlat tha so sū taw takā e, kuiw kway rā phlac tha so // alwam so mentakā nhañ nī ñwat tha so // chañ phlū ca so ratanā apoñ aphaw skhij phlac tha so // Jāmbudip klwan nhuik thwan so niy kay suiw ahiñ caw aroñ tok pa tha so // asariy hiy so // Sri Tribhuwanādityapawaradhammarājā // Utcanā mañ so mañkri //³

King Utcāna also called Sri Tribhawanādityapawaradhammarājā the Glorious, who shines with colour, fame and influence like the sun resplendent on Jambudipa island; who is the lord and comrade of all the jewels headed by the White Elephant; who is at peace with kings spread all over the world; who is the refuge of all good people who revere and honour the Three Glorious Gems.

King Klacwā enjoyed even greater praise as he was described as

Arimāttapūra mañ so prañ nhuik // acuiw ra so alwan akay phun tan khiuw kri cwā tha so Klacwā mañkri

The Great King, an exceedingly powerful Lord of Arimaddanapura.

1. G. Scott: *GUBSS*, I ii, p. 469
2. PI. 160a⁶
3. PI. 235¹⁰⁻¹¹
4. PI. 234¹⁻⁴ and PI. 247²⁻⁵
5. PI. 246¹⁻²

In all these expressions the prevailing idea was that the king was the most powerful person in the state and being the lord of land and water he was also the lord of life and death as land and water were the source of all life. Practically there was no check to this kind of absolutism, except the fear of insurrection as Sir George Scott has rightly observed. But in view of the fact that Buddhism was flourishing in those days, religion had an enormous influence upon the kings. A king was always looked upon as *purhā loñ* - a future Buddha, and thus being a *Buddhisatya* he was supposed to be pious, kind and indulgent. When he was dealing with the clergy, he was wise not to offend them. The following instance will show us how a despot was held in check when he made a false step that aroused the opposition of the Order. There was an *Araññavāsika* sect of Buddhists getting more and more popular during the latter half of the Pagan dynasty. There are many inscriptions² recording the monks of this sect as buying up land especially in the Chindwin area and thus increasing the religious land which was a disadvantage to the royal treasury as the king could get no revenue out of these lands. In addition to these, wealthy people and officials were in the habit of dedicating their lands to religious establishments. It seems that King *Klacwā* decided to stop this loss of revenue by confiscating the religious lands. In A.D. 1235, soon after his accession he started taking over these lands and consequently the monks raised an objection which compelled him to appoint a royal commission to look into this matter. The commission decided in favour of the monks and as a result the king had to relinquish his claims.³ This instance gives us two important facts. Firstly, that the kings of Burma were not always surrounded by mere sycophants and opportunists. They used wise people and followed their advice in times of crisis. Appointing a commission to settle a big problem was a usual practice except in the case of a haughty monarch like *Tarukpily* who refused counsel on the eve of the Mongol invasion.⁴ In an inscription dated A.D. 1291 it is mentioned that in the king's presence there are always *śārīryah kālā supajayo hūrā smā sukhāmin*⁵ - executive officers, squires, astrologers, doctors of medicine and scholars. On the strength of Kyanzitha's Palace Inscription (A.D. 1101-2)⁶ we may venture to assume that the astrologers were Brahmins. Another inscription tells us that immediately after his accession in A.D. 1235, King *Klacwā* gave a hundred *pay* of land to Brahman astrologers who probably conducted his coronation.⁷ Secondly, when confronted with an opposition which might prove fatal, even an ambitious king like *Klacwā* deemed it wise to yield.

Although the king was the most important figure in the state, he could not possibly run the government alone. As the empire grew he had to appoint ministers and officers to help him in the administration. The ministers were called by the Sanskrit name *amātya* and the word *wungyi* for a minister, meaning one having a great responsibility, was not yet in use. Very often *amātya* was shortened into *amat* with a suffix *kri* to denote the chief

1. Pl. 36³, Pl. 115^{3,5}, Pl. 143a⁹, Pl. 1815, etc.

2. Pl. 268, Pl. 350, Pl. 395, Pl. 423, etc.

3. Pl. 90¹⁵⁻¹⁶, Pl. 231b⁶

4. *Hmannan*, para. 147; *GPC*, p. 173

5. Pl. 272¹⁸

6. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, IX

7. Pl. 102¹⁸

minister. There was no distinction between civil and military offices and any minister or officer was bound to lead a military campaign when necessary. Thus when making a dedication in A.D. 1223 the donor *Anantusūra* described himself as *amattyā // mahāsenāpati*¹ minister and commander-in-chief of King *Nātonmyā*. Including this *Anantusūra*, there were altogether five ministers at *Nātonmyā*'s court. The remaining four were *Asan̄kyā*, *Asvat*, *Rājasāñkrami* and *Caturāngasū*.² Incidentally we have to note here that it destroys the traditional belief in Burma about the *Hluttaw* – the chief administrative office and its four ministers. This tradition starts with *Nātonmyā*'s reign when the king, it is said, had four elder brothers who took a great interest in the administration and eventually became four ministers of the king. Epigraphic evidence gives us five ministers and unfortunately none of them are mentioned as having any blood relationship with the king. These five ministers quelled the rebellion headed by *Pyankhi* and *Singhapicā*, the half-brothers of the king and therefore they earned a rich reward of seven hundred *pay* of land each for bravery when suppressing the rebellion. This also is clear evidence that there was no sharp demarcation between civil and military duties. There was another trouble in the north (at Tagaung) during *Nātonmyā*'s reign and an officer named *Lakkhāna Lakway* was sent to settle it. He came back in triumph and was richly rewarded.⁴ Towards the end of the dynasty, the title *cac sūkri* was conferred upon ministers during the time when they were in active service. For example, the three *Shan* brothers *Asankhayā*, *Sīhasū* and *Rājasāñkrami* who became popular after the Mongol invasion were usually mentioned as *amatkri* or *saṇipyan kri*.¹ But in an inscription dated A.D. 1292 they were addressed as *cacsūkri* - generals, in the following manner:

Pukam maṇkri e tū phlac tha so / atu mañ tha so / cac sūkri phlac so / Siri
Asan̄kyā / Rāja / Sīhasū mañ so / Taruk cac kuiv nhip nai nuiñ sa / nī aekuiw
3 yok²

equals of the great king of Pagan, incomparable (in bravery), Lords of the War,
Glorious *Asan̄kyā*, *Rāja* and *Sīhasū* - the three brothers who subdued the *Taruk*
army.

During *Klacvā*'s reign the chief minister was *Manorāja*³ who was probably also called *Manurāja*⁴ which names closely associate with *Manu* – the law giver. It is also possible that he was a noted judge of the time. He held a very important position as being *Koñcañ Mahāsaman*⁵ – the Viceroy of Kaungsin and *kuivmhu*⁶ – Commander of the Life Guard. This is also another instance of a combined responsibility for civil and military services in one person.

Next to the ministers, there were *saṇipyan* and *kalan* who were executive officers no

1. Pl. 73¹

2 & 3 Pl. 42¹⁷, Pl. 190a¹²

4. Pl. 231b¹

5. Pl. 274¹⁵, Pl. 282¹⁴, Pl. 291¹¹, Pl. 297³⁰

6. Pl. 276a³⁻⁵

7. Pl. 231b⁶

8. Pl. 331b⁷

9. Pl. 158²⁰⁻¹

10. Pl. 234³⁰

doubt but the nature of whose service is not known yet. *Kalan* seems to be slightly subordinate to the *samipyāñ* and *samipyāñ* is often found as a term interchangeable with the word *amat* (minister) in the inscriptions of the latter half of the dynasty.¹ Even the chief minister *Manorāja*, mentioned above, and who was also known as *Mahāsaman* – the Viceroy – was in one instance mentioned as *samipyāñ Mahāsaman*.² In the like manner the Commander-in-Chief *Anatasūra* of King *Nātonmyā* was also known as *samipyāñ Anantasūra*.³ There were also judges addressed by the name *tryā samipyāñ*.⁴ Therefore one wonders whether we should put *samipyāñ* on an equal status with *amatya* though the term today has lost its former importance and means only an official of inferior rank.⁵ King *Thiluin Man* is popularly known as *Kyanzittha* and we assume that the name is the corruption *kalan cacsā* – the Officer Prince. If *kalan* means only a village headman as is the modern interpretation, we are doing injustice to our popular hero who was the *man* – king, of *Hthlaing* before he became *māgkri* – the great king, of Pagan. It seems that *Kalan* was an executive officer of a fairly high rank. Professor G. H. Luce gives us a very useful note on these two words.

SAMPYĀÑ ; KALAN : These are probably Mon words in origin, though very common in Old Burmese. *Cāp sumbañ* seems to occur as a title in the oldest Mon inscription, found at *Lopburi*, Siam and dating from the 8th century (see BEFEO, XXV, 186; XXX, 83-4). *Sumbēñ* (or *sambeñ*) and *Kalm* occur frequently in *Kyanzittha* Palace Inscription (Ep. B. m., III, i, IX); the former also an Old Mon terracotta plaques found at *Tavoy* and elsewhere (ASB., 1924, pp. 38-40).⁶

It seems that these ministers and high officers of the court needed to have a high standard of education though in some cases a favourite might rise to a high position. In an inscription dated A.D. 1278 the educational qualification of a minister was mentioned as follows.

// *pitakat sumi pumi le tat cwā tha sa* // *sañsakruit hyakāruin hūrā smā amhū le tat tha so* // *caturangabijay man so* // *amat kri sañ plu so kloñ arap nhusik* //
At the place where the monastery built by the great minister called *Caturangabijay* who is well versed in the Three *Pitaka*, as well as learned in Sanskrit, Grammar, Astrology and Medicine, stands . . .

Besides these *amat*, *samipyāñ* and *kalan*, there were other officers at the court. All of them invariably come under the general term *mankhyan* – companions of the king, or

1. PI. 274¹⁵, PI. 282¹⁴, PI. 291¹¹, etc.

2. PI. 2683

3. PI. 78b¹¹

4. PI. 786⁹

5. Judson: *Burmese-English Dictionary*, 1893, p. 186

6. *JBRS*, XXX, i, 305. Mr. H. L. Shorto reasons that *samipyāñ* and *kalan* are not Mon in origin as the Siamese Mon inscriptions quoted; these words are rather names than official posts and although these names occur in Mon inscriptions of Pagan it does not necessarily mean that they are Mon words as Mon was used only to describe scenes in a Burmese court. It is also a possible view.

7. PI. 2893-5

8. PI. 257⁶, PI. 268^{10,11,30}

6. U.P. Q. 144. 1022. 23. §. 78.

marice¹ - servants of the king, or *marululan²* - youths of the king. There was also another set of courtiers called *sūnayto³* - squires. Probably they were the king's favourites who grew up with him. In one case *sūnayto* was mentioned together with *mūchuiw⁴* - the hunters. There were also secretaries and clerks who were mentioned as *atwanruy⁵*, *cāmron⁶*, *cākhipuiw⁷* and *cākhi⁸* who wrote down the orders of the king and passed them on to the executive officers. Incidentally one *cākhipuiw* was a concubine of King *Tarukpily⁹*. In despatching royal orders to the districts, the king had *mranci¹⁰* - mounted couriers - probably under an officer *mrān sūkri¹¹*.

As judicial assistants to the king there were *samphama¹²*. An inscription dated A.D. 1218 gives a clear definition of the word *samphama*. It says: *rhiy taw niy amu chan khrañ so samphama tuiw¹³* - the judges of the royal court who try the legal cases. The judges and magistrates had other designations also. They were called *tryā sūkri¹⁴* as today or simply *tryā¹⁵* which also means a law suit or the legal code or the Dharma. In another case the name *amhu cuiw¹⁶* was used to signify a judge possibly of civil suits in contrast to a judge of petty theft cases as *khuiw sūkri¹⁷*. The clerk attached to a *khuiw sūkri* was called a *khuiw tryā cākhi¹⁸*. There were also woman judges.¹⁹ As for the officers of the districts there were *tuik sūkri²⁰* to look after the *tuik* - province, *mruiw sūkri²¹* to look after the fort and *rwā sūkri²²* to look after the village and *ki sūkri²³* to look after the king's granaries. In an inscription dated A.D. 1260 there is the mention of a woman *klip sūkri²⁴* - officer who looked after the suburb of the city, and at the same time she was described as a junior queen of the king.

As revenue surveyors, there were *pay tuiw²⁵* officers. In an inscription dated A.D. 1244 the donor is mentioned as *puin sūkri Sattyā* or *puil sūkri Sattyā²⁶*. We do not know which is the right spelling nor do we know the function of this office. As the rice

1. Pl. 215b⁶
2. Pl. 290b²
3. Pl. 234²⁵, Pl. 257⁶, Pl. 272¹⁸, Pl. 273¹⁸, Pl. 277²¹, Pl. 282¹⁴, Pl. 385¹⁵
4. Pl. 274¹⁶
5. Pl. 207¹³⁻¹⁶
6. Pl. 235⁴⁵
7. Pl. 232^{2,18}
8. Pl. 268¹³
9. Pl. 232²
10. Pl. 222b¹⁴
11. Pl. 254a¹
12. Pl. 161b³, Pl. 285¹⁷, Pl. 598a^{12,22}
13. Pl. 574^{3,6}
14. Pl. 191b⁸
15. Pl. 560¹⁷
16. Pl. 421b¹⁷
17. Pl. 241⁵
18. Pl. 269¹³
19. Pl. 174¹¹
20. Pl. 121⁵, Pl. 296^{17,18}
21. Pl. 370²³
22. Pl. 264²
23. Pl. 162²⁴
24. Pl. 196⁵
25. Pl. 307b⁴, Pl. 574a⁸
26. Pl. 153a^{2,10}

land of Kyaukse was entirely dependent upon irrigation, there must have been special officers to supervise the irrigation. Unfortunately we find very little mention of the canals in the inscriptions. In an inscription of A.D. 1220 one officer called *Suwappapijāñ* is mentioned as the officer in charge of digging a canal.¹ In passing we must note that the Thindwe canal was not constructed by the Mongols in A.D. 1301 as the chronicles say because we find the mention of *Sāñthway Mroñ* as early as A.D. 1198.²

To guard the frontiers troops were probably garrisoned at strategic points and these guards it seems were mostly non-Burmans. An inscription of A.D. 1248 mentions the presence of *Cakraw kāñ sañ*³ - ?Sagaw guards at the *Chipton* (Poison Mountains) outpost, somewhere in the north of Kyaukse district. There was a group of people who used to have *kumithāñ*⁴ or *bhummañ*⁵ as prefixes to their names and they figured as important people in the sale of land, or in helping the revenue collectors. The actual nature of their duty is not known but it seems that they belonged to the landed gentry. In villages there were also *sañkri* and *sañlyāñ* who were supposed to be elders of the village. Perhaps they were president and vice-president of a local *sañ* - an association of some sort. Generally they were males⁶ but sometimes we find the term being prefixed to the name of a woman like *sañkri Uiw, Si Sañ*,⁷ but to make the matter more confused, it is also used as a prefix for some monks⁸ or as *kloñ sañkri*⁹ - the *sañkri* of the monastery. If the word *sañkri* is used exclusively for the monks we could understand that *sañ* being the short form for *sāñghā* - the Order, *sañkri* must mean a chief monk. But unfortunately, it is not the case. At the present stage, all we know about this word is that it means some very respectable person or a monk and if he be a layman *sañkri* he had some administrative duty in his locality. There were also *tuñ sañkri*,¹⁰ *tuñ sūkri*,¹¹ and *tuñ sañ*¹² whose names were always associated with land transactions and they were employed to put up boundary pillars or inscription pillars recording the dedications. They also figured as very important persons in law suits concerning land and were often ordered by the judges to put up the boundary pillars.¹³

1. Pl. 372³

2. *Hmannan*, para. 150; Pl. 46a²; *Census of India*, 1931; XI, i, p. 300, n. 11; and *JBRS*, XXX, i, p. 304, n. 18. See also *JBRS*, XLII, i, 43 and 68 and, *BRFSFAP*. II, p. 344, n. 18

3. Pl. 162⁵

4. Pl. 162⁴, Pl. 250³³

5. Pl. 224^{2,6}, Pl. 268^{6,7}

6. Pl. 75a⁴⁵, Pl. 77⁶, Pl. 113⁸, etc.

7. Pl. 53⁹, Pl. 124a³

8. Pl. 59

9. Pl. 367a⁸

10. Pl. 257³²

11. Pl. 257³¹, Pl. 578b⁹, Pl. 598a^{16,19}

12. Pl. 257¹⁹

13. Pl. 387⁴

To do away with the pillar they set up was a serious offence. An inscription records that in A.D. 1226 a person called Byagghasūra, probably an officer, dedicated five hundred and five pay of land and a sariphama or judge of the royal court ordered sāñkri Na Phway Sāñ and sāñlyāñ Na Wāñ Sāñ to put up the boundary stones. Tanhuñ Na Rac and party destroyed them and therefore they were fined one hundred (ticals) of nuy pyan - pure silver.¹ One can imagine how serious the offence was to be fined one hundred ticals of silver when a tical bought nearly two acres of good paddy land.²

It seems that all dedications of land to the religious establishments were to be reported to the king and in one inscription it is mentioned that no less a person than the chief minister Mahāsman recorded it in the royal register.³ But there must have been a special officer to do this registration. We find that Aswat one of the five ministers of Nātoñmā was described as the aklāñ tañ so māñ amat⁴ - the Royal Registrar. In a law suit between Mahākassapa and Cakraw guards of Chitponi, the judgment was passed in favour of Mahākassapa because the dedication of the land in question was found recorded in the royal register.⁵ Usually in such cases, after the judgment was pronounced, the judge ordered it to be put on record. The regular phrase for this order is amūkwan khai ciy.⁶ Some times the phrase cā khyup e7 - to fix by written words was used. One might safely presume that the rulings were written on palm leaves as piy cā tañ lat rakā⁸ - being recorded on the palm leaves, occurs in some inscriptions. But in certain very important cases, a special record was made. For example an inscription has :

l amokwan tañ e' lakpam klyam 2 thap akrā thgn.rwak cā hi e' //9

It is recorded on a teddy palm (*terminalia oliveri*) leaf which is put between two boards of a cotton tree (*bombax malabaricum*) wood.

Anything that should go on record concerning royalty was put in a separate register. The Jayapavattati inscription says that a dedication made by Nātoñmā eight years after his accession was by his orders put on record by four officers in athak carāñ¹⁰ - an upper register.

In a law suit, after the judge had pronounced his verdict, if the parties were happy about the judgement, they ate pickled tea together. That was the custom in Burma before the English came. But when it started is a moot point. We find no mention of such practice in the inscriptions dating up to A.D. 1300. There is even no mention of lbhak -

1. Pl. 574b⁷⁻⁸

2. Pl. 268³

3. Pl. 283¹⁵

4. Pl. 96⁶

5. Pl. 162⁸

6. Pl. 215b¹², Pl. 235³⁷, Pl. 245b⁸, Pl. 266a¹², Pl. 598a²¹

7. Pl. 272²⁰, Pl. 274¹⁸

8. Pl. 296²⁵

9. Pl. 417⁵⁻⁶

10 Pl. 905¹¹

pickled tea, in any inscription. Instead of this practice of eating pickled tea together, old Burmans sat down to a feast where a great quantity of meat and liquor was consumed. They did the same thing after every land transaction. Even if one party was a monk, the price of land included *siy phuiw sā phuiw*¹ - the price for liquor and the price for meat. For example *Māhākassapa* bought one thousand *pay* of land from the *Sāaw* at the price of a tical per *pay* and at the end of the transaction the *Sāaw* were given a feast when *thamāi phuiw siy phuiw sā phuiw*² - the price for cooked rice, meat and drink - amounted to fifty-four ticals. They were not satisfied with that and so they were given two and a quarter ticals again for the price of liquor. Professor G. H. Luce's note on this custom is reproduced below.

It seems that this custom was strongest in outlying regions and that it became increasingly common after the fall of Pagan. Very likely it was a survival of the old drunken sacrificial rites of pre-Buddhist Burma which still continue in the Chin Hills, Wa States, Karen and elsewhere.³

A very interesting law suit in which the rival claimants quarrelled for three generations is recorded in an inscription dated A.D 1262.⁴ The substance of the inscription is given below. In A.D. 1187 (i.e. during *Cañsū II*'s reign) Lord *Caku Kri* gave some of his lands to the monastery of the Chief Monk called *Na Tit San*. The chief monk caused a water tank to be constructed and turned the land into a paddy field. It seems that the land was wasteland before this. Lord *Caku Kri* expressed his wonder at this change and made a solemn vow that the land he had thus dedicated in support of the religion would not be included in his estates that his descendants would inherit when he passed away. Thus the land became dedicated permanently to the monastery where the chief monk *Na Tit San* was head. *Na Tit San* enjoyed the produce of the land during his life time. After *Na Tit San*, *Skhin Upacān* became head of the monastery. During *Skhin Upacān*'s life time, a devotee called *Na Ciñcim San* planted toddy palms around the water tank. *Skhin Upacān* also enjoyed the produce of the land during all his life time. Then *Skhin Munton* became head of the monastery and it was during his tenure that one *Uin Mwan San* the granddaughter of Lord *Caku Kri* claimed the land. When officers *Kannārā* and *Kānkabhatrā* came for inspecting the villages, the case was brought to their notice. One *Na Chañ San* who was once a monk at the said monastery and who witnessed the occasion when Lord *Caku Kri* made the dedication was brought before the officers. *Na Chañ San* said, "I knew and saw Lord *Caku Kri* dedicate this land to the Religion. I was the very man employed to construct the reservoir and dig the well. If *Uin Mwan San* wants to say to the contrary, let her say so in the name of Lord Buddha." With this *Uin Mwan San* refused to comply. Then in order to put more weight on what he had first spoken, he *dhat khī piy e*⁵ - lifted the relics of Buddha - and repeated his knowledge of the dedication. Witnesses to this act were

1. See Chapter VIII

2. Pl. 268^{8,9}

3. *JBRS*, XXX, i, p. 324, n. 94

4. Pl. 381

5. Pl. 381¹⁷. See also Pl. 78b⁷ and Pl. 191b¹¹

the chief monk *Nōi Cok*, the monk *Tuiñ Ma Lup* and the wealthy man *Nā Rok Lway Sañ*. Thus judgement was passed in favour of the Religion. This was in the year A.D. 1220. *Skhin Munton* was succeeded by *Sukhamin Sanpoñ* and *Buddhapā Sañkri* subsequently. Then in A.D. 1262, *Nā Phun Rok Sañ* and *Nā Pa Nay*, grandsons of *Cañsawat*, seized the land. *Skhin Silakumā*, the then head of the monastery complained. Two officers *Samantapicañ* and *Rājapuñi* took up the case. Twentyfour villagers were summoned to bear witness. All unanimously said that they knew the land having been dedicated by Lord *Caku Krī* to the monastery of *Nā Tit Sañ* and up to the present chief monk *Silakumā*, there had been six generations of chief monks enjoying the produce of the land. Thus, the officers decided in favour of the Religion again.

In this law suit, we know how a case was considered and decided in those days. It is also interesting to note that there were two officers who took equal responsibility in deciding the case and that the witness was to lift the relics of Buddha to affirm the truth of what he said. Another important thing that we come across is that the Pagan inscriptions made no mention of the *Dhammasattha* - the Code of Law, or *Rājasattha* - the Rulings, which were in general use in post Pagan periods. Therefore it is tempting to conclude that there is no truth in the *Dhammasattha* of Burma claiming antiquity. For example, Dr. Forchhammer says that the date for the *Dhammavilāsa Dhammasat* is given as A.D. 1172.² It is said that a *Taluiñ* monk called *Sariputta* compiled this *Dhammasat* and as a result he received the title of *Dhammavilāsa* from King *Cañsū II* (1174-1211). The tutor of *Nātoñmyā*, son and successor of *Cañsū II* was a native of Lower Burma, born at *Molañā* village to the east of *Tala*³ and this monk was given the title of *Dhammarājaguru* when *Nātoñmyā* became king. But *Dhammavilāsa* cannot be identified with this *Dhammarājaguru*.

King *Klacwā* made a unique attempt to assure the peace and tranquility of his subjects by issuing an edict against thieves.⁴ The edict is dated Thursday 6, May 1249. He decreed that his edict must be written on stone pillars and every village with more than fifty houses must have one erected in the village. Only eleven of the edict pillars have been discovered. He said: "Kings of the past punished thieves by divers tortures starting with impaling. I desire no such destruction. I consider all beings as my own children and with compassion towards all, I speak these words". Then he continued to give various kinds of tortures all of which were direct translations of the relevant portions on punishments from the *Majjhima Nikāya*, the *Ānguttara Nikāya* and the *Milanda Pañña*, which were exceedingly cruel in nature. He may not have intended to use these dire punishments. It seems that he was only trying to frighten his subjects into living good lives. With this threat, he probably hoped to have law and order in his realm. There is an interesting passage in this edict, where the word *amunwan* is referred to as a sort of manual for the punishments. It says:

*kuwiw so hust cañ mūkā / amunwan cā kuwiw phat ciy e / amunwan cā twañ akrañ
sukhuiw sañ / i mañ so / aplac te plac mū kā / i mañ so tan piy te piy ap e, hū piy e, /*

1. Pl. 174¹⁴ (A.D. 1249). The king ordered four judges to consult the *dhammasat* in a land dispute. This is the only mention of the *dhammasattha* in the inscriptions of our period.
2. Dr. Forchhammer: *The Jardine Prize Essay*, pp. 35-6
3. Pl. 63a¹⁴
4. See above pp. 24-9

(When a thief is caught and tried,) and found guilty, the *amunwan cā* is read (or referred to). In the *amunwan cā*, what sort of punishment would be given for what sort of crime is mentioned. Then he is punished accordingly.

Although it is difficult to explain what *amunwan cā* exactly means we know by inference that it was some kind of penal code.

We know very little of the revenue administration of the day¹. A few references however may be gleaned from inscriptions. For instance the land revenue from one hundred *pay* of land was one hundred pieces of loincloth² and in another the land revenue from three thousand *pay* of land was one hundred viss of copper and one hundred pieces of linen or if it was in paddy, the revenue was one basket of paddy for each *pay*.³ From a fishery the revenue was ten viss of copper.⁴ Evidently glebe lands were free from taxation. In an inscription dated A.D. 1260 a case is recorded where a village headman assessed certain religious lands⁵. This was reported to the *Mahāthera Samantabhadrā* who sent *Sūkhamīnī*'s son to King *Tarukpily* to inform him of the misdemeanour of one of his officers. The King ordered *Mahāśīman* the chief minister to inform the headman that the land was exempted from all taxation in the future. An inscription pillar was set up bearing this royal order together with a curse by the *Mahāthera* which said that if any government official in future attempted to collect revenue from the said land may he be swallowed by the earth and cooked in the *Ayici* hell.

Now, let us look into the story of the origin of the Hluttaw according to the chronicles. *Nātoñmyā* was the youngest son of King *Cañsū II*, who superseding his four elder brothers became king. Taking up this story Mr. G. E. Harvey goes on to described the appearance of Hluttaw.

One reason why his brothers loyally accepted his succession was that he virtually abdicated all power into their hands. The four of them met daily and transacted the affairs of the kingdom. Thus was founded the Hluttaw Yon, the Court of the Royal Commission, which remained till the end the council of the ministers.⁶

As mentioned above, *Nātoñmyā* had five ministers and they were not his brothers. The *Jeyawat* inscription however has proved that *Nātoñmyā* was not the youngest son.⁷ His name was *Nātoñmyā*, i.e. the King of Many Ear Ornaments, but it was misread *Nantōñmyā* meaning "many entreaties for the throne" and so a story had to be invented to explain the name and the story of the Hluttaw appears as a by-product. We find no mention of Hluttaw in the inscriptions of our period. Instead, the Pagan kings had many halls under the name of *kwan* where they granted audiences, and did meritorious deeds such as the giving of alms

1. Pl. 156¹⁻⁸, Pl. 195b⁷⁻⁸, Pl. 196²⁻¹², Pl. 212²⁰, Pl. 215b⁹, Pl. 224²⁵⁻²⁵, Pl. 249³⁴⁻⁵, Pl. 289¹⁰, Pl. 390³⁰⁻⁵¹, Pl. 392⁶

2. Pl. 392³⁻⁴

3. Pl. 390³⁰⁻¹

4. Pl. 392⁶

5. Pl. 196

6. Harvey: *Burma*, p. 59

7. Pl. 902⁰

to the monks or dedicating land and slaves to the religious establishments. The ministers also met at such halls and carried out their various official duties. These halls were *Kwan Prok*¹ - the Variegated Hall, *Kwan Prok Kri*² - the Great Variegated Hall, *Kwan Prok Nay*³ the Small Variegated Hall, *Kwan Sāyā*⁴ - the Pleasant Hall, *Kwan Mrañ*⁵ - the High Hall, *Chāñru Kwan*⁶ - the Hall of Elephant-review and *Cañkray Kwan*⁷ - the Pure Hall. It seems that the *Kwan Prok* was the most important hall and it always had a special caretaker. Incidentally one caretaker of the *Kwan Prok* was referred to as *siy ma sok kwan prok con*⁸ - a teetotaller. Probably, the king used this hall to perform his meritorious deeds. In one instance the king poured the water of libation to signify the end of his alms-giving when he was in the *Kwan Prok*.⁹ In another it is recorded that after being seated at the top of the *Kwan Prok* the great king made a dedication to the most reverend *Mahāthera*.¹⁰ In an inscription dated A.D. 1275 it is mentioned that all the ministers were present at the *Kwan Prok*¹¹ - when the king passed an order in connection with the religious land. It suggests that the king and ministers met here daily and carried out their administrative duties.¹² While King *Klacwā* was in the *Kwan Prok Nay* he passed an order giving the Queen Dowagar *Phwā*¹³ 150 slaves and 150 *pay* of land.¹⁴ The same inscription records that while King *Klacwā* was holding audience in the *Kwan Prok Nay*, the wife of *Singhapikram* requested the king to forgive her husband who had been exiled from the capital for his part in the rebellion led by *Siriwadhanā* which occurred probably soon after *Klacwā*'s accession in A.D. 1235.¹⁵ We know that *Klacwā* belonged to the junior branch of the royal family¹⁶ and there was a certain group of princes in the court who resented his accession and rebelled. *Singhapikram* was one of them. The inscription tells us that he was pardoned but as the price of his pardon, the king confiscated his estates. In A.D. 1262, on the death of his Queen *Ratanāpum*, King *Taruk(pilay)* made a series of dedications and monks were invited to the *Kwan Prok Kri* to receive alms.¹⁷ Regarding *Kwan Sāyā* we have an interesting story¹⁸. It is recorded that while *Bodhisattva Nātorāmyā* was at *Kwan Sāyā Chāñru Kwan* - the Pleasant Hall, the Hall of Elephant Review—a Cambodian in his service by the name of *Na Pu Tat* who had once received one hundred and fifty *pay* of land as a reward for bravery, was knocked down by an elephant and broke his leg. *Na Pu Tat* subsequently sold the land to the Pagan ministers. Thus, we know that *Kwan Prok* – the Variegated Hall—was the place where the kings did serious business such as giving audiences and doing meritorious deeds. The *Kwan Sāyā* – the Pleasant Hall—was however, used for amusement only though on some unfortunate

1. Pl. 79b⁹, Pl. 117a⁷, Pl. 125a², Pl. 228b¹⁰, Pl. 239¹⁷, Pl. 245b⁶, Pl. 266b¹⁵, Pl. 270⁵⁰, Pl. 274^{11,14,17}, Pl. 384¹⁶, Pl. 387b²
2. Pl. 203¹⁸, Pl. 235⁵⁷, Pl. 273¹⁵, Pl. 279¹⁹, Pl. 282¹⁰, Pl. 283¹⁰, Pl. 286², Pl. 290a⁴, Pl. 290b², Pl. 296⁷, Pl. 297²⁰
3. Pl. 234^{28,52}
4. Pl. 54⁷, Pl. 125a¹, Pl. 174⁵, Pl. 186⁵, Pl. 2354⁵, Pl. 239¹¹, Pl. 371b⁸
5. Pl. 196¹, Pl. 364a²
6. Pl. 186⁵, Pl. 239¹¹
7. Pl. 234²⁸
8. Pl. 270⁵⁰
9. Pl. 274¹⁴
10. Pl. 279²⁰
11. Pl. 245b⁶
12. Pl. 234²⁹
13. Pl. 234²⁸⁻⁵⁰
14. See above p. 23
15. See above p. 23
16. Pl. 203¹⁸
17. Pl. 186⁶, Pl. 239¹²

occasions as mentioned above, accidents might mar pleasure. King *Cañsū II* once did a meritorious deed while he was in the *Kwan Mrañ*—the High Hall. One can well imagine that this very High Hall was profusely decorated and became the *Kwan Prok*—the Variegated Hall. There is also mention of *Klaewā* passing an order giving 190 slaves to the Queen Dowager *Phwā Jaw* while he was at *Cañkray Kwan*—the Pure Hall.² Probably, it was a temporary structure as this is the only reference to such a name and it implies that, as a good Buddhist, the king might have stayed there for a religious purpose alone.

It seems that the Royal Registrar had his office in a separate building because sometimes land dedications were recorded in the register kept at the *Tañkup*³—the Shed. There is also a mention of *Tañkup Rhañ*⁴ - the Long Shed, where King *Rhuyansya* (A.D.1288-98) donated some land to the *Mahāthera Dhammasiri*.

We have the following picture of Burmese administration in medieval times. The king was the most important personage in the realm but he had learned and wise ministers in his council who advised him on important affairs. Then he also had Brahman astrologers who calculated auspicious moments for the starting of all important works. When serious problems arose the king appointed commissions to settle them. In administration, he was helped by ministers who were more or less well versed in the Buddhist scriptures. One of them was styled *amat kri*—the chief minister. There was no distinction between civil and military duties and therefore at times the chief minister himself may have led frontier campaigns. As the northern frontier of his kingdom was very important a viceroy was stationed at *Kok Cañ* (near modern Bhamo). It seems that the chief minister was usually viceroy of these northern marches. The government was not divided into administration, judiciary and law, and therefore a minister had to undertake any administrative work which his master the king set him to do. But the presence of *saniphamā* as special officers trying law suits shows that Burma in medieval times had a distinct judicial body although the customary law was probably not yet codified then. The word *dharmasattha* is mentioned only once in an inscription dated A.D.1249. Probably it refers to an Indian law book. In criminal cases the *amunwan* *cañ* was used as a sort of penal code but unfortunately we are none too sure of its meaning. Embracing the relics of Buddha and declaring that one was telling only the truth was regarded trustworthy and failure to do so was tantamount to an admission of guilt. There were many secretaries and clerks at the king's court to take down all the orders either from the king or one of the ministers. Mounted couriers were used when messages were urgent. It seems that there were fairly good communications between the capital and the provincial administrative centres. The province, the town and the village had their own local administrative officers. At times some of the senior officers from the capital toured the districts and tried cases if necessary. There were special officers assigned to irrigation, land assessment and revenue collection. Revenue was received either in bullion or in kind and many were the royal granaries throughout the realm which stored up the revenue in kind. There were people who had *kumitham* and *bhumma* prefixed to their names and it has been supposed that they were the landed gentry. The king's relation with the Order is an important factor in the adminis-

1. PI.365a2

2. PI.234a⁵ (A.D.1294)

3. PI.283¹⁵

4. PI.27012

tration of Burma. The Buddhist precepts always reminded the king to be just and in some cases, we find monks intervening in politics. The outstanding instance of a monk helping to save his country from ruin is clearly shown in Syan Disāprāmuk's peace mission to Taytu—the Mongol capital, in A.D.1285. When the king's interests clashed with those of the monks he usually gave in and this shows that the monks were quite important. In the light of the above evidence we can see very clearly that the administration in medieval Burma was a well organized one.

CHAPTER IV

SĀSANA

THE Burmese word *Sāsanā* is clearly the Pali *Sāsana*, which means the doctrine of the Buddha i.e. the Religion. *Sāsanā* in Burmese also means the year of the Religion as reckoned from the death of the Buddha which is 544 B.C.¹ according to Burmese sources. The *Sāsanavarsa*—the History of the Buddha's Religion²—by *Paññasāmi* written in A.D. 1861 traces the expansion of Buddhism to Burma. According to this history the *Rāmañña* country (Lower Burma) was the first to receive the Religion. Then in A.B. 235, the *Sona* and *Uttara* mission came to a place in the *Rāmañña* country known as *Suvannabhūmi* which is partly on the edge of Mt. *Kelasa* in Thaton district. But these are only traditions³ and Asoka's Rock Edicts⁴ giving the list of the countries to which missions were sent do not mention the *Sona* and *Uttara* mission to *Suvannabhūmi*. Nevertheless tradition maintains that henceforth Thaton was the centre from which the Religion spread upcountry.⁵

The conquest of Thaton in 1057 by *Aniruddha* resulted, it is said, in the introduction of pure *Theravāda* Buddhism into Upper Burma. But unfortunately there is no known contemporary evidence in support of this famous episode. All the information we have about this event is from various chronicles which are far from reliable for the period under consideration. This is what Professor G.H. Luce said on the subject.

Already these accounts cancel themselves out: *Aniruddha* goes seeking the *Tipitaka* now at Thaton now at the Khmer capital Angkor. He receives an insolent refusal now at Thaton, now at Angkor. *Kyanzitha* the general in one case, *Aniruddha* the king in the other, performs feats of gymnastics 'piercing the Cambodians' (*krwam:thui*): the scene is now Pegu, now Angkor. Each has magic horses that can fly so fast as to give the impression of an army. Each cows his rival with the spectre of streaks of betel-blood: but in one case it is the Khmer monarch, in the other that of Nanchao. Hero, scene and villain are alike lost in folktale and history sub-merged in the myth.⁶

Nevertheless, the find spot of the seals of *Aniruddha*, which we have discussed in a previous chapter certainly suggests that *Aniruddha* with his capital at Pagan expanded north and south and that Thaton was included in this general advance. There is much doubt that

1. 483 B.C. according to modern scholars. See E. J. Thomas: *The Life of Buddha as Legend and History*, p. 27, n.1
2. *Paññasāmi: Sāsanavarsa*, pp. 37-9; B. C. Law: *The History of the Buddha's Religion*, pp. 40-4
3. Sinhalese chronicles also mention this tradition; W. Geiger: *Mahāvārīsa*, XII, 44, p. 86 and H. Oldenberg: *Dīpavārīsa* (1879) VIII, 1-13, pp. 53-4 and translation pp. 159-60. W. Geiger in his introduction to *Mahāvārīsa* considers that these Sinhalese chronicles are quite trustworthy.
4. Asoka's Rock Edicts Nos. 5 and 13. See V. Smith: *Asoka* (1909) pp. 161-3 and 172-5. See also Dr R. Bhandādar: *Asoka*, pp. 284-5 and 300-04.
5. *Hmannan para. 131; GPC*, p. 74
6. G.H. Luce: "Mons of the Pagan Dynasty", *JBRS*, XXXVI, i, p.9

Thaton was the home of pure Theravāda Buddhism and that it reached Pagan only after the aforesaid conquest.¹

It is more than possible that Buddhism has been known to the early Burmans even before the 11th century. They may have been influenced in their civilization and religion by the Pyu because as late as A.D.1112-13 a Pagan prince called *Rājakumār*, the beloved son of *Thihis Mañ* (1034-1113) used Pyu as one of the four languages to record a dedication that he made on behalf of his dying father.² Their first capital *Śriksētra*, four miles to the east of Prome, was probably built in A.D.638 and it seems that they moved to Halingyi near Shwebo in about the middle of the 8th century when the Karens came.³ The Pyu kingdom was ultimately destroyed in A.D.832.⁴

Many interesting articles have been unearthed by the excavations at Hmawya. The most important find was made in 1926 when twenty gold-leaf Pali manuscripts were uncovered.⁵ Altogether these leaves contain eight extracts from the Pali *pitaka* texts. The first extract is on *Nidāna* or *Paticca Samuppādā*; the second enumerates the seven kinds of *Vipassanā nānā* (co-attentive knowledge); the third gives the thirtyseven *Bodhipakkhiya dhammā* (elements of enlightenment); the fourth classifies the four perfections of the Buddha;⁶ the fifth enumerates again the fourteen kinds of knowledge possessed by the Buddha,⁷ the sixth is a verse from the *Dhammapada*⁸ telling the best of things in this world; the seventh describes the journey to *Rājagaha* by the Buddha and his disciples;⁹ and the eighth is in praise of the Buddha.¹⁰ The gold-leaf manuscripts¹¹ together with some similar ones found in the same vicinity¹² strongly suggest that Pali Buddhism was known to the Pyu and that their knowledge of it was by no means slight.¹³ One might even

1. See *Hmarian*, paras. 131-2; *GPC*, pp. 73-7. In a supposed conversation between Arahan and *Aniruddha* in their first interview, the king spoke as if he was utterly ignorant of Buddhis. Thus the Chroniclers advance the view that Pagan knew nothing of Buddhism until the Lord Arahan appeared there just before the 1057 conquest.

2. See the *Rajakumār* inscription (Pl.363ab), popularly known as the Myazedi inscription, *Ep. Birm.* I, i.

3. *JBR*, XLII, i, 11

4. *JBR*, XLII, i, 79

5. *ASI*, 1926-7, p.200 & Plate XLII, g. *ASB*, 1938-9, pp.12-22 & Plates IVC, Vab, and VIab.

6. *Majjhima Nikāya*, I, pp. 261, 263-4; III, pp.63-4. *Āṅguttara Nikāya* II, pp. 63-4; III, p.135; V, p. 388. *Āṅguttara Nikāya*, V, p. 184. *Vinaya Piṭaka* I, pp.1-2. *Dhammasaṅgani*, p. 229. *Vibhāga* pp.135, 138-9, 165-8.

7. *Visuddhi Magga* II, p. 639. (It gives eight kinds; our text omits the *paṭisankhāṇupassanāñāna*.) *Abhidhammañātha Saṅgaha*. (It gives ten kinds; our text omits the *sammūsanāñāna*, *paṭisankhāṇāna* and *anyulomañāna*.)

8. *Dīghanikāya*, III, 102; *Majjhima Nikāya*, II, 245; *Āṅguttara Nikāya*, IV, 125-6; *Udāna*, 56

9. *Majjhima Nikāya*, I, 71-2; *Āṅguttara Nikāya*, I, 8-9

10. *Khuddaka Nikāya*, I, 133

11. *Dharmaupada* (Verse 273) (P.T. 1914) p.40

12. *Vinaya Piṭaka*, (*Mahāyagga*, I), 38; *Jātakatthakathā*, I, 84

13. *Mahāparinibbāna Sutta* (*Dīghanikāya*)

14. *ASB*, 1938-9, pp.17-22. Edited and translated by U Lu Pe Win

15. Maunggan gold plates discovered in 1897 (*Ep. Ind.* V, pp.101-02; M. Louis Finot: "Un nouveau document sur le Bouddhisme Birman", *J.A.*, XX, 1912, pp. 121-36); Bawhawgyi stone inscriptions discovered in 1910-11 (*ASB*, 1924, pp.21-6); Kyundawzu gold plate discovered in 1928-9 (*ASI*, 1929-9, pp.108-09).

16. "Pali as the language of Theravāda Buddhism is known and understood, and Pali canonical texts, at least the more important of them, are studied in their doctrinal and metaphysical and most abstruse aspects (c.A.D.450-500). Early Burdhalogy also seems to have been more or less a familiar subject, at least in the Old Pyu capital i.e. old Prome. This point is beyond doubt." N.Ray: *Theravāda Buddhism in Burma*, p.34.

assume that the Pali Buddhism thriving in *Sriksētra* spread and reached the Burmans at Pagan. It is possible that the Pyu after the destruction of their capital mixed freely with the Burmans and were quickly absorbed by the more virile race.¹ There are three inscriptions in the Pyu script at the Pagan Museum, viz. No.96 (Pl.357a, from Halingyi antedating Pagan),² No. 10 (Pl. 363a, the *Rājakumār* inscription dated A.D. 1113) and No. 3. (Pl. 555). The last one has two faces, one in Chinese. It probably belongs to the period between 1287 and 1298.³ The scarcity of Pyu inscriptions during the whole of the Pagan period is best explained in this way. Though both the Pyu and Mon civilized the Burmans the Mon influence predominated probably because of their proximity—there being some colonies of Mon in the Kyaukse area. During the second decade of the 12th century a reaction against the Mon influence set in. The inscriptions of the transition period (1113-74) show the Burmans using Mon, Sanskrit, Pali, Pyu and Burmese languages⁴ simply because the art of writing in Burmese was still in its infancy. Ultimately the Burmese language triumphed over its rivals.

We have seen from the gold leaf manuscripts found at Hmawza that the Pyu knowledge of Buddhism was not slight. Even if the Mon had outrivalled the Pyu element the latter probably was still a strong one as is shown by a Pyu face in the *Rājakumār* inscription. Therefore, until the contrary is proved it is possible to say that the Burmese derived some sort of Pali Buddhism from the Pyu prior to the said conquest of Thaton.

The Mon were living side by side with the Burmans in the Kyaukse area even before *Aniruddha*, and this certainly proves that the Mon civilization was not new to them when they expanded south and conquered the 'Monland'. Professor G.H. Luce thinks that the Mon were in the Kyaukse area even before the arrival of the Burmans⁵ and that the infiltration of the Burmans into that area drove them south though some remnants survived in the northwestern corner of it. The Burmese inscriptions between 1211 and 1262 made three references to the 'main village of the Talaings' (*Talāiñ rwā ma*).⁶ Probably they refer to these Mon remnants and their place is located at *Khamlā* or *Khabū* near the junction of the Samon and the Myinge.⁷ An old Mon inscription⁸ 'which still stands on the north-west side'⁹ of the Kyaukse Hill is quoted below to show that these Mon were Buddhists.

1. We have mention of Pyu in the inscriptions until as late as 1510 (List 1050⁷⁰).

2. See *ASB*, 1915, p.21.

3. "...Stone 3 at the Pagan Museum, with two faces, Chinese and Pyu respectively, both illegible. It is not certain that the two faces belong to the same date; but if they do, the date is likely to be between 1287-98, when, following the capture of Pagan by Asān-tūmīt, Mongol-Chinese influence was paramount at the Burmese capital. If so, the use of Pyu in preference to Burmese may perhaps be attributed to the Chinese love of learned archaism". *JBRS*, XLII, i, 53

4. The Shwezigon inscription (*Ep. Birm.*, III, pp.68-70) is in Mon, the Shwegugyi (Pl. 1 and 2) is in Pali and Sanskrit and the *Rājakumār* inscription (*Ep. Birm.*, I, i) is in Pali, Burmese, Mon and Pyu.

5. *JBRS*, XXXVI, i, 3

6. Pl.38b⁸, Pl. 205¹²⁻¹⁷ and Pl. 212⁴

7. See Map 2.

8. *Ep. Birm.*, III, i, 70-3

9. *JBRS*, XXXVI, i, 3

I, the Chief Monk...loñ, when I came to dwell at Klok-Sa, I informed the Chief Monk of Bukām, I informed the king there, that I was building a baddhasima. These (are the persons) who together with myself worked (for this temple?): the junior monk Mahādew, his father, his mother, his (grandfather?) (...?) the mother of Na Lwoy, Ya Wāñ, son of Na Mrik, Na Gan Dā: these I dedicate to the temple, who worked together with myself. The great (donation?) of (measures of?) arable land, which the kon samben dalin gave to me, I also give to the temple. (May?) the accumulation of merit, (offering (and) worshipping?).....(conduct ?) for (all beings ?).....

This presence of a Mon mahāthera in Kyaukse district and his building of a permanent ordination hall together with the fact that he informed a mahāthera resident at Pagan of his meritorious deed clearly shows that the Burmans had close contact with the Mon in religious affairs. Unfortunately the inscription bears no date. Anyhow if we accept the theory that the Burmans took the Kyaukse area from the Mon and that "the victors sat at the feet of vanquished"², we could easily go a step further and say that the Burmese got some form of Buddhism from the Mon remnants even before the 11th century.

It is important to discover what sort of religion the Burmans practised in the early part of the Pagan dynasty which has been labelled the Mon period (1057-1113) as most of the inscriptions attributed to this era are in the Mon language. In the Great Shwezigon inscription³ of Thiluñ Mai (1084-1113) we have the eulogy of the king who shall rule Pagan after A.B.1630 (A.D.1086)⁴. According to it the principal religion then practised was Buddhism. But there are references to other religions as well. Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja (i.e. Thiluñ Mai) the Buddhist King is considered as a reincarnation of Vishnu⁵. Evidently there is a good deal of Brahmanism in the Buddhism that they practised. This, in spite of the fact that the king had a spiritual adviser who helped him rule righteously and purify the religion.

A Lord Mahāther, who possesses virtue, who is the charioteer of the Law, King Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja shall make....., shall make (him) his spiritual teacher. In the presence of the Lord Mahāther, abounding in virtue, who is the charioteer of the Law also, 'Together with my lord will I cleanse the religion of the Lord Buddha', thus shall King Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja say.⁶

1. This Klok-Sa is identified as the two villages of Klok and Sayon (Pl.34¹², Pl.48⁹, Pl.49⁷, Pl.232⁷, Pl.272⁵⁷) which were later combined to form Kyaukse. See JBRS, XLII, i,64.
2. JBRS, XXXVI, i, 3
3. Ep.Birm., I, ii, pp.90-130
4. This is supposed to be the coronation year of Thiluñ Mai who ascended the throne in 1084. Ep.Birm., I, ii, p.113
5. Ep.Birm., I, ii, A⁴⁶, 114
6. Ibid. p.117

The inscription goes on to say that Buddhism prospers well in the realm.

The city of Arimaddanapūr, which is the dwelling place of King Sri Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja shall glow (and) glitter with the Precious Gems. King Sri Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja shall pray desiring omniscience.

All those who dwell in the city of Arimaddhanapūr, together with King Sri Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja, shall delight worthily in the Precious Gems, shall worship, revere, (and) put their trust in the Lord Buddha, the Good Law and all the lords of the Church.¹

It is surprising to note that orthodoxy went side by side with religious toleration.

In the realm of my lord all those who were heretical shall become orthodox entirely. All the monks shall be full of virtue and good conduct. All the Brahmins, who know the Vedas, they shall fulfil all the Brahman law.²

We have further evidence of the King's religious fervour in another inscription.³ It said that he built a pagoda called *Jayabhūmi* (Shwezigon) to the northeast of Pagan, collected and purified the three holy *Pitaka* which had become obscure, sent men, money and material to effect repairs at the holy temple of *Sri Bajrās* (Bodh Gayā), offered the four necessities (i.e. shelter, robes, food and medicine) to the monks frequently and converted a *Shan* (Coli) prince to Buddhism. In spite of his religious fervour his palace inscription⁴ dated A.D. 1101-02, proves beyond a doubt that the Buddhism practised at the court of Pagan was far from pure. This inscription shows "a mixed ceremonial proceeding under the very eye of the mahāthera Arahan".⁵ The whole affair was left in the hands of "the Brahman astrologers who were versed in house-building"⁶ except when the Buddhist monks were invited to bless the site by reciting the *paritta*—a Buddhist ritual formula or order of service invoking protection. Even then the water used for the occasion was drawn and carried by the Brahmins and the conch which is supposed to be the symbol of Vishnu was used to hold the water. The following extract shows this clearly.

At sunset, *godhuli* (being) *lagna*, the *sankrān* Brahmins, who carried litters, beat the foremost drum. The Brahman astrologers went (and) drew water for the reciting of the *paritta*. Having brought the water, they arranged the water (in) vessels of gold, vessels of silver (and) vessels of copper (at each place where?) the blessing (was to be given?): at the great pavilion and the four *cindrow* pavilions and the ablution pavilion

1. *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, 121

2. *Ibid.* p.127

3. The Shwesandaw (3) inscription, *Ibid.*, pp.153-68

4. *Ep. Birm.*, III, i, 1-68. This inscription was broken into many pieces and Dr C.O. Blagden has arranged the eighteen fragments in order naming them consecutively from ABC up to S. Professor G.H. Luce disagrees with this order. According to him it should be NRSOPQ, BCDA, EFGH and JKLM.

5. *JBRS*, XLII, i, 62

6. *Ep. Birm.*, III, i, p.64. 06

and the *just dal* pillars. Water (in) four thousand earthenware vessels and eight conch shells they arranged at the dwellings of the four thousand lords of the Church who were to recite the *paritta* outside and throughout the palace (and as for all?) the eight lords of the Church, our lords the monks of the Church (who were to be?) the leaders in reciting the *paritta* outside, together with the four thousand monks;.....the dwellings of the eight leading lords of the Church, eight mats, eight (figured?) cloths (and) eight spades, water (in) a hundred and eight vessels and a hundred and eight conch shells, they arranged (at?) the dwelling places of a hundred and eight lords of the Church, with our lord the Chief Monk Arahan, who were to recite the *paritta* within, at the dwelling places of those hundred and eight lords of the Church (they arranged) a hundred and eight mats, a hundred and eight (figured?) cloths (and) a hundred and eight spades.¹

The inscription goes on to say how the coach came into use in a Buddhist rite. It also mentions that the monks were standing during *sarapasila* and *paritta* which would be considered unusual now-a-days in Burma.²

At that time our lord the Chief Monk Arahan stood at the western side facing towards the eastern side (and) holding a right-volute conch shell, together with water (in) vessels of gold, silver, copper (and) earthenware, which they arranged in front of our lord the Chief Monk Arahan.

Then our lord the Chief Monk Arahan gave the *sarapasila* and all the four thousand one hundred and eight monks remained standing within (and) without, with our lord the Chief Monk Arahan, who was the leader in reciting the *paritta* blessing.³

A special place was allotted in the new palace as a prayer hall and next to the image of Buddha was placed the image of *Gawampati*.

Towards the east side of the front of the great hall, (they) made a sanctuary, furnished with seats, which (they) made fitingly, which (they) decorated (round about?) with white cloth (and which they shaded?) with white umbrellas. Then (they) spread rugs on the top of the seats. Then (they) set (thereon) a golden statue of Buddha, a statue of the Lord *Gawampati*, with books of the *Vinaya*, *Sutta* (and) *Abhidhamma*

At three *pahir* (they) sounded the drums (and) blew.... (in honour of ?) the golden Buddha, the Lord *Gawampati* and all the four

1. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, pp. 36-7, IX, A¹²⁻²⁸

2. Perhaps as Dr C.O. Blagden suggests (*Ep. Birm.* III, i, p. 38, ns. 8 and 10) the Old Mon word *taew* does not mean exactly "to stand." It might simply mean "stayed, remained". Mr. H.L. Shorto prefers the second form. Then, it would mean that the monks stayed at a specified place marked for them, very probably sitting cross-legged and recited the *paritta*.

3. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, p. 38, A⁴⁰⁻⁶

thousand one hundred and eight lords of the Church of whom our lord the Chief Monk Arahan was the leader.¹

Although the presence of 1408 monks including *Mahāthera Arahan* is mentioned in the inscription one gets the impression that the Brahmins were the more important. In all the eighteen known fragments of the inscription the mention of the Brahmins occurs forty nine times²—they are found leading at every step of the construction. Therefore it is natural to conclude that the worship of *Vishnu*³ (*Nār* in the inscription, is the Mon word for *Nārāyaṇa*) preceeds all important ceremonies. Offerings were also made to *Indra*.⁴ Another important thing of note is that the Brahmins also performed the *Nāga* worship.

To the *Nāgas* (they) made a decoration of plantains (for ?) a dwelling place, spread mats, (and set in readiness?) golden flowers (and) altar oblations. ... Then the Brahman astrologers versed in house-building offered water (in) vessels of gold (and) silver, and then they worshipped the *Nāgas*.⁵

For other evidences of Brahmanical influence it is best to quote Professor G.H. Luce. In the Nanpaya of the captured Mon King (Makuṭa), the chief sculptures left are those of *Brahma*. Almost next door to Kyanzitha's palace, stands to this day a temple of *Visnu*, the Nathlaungkyauṅ. *Shiva* symbols and statues, though found at Pagan, are rare compared with *Vaishnava*; but the trident is still to be seen on the old glazed plaques at the Shwezayan pagoda at Thaton.⁶

Even in the Burmese inscriptions belonging to the later half of the dynasty we find traces of Brahmanical influence. A village named *Lintuñ* (*Lin̄ga*) mentioned in an inscription⁷ dated A.D.1235 suggests the presence of phallic worship at one time. Another village called *Kulā Nat*⁸ in an inscription of A.D.1256 also suggests that the villagers once worshipped an Indian deity. God *Mahāpinnañi* (*Mahā Viñāyaka*) i.e. *Gaṇeśa* is mentioned in an inscription⁹ dated A.D.1279.

As regards *Gāvampati*, Dr C.O. Blagden describes him as 'the patron saint of the Mons' and 'the patron saint of Pagan'.¹⁰ In the Tainggyu inscription¹¹ (A.D. 1279) *Gavampati* is mentioned together with the Buddha and his two chief disciples. Regarding this Professor Pe Maung Tin says:

It is interesting to note that here the Buddha is attended not only by his

1. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, pp. 37-8. A²⁶⁻³⁵
2. *Ibid.*, pp. 1-68. (O⁶, P⁸, Q⁸, B⁷ 10, 15, 19, C³ 10, 12, 18, 20, 33, 40, D⁴ 10, 23, 25, 36, A¹³, E¹⁰, 28, 30, 32, F¹⁰, 11, 28, 31, G³, 5, 11, 17, H⁸, 12, 14, 18, 23, 31, 36, 37, 45, J², 9, 14, 17, 19, K⁹, 16, L¹, 19, M³, 15)
3. *Ibid.*, P⁸, B⁵⁷, C⁵⁵, F³⁰, G³, H¹⁰, J¹⁴
4. *Ibid.*, D²⁹
5. *Ibid.*, H¹⁰ and H¹⁵
6. *JBRS.* XLII, i, 63. See also N.Ray: *Brahmanical Gods in Burma*, pp.3, 8-9, 23, and 34.
7. Pl.128a¹⁰. This inscription is from Hsingut village, Shwebo.
8. Pl.388a¹⁰
9. Pl.2624¹⁶
10. *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, p.87. See also *ASB*, 1913, p.23
11. Pl. 6

8 - U.P. Q.144 - 1090.23.3.78

two chief disciples but also by *Gawampati*, the patron of the Mons.¹

The Great Shwezigon inscription² mentions *Gavampati* as the son (i.e. disciple) of Buddha. In this matter Dr N. Ray says:

Gavampati, who is represented in Mon records as the son of the Lord Buddha, has rightly been styled as the patron saint of the Mons as well as the patron saint of Pagan.³

But Professor G.H. Luce seems to be a little reluctant to regard this deity as 'the patron saint of the Mons'. He says:

Gavampati, the so-called patron saint of the Mons, is frequently referred to, sometimes as 'my son' by the Buddha; his statue is placed besides that of the Buddha; Anorathā is said to have carved an image of him (List 23;27) but he is really a pre-Buddhist Shaivaite deity, the 'Lord of Oxen', and perhaps a god of drought and wind.⁴

He appears to have decided that Gavampati was a pre-Buddhist Shaivaite deity. The trouble, however, is that there are many *Gavampati*: the cow-lord, the lord of the rays, the sun, the name of Agni, the name of a snake demon and lastly but not the least the name of a Buddhist mendicant.⁵ *Gavampati Thera*⁶ was one of the well-known disciples of the Lord Buddha and therefore one wonders whether the *Gavampati* of the Pagan inscriptions was the *Gavampati Thera* or *Gavampati*—the Shaivaite deity. The fact that the Buddha addressed *Gavampati* as 'my son'⁷ and that his statue is placed among the Buddhist canonical works in one case⁸ and in another⁹ together with the statues of *Sāriputrā* and *Moggallāna*, suggests that the inscriptions were referring to *Gavampati Thera*. Be that as it may we are safe in saying that the Buddhism which the Burmans received from the Mon was far from pure even though the chronicles claim otherwise.

After the death of *Thiluiñ Mañ* (1084–1113) Mon influence gradually waned and so our inscriptions are largely in Burmese (with the exception of a few which are in Pali or Pali mixed up with Burmese.)

Ratanā sum pā: is the Burmese phrase for Three Gems, i.e. *Purhā*—the Lord, *Tryā*—the Law, and *Saṅghā*—the Order. They were as important to the medieval Burman as they

1. *JBRS*, XXVI, i, p.56

2. *Ep.Birm.*, I, ii, A⁵², 114

3. N.Ray: *Brahmanical Gods of Burma*, p.17

4. *JBRS*, XLII, i, 62. See also Przyluski: *Le Concile de Rājagrāha*, pp.239-56.

5. Monier-Williams: *Sanskrit Dictionary*, p.351

6. Malalasekera: *Dictionary of Pāli Proper Names*, I, pp.756-8. The *Sāsanavarīsa* (p.36ff. of the Text, and p.41ff. of the Translation by R.C.Law) speaks of a thera by this name, at whose request the Buddha went to *Suddhammapura* in the Rāmañña country to establish his Religion.

7. *Ep.Birm.*, I, ii, p.114

8. *Ep.Birm.*, III, i, pp.37-8

9. Pl.6⁶

are to-day. Sāsamā—the Religion, was equally important to him and he considered himself always responsible for its maintenance. He dedicated lands, slaves, cattle, precious metals, food, and various other articles of daily use from a costly robe to a spittoon, as a means of support to them (*rattanā 3 pā sa tui e' pacceñ phlac cim so nhā*).¹ It was then, as it is at present the popular belief that the Religion of the Lord shall last for 5000 years (*sāsamā anhac 5000 mlok on tāñ rac cim, so nhā*).² As there is no canonical work which supports the theory that the Religion shall last only 5000 years, the late Ādīcavāraṇa suggested that

the Religion shall stand for five thousand, six thousand, seven thousand (years) or even more without any limit.

But he put a saving clause by saying that as long as there are believers there is the Religion. Though his suggestion is extremely sound he nevertheless suffered pakāsanīyakamma (excommunication) in 1935 for making remarks which upset popular beliefs.³ Thus the old Burman just as his modern counterpart dogmatically believed that the Religion would last for only 5000 years and that it was his duty to support it. To fulfil these duties meant working for one's own salvation. The Religion taught him that nothing was permanent in this world and that wealth accumulated in this life cannot buy longevity and when he dies he leaves everything behind. The only thing that would help him in his journey through Samsāra was to spend his wealth in charity and thereby accumulate merit. The following excerpt illustrates this very well.

||Sakaraç 653 khu Naniyun l-chan 11 ryak 5 niy Acau Racasū ceti tāñ so Skhin Racasū mi nhalum thit lan lat rakā. | nā e' mi pha phiy phuiw tuiw le amuy utcā tuiw kuiw cwan kha ruy swā kha kum e' | khyat cwā so nā sā lha le amuy uccā nhañ akwa nā mi rāñ kuiw cwan kha prī kā | nā le sū ma yū nuiñ ruy thā kha so amuy uccā kuiw nā le thuiw suiw lañkon ma pā tat so akron kuiw si rakā | nā mi nā pha nā sā amlyuiw khapsim kuiw niyrapan e' pacceñ aihok apañ phlac cim so nhā lhū tum so⁴

On 9 May 1291, the founder of Acau Racasū pagoda—the mother of Lord Racasū was startled at heart and she said: "My parents, my grand parents and my great grand parents have all gone, abandoning their inherited property. Now my beloved and handsome son has gone likewise abandoning his inherited property and myself—his own mother. Knowing that I too cannot take away with me (this)-inherited property which they have left behind because they could not take it, I dedicate it so that it may be one of the attributes for my mother, my father, my son and all my relatives attaining nirvana".

1. Pl.24¹³

2. Pl.73²⁹, Pl.90¹⁴, Pl.1577, Pl.205⁵, Pl.228b², etc.

3. See Ādīcavāraṇa: *Bhikkhunisāsanopadesa*, pp.19 and 56 and also *Bhikkhuni Are: Purā*. Taw Sein Ko also observed that 'it is idle to set bounds to the limits of eternity.' *Burmese Sketches 1* (1913) pp.60-1

4. Pl.272⁵¹⁻⁶. See also *JBRS*, XXVI, i, 54 and XXVI, iii, 137.

Thus giving away one's own property in charity without limit or possibility of an equal return (*asadisadāna*)¹ if possible was believed as one of the means of acquiring merit which is an attribute towards the final attainment of *nirvana*. After every act of merit the donor would pray, for instance,

*||iy nā koñmhū mū so klañcū phlañ, kāñ Mittyā purhāñ skhiñ purhāñ phlac sū rhāw
āñ arahantā chu ra luiw sū te||*²

For the benefit of this act of merit I made, may I get the boon of arahantship when *Maitreya* becomes the Buddha.

This is the typical prayer one finds in the inscriptions of our period. Donors wanted the boon of *nirvana* in the form of a mere *araha* when *Bodhisattva Maitreya* becomes the Buddha. But there were also exceptions to this rule—the most ambitious asked for the boon of Buddhahood. We will consider such exceptions in detail later.

We may safely assume that the *Sāsanā* had a great influence over the Burmans of our period. What the *Sāsanā* taught them, how they interpreted it and how it influenced in their daily life is best illustrated in the following inscription dated AD 1266.

*...Mathi Luiw mliy || mañ miyā Siñghasū sami || phlac sa chuiw nr̄ay uiw mañ sa
chuiw nr̄ay siy so chuiw nr̄ay ma khyat sa sū nhañ akwa niy sa chuiw nr̄ay khyat sa sū
nhañ kwiy kañ sa chuiw nr̄ay luiw ruy ma ra sa chuiw nr̄ay || iy suiw ka ca so atuñ
ma si sa chuiw nr̄ay tuiw sañ nhip cak so khandhā kuiw cwan thā kha ruy chuiw nr̄ay
khapsim kañ so khyamsā cwā so mlat so niyraban kuiw lhyāñ jā luiw sate hū ruy khyat
cwā so mlat so rhuy n̄iy ka ca so utcā tuiw kuiw cwan ruy plu so kloñ twañ niy so satañ
samādhi praññ hū so klañ-jū sum pā kuiw rhā so satañ, cañ so purhā tape, sā rahan
szāghā khyamsā cim so n̄tā lay uyāñ kyāñ khapañ akrwāñ may lhyāñ lhu e, || iy nā
tuiw plu so koñmhu akliuñ || atuñ khapsim so kuiw acuiw ra so riy mliy askhiñ phlac
so mañkri le ra ciy e, || iy koñmhu ānubhaw phlañ prañ tuiñ kā khapsim so n̄huik niy
so lū khapsim so e, aci aphiñ khyamsā kuiw rhā piy lyak sak tauw rhañ cwā niy ruy iy
koñmhu kuiw thok pañ ciy sate || amipurhā ca so moñma tauw khapsim le ra ciy e, ||
akhyāñ khyāñ amyak a-i ta ciy ma hiy khyat sa myak ciy phlañ rhu kra ra ciy e, ||
yakhu hi so noñ phlac lat am so mañkri mañsā amattyā ca so sū khapsim le ra ciy
sate ariy aram yū pā ciy sate || Yama mañ ca so sattawā khapsim le ra ciy sate || ara
ami kuiw luiw so sū kā ara ami ra ciy e, || koñmhu kuiw mū lui so sū kā koñmhu kuiw
mū ra ciy e, || nā le ramāñ kri sa ma roñ ray tat so || amyak kri so sū tak thā kuiw
n̄han chay tat so praññ ma hiy so muik so wantuiw so apiy akarñ ma hiy so || saccā ma
hiy so plak tat so || miy lyaw so o miy ta sa kañ so ma phlac mū ruy ramāñ mak nañ so
roñ ray lway so || amyak nañ so sanā tat so praññ hiy so akroñ kuiw si tat so wan ma
tuiw so apiy akarñ hiy so saccā hiy so ma plak tat so ma miy lyaw so ok miy ta sa hiy
so iy suiw so klañ-jū tuiw nhañ plañ-jūñ lyak sañsarā n̄huik kyañ lañ ruy Mittaryā
purhā myakmhok kañkā lhyāñ || 0 || mlat sa aklwat taryā ra luiw sate || 0 ||³*

1. PI.275¹²

2. PI.23¹⁰. See also PI.246¹³, PI.253b²⁰, etc.

3. PI. 216¹⁻¹⁵

I, the grand daughter of *Mathi Luiw*, the daughter of *Singhasū* (one of King *Klacwā*'s sons) and the queen of King (*Tarukplyi*), wish to abandon (this) body oppressed by countless miseries—the misery of birth, old age and death, the misery of living with those one does not love and of separation from those one loves, the misery of wanting a thing and not getting it. I want the bliss of *Nirvana* which is the end of all miseries. For the fulfilment of this desire I relinquish gold, silver and other treasures which are dear and precious to me and build a monastery for the monks—the pupils of the Lord, pure in piety and ever seeking the three graces of self-restraint, self-possession and wisdom. In order that these monks be well provided, I offer (all my) fields, gardens and slaves, excepting none. May the merit of our meritorious deed go (first) to the king, ruler of us all and lord of the land and water. By virtue of this act of merit may he live long, seeking the prosperity and happiness of all those who live in the realm and upholding this foundation. May the queens also, and all the ladies-in-waiting share it. May they look at one another with eyes of love, without one speak of anger or cloying. Starting with the present reigning king, the future kings, the princes, the ministers, may all of them also share the merit. May they uphold this foundation. May all beings beginning with King *Yama* also share it. May those who desire worldly prosperity get it. May those who prefer to do good deeds, do them. For myself I pray that I may never be covetous, insatiate, wrathful, bullying, ignorant, stupid, mean, uncharitable, faithless, frivolous, forgetful, nor ungrateful. But I would cross *Samsāra* full of these good graces—modest in my wants, easily satisfied, mild of temper, pitiful, wise, conscious of causes, generous, large-handed, faithful, earnest, unforgetful and considerate; and may I win deliverance in the very presence of the Lord *Maitreya*.

Whether they derived the *Sāsanā* from either the *Mon* or the *Pyy* or from both, the old Burmans knew well that *India* was the birth place of the Religion that they had adopted. King *Thiluij Mai* (1084-1113) sent men, money and material to repair the holy temple at *Bodh Gaya*.¹ Probably, the pilgrims from *Burma* frequented the places in *India* associated with the life of *Buddha*. The text and translation of an inscription dated A.D.1298 will illustrate how much Burmans appreciated *India* as the home of the *Buddha* and his Religion.

|| || purhā skhiñ sāsanā 218 lwan liy pri so akhā nhusik Cariputip klwan kuiw acuiw si ra so Siridhammasoka mañ so mañkri ceti hyat soñ 4 thoñ athai nhusik chwam̄ tau phun phiy rā pāyāsa i than kuw akhā liy mlai pyak ruy plan so Skhiñ Pañsakū kri ta yok thuiw priy to khyak pyak khay ra kā Satuiw mañ plu e' thuiw pri ta khyak pyak khay tum̄ rakā Chañ Phlu Skhiñ tryā mañkri mimi kuw cā chiriyā Siridhammarājākuru kuiw ciy tau mu lat so akhā nhusik pā lat so tape, sā Siri Kassapa sañ lup am̄ so uccā hi lyak mā lup rā tat rakā Wanawāsi Skhiñ thera kuiw chwam̄ khām̄ ciy rakā Putasin mañ hu e' lup ciy (m)u Skhiñ Nai kuiw mlat kri the kuiw akhwāñ mu rakā Sakarac 657 khu Plasuiw l-chan 10 ryak 6 niy plu tum̄ e' Sakarac 660 Tanchoñmhun l-chan 8 ryak Tanhañkanū ni lhā ce so tam̄khwan kulkā lhyan pucaw e' sā sami hu mhat ruy surai 2 yok rhuy pan huy pan khwak puchuiw

1. The Shwesandaw (3) inscription. *Ep.Birm.*, I, ii, pp. 153-68

chway so patañsa le pucaw e' akhā khapsim̄ lhyāñ sañput wat ma prat'āñ cim̄ so
kroñ 'mliy kywan nwā tuiw kuiw le way ruy lhu khay i nā mu so koñmu kā nippān
paecañ athok apañ phlac khyāñ sate ||| Myattañ purhā skhiñ lak thak lhyāñ rahanta
chu luiw sate!

After the lapse of 218 years of the Religion (i.e. in 326 B.C.) the great king named *Siridhammasoka* (Asoka), who was the ruler of *Jambudipa* island (built) 84000 *ceti* among which one was on the spot where Buddha ate [the milk rice? given him by *Sujātā* immediately before his enlightenment]. Due to the march of time, it became dilapidated. One Lord *Pamsukulika* the Great repaired it. When it again became ruinous king *Satuiw* made (repairs). When again it was dilapidated, the great just king *Chāñ Phlu Skhiñ* sent his teacher *Siridhammarājākuru* (to effect repairs) on his behalf. Because *Siri Kassapa* the disciple who accompanied (*Siridhammarājākuru*), though he had the treasures (or funds) would not do it, *Wanawāsi Thera* had to beg alms (seek permission from) King *Putasin* (who) said "(You may) do it" to the reverend *thera* through Lord *Nai*. On Friday, 16 December 1295 (they) did it (i.e. started repairs). On Sunday, 13 October 1298 (when the repairs were accomplished) many flags and streamers were offered for dedication. One thousand almsfood, (and) one thousand oil lamps were offered several times. Two children treated as (one's) own off-spring, a wish-tree for hanging gold flowers, silver flowers, trays and lein cloths were also offered. That there may be almsfood at all times, land, slaves and cows were bought and dedicated. May this meritorious deed be an attribute for attaining Nirvana in the form of an arahant when Maitreya becomes the Buddha.

From what we have seen it is evident that the old Burmans were conversant with Buddhism even before *Aniruddha*'s conquest of Lower Burma. The Pyu of *Śrīkṣetra* or the Mon of *Kyaukse* or both may have been their teachers. Whatever the chroniclers may have said the Buddhism introduced from Lower Burma was by no means pure. Buddhism practised in Pagan was a mixture of Naga worship, Vaisnava Hinduism and Buddhism. The people not only believed deeply in the Religion but practised it according to their own lights. They believed then, as at present that the Religion shall last for five millenium and that they were to support it to their utmost capacity, hence a great deal of dedications to the Religion. Allied with this belief was one which said that the gaining of merit by giving charity was the sure road to Nirvana. In conclusion they knew that India was the birthplace of Buddha and the Religion and therefore those who could afford to, made religious establishments there or repaired dilapidated ones.

1. PI.299. See also Taw Sein Ko: *Burmese Sketches* I (1913) pp.90-3

CHAPTER V

PURHĀ

The word purhā means the Buddha himself or a pagoda where relics are enshrined. But a king is also addressed as purhā and his queen called by that name with a mi or ami prefix denoting female as mi-purhā and ami-purhā. Thus it became a title for all exalted persons. But to differentiate between the ecclesiastical and temporal lords, some scribes of old Pagan added descriptive phrases to purhā, e.g. mlat cwā so purhāl—the most exalted purhā—when they wanted to signify the Buddha and purhā yhan²—the purhā who is living—to denote the then reigning king. The king is also mentioned as purhālon³—the Bodhisattva.

Dr C. O. Blagden thought that the word purhā was connected with yara. He says:

Purhā, now written (bhurā:) but pronounced (phaya) and sometimes still (phra). This is the well-known Burmese expression applied to exalted personages; the Buddha is so called; the king was addressed with this word during the Burmese regime; the monks are still so styled when spoken to; nowadays, it is even used as epithet when addressing Government officials of a certain standing. The temples, pagodas and statues of the Buddha are also called (phaya). The form purhā as found in the present inscription, appears to be the oldest; it is found subsequently written Purhā, bhurhā, phurhā, phurā, and finally bhurāh. But this word is not, as might on the face of it be thought, Burmese in its origin; it is found, under very slightly different forms, all over Indo-China, and even in Java. Opinions still differ as to its derivation; some eminent authorities would derive it from vara, a Sanskrit and Pali word meaning "excellent noble, exalted"; this is the derivation generally accepted. Some years ago, Mr. Taw Sein Ko (Burmese Sketches, I, 1913, p.30) suggested a derivation from the Chinese Fu-ya (now pronounced Fo-ye). The form Fo-ya does not explain the r in the second syllable of the Burmese word; for there can be but little doubt, if at all, that this letter r, though now it is pronounced y, was sounded according to its original value in old Burmese, as a comparison with the languages most closely related to it—Tibetan, Lolo, Maru, etc.—abundantly shows; the full value of r is still retained in Arakanese, which is but Burmese of an archaic type. The form vara does not seem to explain the Burmese medial vowel u in purhā; but this vowel has been frequently developed in the first syllable of dissyllabic words when that syllable begins with a labial, but is now practically never pronounced; examples are numerous in Burmese. All evidence tends to show that the Sanskrit word vara is the original of this expression, found under several forms as polai, phola, poula, purahā, phurā, pharā, phrā, phrayā, prah, prah, varah, etc. This seems to be settled by the Phimanakas Inscription, where the old Khmer

1. PI.18⁵, PI.28a¹, PI.28b¹, PI.51¹, PI.84⁴, PI.130⁵, PI.308¹, etc

2. PI.113², PI.1151⁵, PI.141a¹⁵, PI.174¹⁴, PI.194¹

3. PI.36³, PI.902^{3, 6}, PI.115⁵, PI.1332⁸, PI.143a^{9, 12, 14, 15, 16}, PI.145^{11, 12}, PI.249²⁶, PI.282²

text has prah, Igyara, the modern Cambodian being prah Eisor, and prah Mahābodhi = prah Mahābodhi.¹

If vara is the root word for all similar words used all over South East Asia, the Mon word is an exception to it. In Old Mon "kyek"² means any worshipful person or object as well as "a statue of Buddha."

As we have said in Old Burmese the word purhā means any worshipful person or object. The Lord Buddha was mlat cwā so purhā—the most exalted lord—the Buddha icons were purhā chañpu³—the form of the Lord, purhā ryap⁴—the standing Buddha, purhā thaway⁵—the sitting Buddha, purhā tanthim⁶—the recumbent Buddha, purhā niyrapan⁷—the dead Buddha, ryapjuin purhā⁸—images made to the donor's height, and kuw ryap tuin purhā⁹—image made to the donor's measurements. Professor G.H. Luce wishes to connect chañpu or achañpu with the Pyu word cha:bo of the Rājakumār inscription where

//dhuu þá: Būdha u cha: bo bradima tha tū þñ se kya //¹⁰

is translated as "caused this golden image in the likeness of the Buddha to be made." The modern Burmese word for an icon is chañtu which literally means an imitation of an appearance and we do not know why pu of chañpu is replaced by tu and becomes chañtu to-day. In old Burmese the word chañpu is used for likeness made of stone or wood and also for paintings of Buddha that adorn the walls of hollow pagodas. As many as 14,619 pictures of the Buddha were painted within seventeen days (7 March to 24 March 1237)¹¹. In another case 4000 pictures or chañpu of the Buddha were painted on the four walls of a hollow pagoda built by Kāngapikram and his wife on 10 December 1253¹². Naturally Gotama Buddha would be painted or sculptured, but sometimes other Buddhas—the predecessors of Gotama, were also included in the paintings or their images would be found among the image of Gotama enshrined in a pagoda. For example, an inscription¹³ dated A.D.1274 mentions

1. *Ep. Birm.* I, i, pp. 26-7. See also *BEFEO*, XVIII, ix, pp.9-12; Auguste Pavie: *Mission Pavie Indo-Chine 1879-1895, Études Diverses II, Recherches sur l'Historie du Cambodge du Laos et du Siam* (Paris, 1898), p.228, n.2 and p.237, n.1; and Coedès: *Recueil des Inscriptions du Siam I, Inscriptions de Sukhodaya* (Bangkok, 1924) pp.79-90
2. *Ep. Birm.* I, i, p.57. See also Hillday: *A Mon-English Dictionary*, p.64, when old Mon "kyek" appears as "kyait" (ကျိုး) meaning "any object of worship, a god; also used in addressing a superior, lord."
3. PI.73¹⁵, PI.80¹⁵, PI.192¹², PI.234⁸, PI.238⁹, PI.248¹⁷, PI.24922,²³ and PI.269⁶
4. PI.66²¹, PI.97¹⁶, PI.104⁸, PI.130⁵, PI.132b⁹, PI.209⁴, PI.213¹⁴, PI.234⁹, PI.235b⁵, PI.385a⁴ and PI.39321,²³
5. PI.130⁵, PI.153³, PI.213¹⁴, PI.229¹⁸, PI.234⁹ and PI.422b⁵. Unless otherwise stated purhā thaway—sitting Buddha—is always a cross-legged Buddha because the Buddha "sitting Europeanwise" is very rare in Burma.
6. PI.61⁷ and PI.132b⁷
7. PI.270⁷, 13,¹⁴
8. PI.130^{5,4}, PI.209⁴, PI.253a⁶
9. PI.209⁴, PI.229¹⁷, PI.253a⁶
10. *Ep. Birm.* I, i, p.62; Text A¹⁰, where Cha: is taken as likeness, having a close similarity to old Burmese achdn
11. PI.105a⁶⁻⁸
12. PI.248¹⁶⁻¹⁸
13. PI.24921,³

that images of Kakusankha, Konāgimana, Kassapa, Gotama and Maitreya were made. In a relic chamber of a pagoda near the Htilominlo at Pagan unearthed in 1928, was found an image of the Buddha Vessabhu with a two line Pali inscription (in the same script as the Old Burmese) round the pedestal. It reads:

Yo Vessabhu saridharo ca anantabuddhi sattuttamo dasa balo...dhammo kāyo lokekacakkhu asamo sugato anejo vandāmitam̄ saridharam̄ atulam̄ munindam̄...¹

The (Buddha) Vessabhu, the Glorious, of Infinite Wisdom, the Greatest among beings...the One Spiritual Eye in the world, the Incomparable, the Blessed One, the Desireless; Him I rever, the Glorious, the Admirable, the Chief of Sages.

The painted Buddhas are more or less alike and usually the only way of differentiating the one from the other is by the different backgrounds in the form of Bodhi as each Buddha had his own particular Bodhi under which he attained enlightenment. The name of the Buddha and his Bodhi would be written below the painting.² Stories of the anterior births of Gotama Buddha known to the old Burmans sometimes as jat nā ryā³—500 birth stories, and sometimes as jat 550⁴—550 birth stories, are also popular themes for painting on the walls of hollow-pagodas. Actually there are only 547 stories,⁵ i.e. according to the Pāli texts which are still used in Burma and there are numerous Burmese translations of these stories. But as mentioned above, the old Burmans rounded up this figure 547 to 500 or 550 and even to-day, the Burmans refer to these stories as nā rāñā: chay—five hundred and fifty. Strangely enough the Jātaka plaques at West Petleik pagoda, the construction of which goes back to the early part of the Pagan dynasty, give 550 stories. The additional three are (1) Velāma jātaka, (2) Mahāgovinda jātaka and (3) Sumedhapāṇḍita jātaka.⁶ There are six other pagodas belonging to this period which have these jātaka plaques and wherever the number can be ascertained, the number is 547. The six pagodas are:

1. The East Petleik Pagoda (by Aniruddha)
2. The Shwesandaw Pagoda (by Aniruddha)
3. The Shwezigon Pagoda (by Thilujñman)
4. The Ananda Pagoda (by Thilujñman)
5. The Dhammayazika Pagoda (by Cañsū II)
6. The Mingalazedi (by Tarukpily)

The Ananda Pagoda has nearly 1500 jātaka plaques⁷ and the explanations to these are all in old Mon⁸. The plaques are in two categories. Firstly, each plaque is assigned to

1 ASI, 1928-9, pp.110-11, Plate LII (d)

2 JBR, XXX, i, pp. 314-21, n.67, where Professor G.H. Luce gives the full list of 28 Buddhas and their respective trees as found in the fresco-writings (in both old Mon and old Burmese) of some pagodas at Pagan. See Appendix II

3 PI. 73¹⁵

4 PI. 105 a⁷

5 Fausboll's edition of The Jātakas (7 vols) (Trübner & Co., London, 1877-97) has also 547 stories.

6 Duroiselle: "Pictorial Representations of Jātakas in Burma"; ASI, 1912-13, pp.87-119

7 Ibid., p.91, n.1

8 These 389 plaques are edited and published: Ep. Birm. II, i & ii

represent one *jātaka* and secondly, 389 plaques on the last ten anterior lives of *Gotama* Buddha!. These seem to be the most popular subjects for plaques or painting. At the Ananda Pagoda the order of arrangement for these ten stories varies slightly from the Sinhalese order² in the following manner.

Ananda	Sinhalese
1. <i>Mūgapakkha</i>	Ditto
2. <i>Mahājanaka</i>	Ditto
3. <i>Sāma</i>	Ditto
4. <i>Nimi</i>	Ditto
5. <i>Mahā-Ummagga</i>	<i>Khanḍahāla</i>
6. <i>Khanḍahāla</i>	<i>Bhūridatta</i>
7. <i>Bhūridatta</i>	<i>Mahānāradakassapa</i>
8. <i>Mahānāradakassapa</i>	<i>Vidhura</i>
9. <i>Vidhura</i>	<i>Mahā-Ummagga</i>
10. <i>Vessantara</i>	Ditto

But it agrees with the modern Burmese arrangement except that in the latter *Bhūridatta* *jātaka* comes before *Khanḍahāla* *jātaka*³.

The Wetkyi-in Gubyaukgyi Pagoda, Pagan, has many of these tales painted on its walls⁴. C. Duroiselle says⁵:

The interest attaching to this pagoda does not lie in any peculiarity of its architectural style, but in the fine frescoes painted on the interior walls depicting scenes from the *jātakas*... [In these pictures] the ground is chocolate; the hair is painted black; the dress of the personages, as well as the trees, black and white; and the nude parts of the body are coloured in burnt sienna.⁶

The life history of Gotama especially the part when he attained enlightenment is also very popular. The Ananda Pagoda has eighty stone reliefs on this episode.⁷

1 See also Pl. 242²⁷

2 See Fausboll: *The Jākatas*, Vol. VI (1896) and *Ep. Birm.*, II, i, Introduction, p.v

3 In abbreviated form the order is *Te Ja Su Ne Ma Bhū Cari Nā Wi We* in which *Te* is for *Temi Jātī* or *Mūgapakkha*, *Ja* for *Mahājanaka*, *Su* for *Suvanna Sāma*, *Ne* for *Nemi jātī* or *Nimi*, *Ma* for *Maho jātī* or *Mahā-Ummagga*, *Bhū* for *Bhūridatta*, *Cari* for *Candakunārajātī* or *Khanḍahāla*, *Nā* for *Mahānāradakassapa*, *Wi* for *Vidhura* and *We* for *Vessantara*. Even to-day in Burma, it is believed that writing these ten abbreviated names by stylus on ones finger nails prevent all dangers and this sort of precaution is resorted to especially in times of epidemics like plague, cholera and smallpox.

4 Professor G.H. Luce in *JRS*, XXXII, i, 85 says that the paintings of the Gubyaukgyi at Wetkyi-in are 'the pride of the Burmese painter's art'.

5 ASI, 1912-13, p.93 and Pl. LX, figures 57, 58, 59

6 C. Duroiselle believes that originally there were 547 frescoes, half of which were on the northern wall and the remainder on the south. In 1899, Dr. Thomman, who worked in the interest of the Hamburg Ethnographical Museum, tried to take them away but was stopped. Thus, out of 547 frescoes only 210 remain. Each *Jātaka* measures 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ " by 6 $\frac{1}{2}$ " and the remaining portion of the paintings on the north wall measures 13'11" by 3'5" and on the south 6'11" by 3'5". They are in a very dilapidated condition.

7 Duroiselle: *The Ananda Temple at Pagan* (Archaeological Survey of India, Memoirs, No. 56), p. 11

In the niches of the Ananda are numerous Buddha icons. Roughly they fall into two types: one seated on a throne in Vyākhyāna mudrā—the act of preaching with the hands before the breast, and the other in the common Bhūmisparśa mudrā—earth touching attitude. It is of note that seven of the images have no ushnisha—the accretion on the head (see illustration), and many of them have normal fingers quite distinct from the modern images with fingers of the same length. In the middle of the temple stand four colossal images placed back to back and each facing the four cardinal points. The height of the pedestal is 8 feet and each image stands 31 feet high. Starting from the north these images represent respectively the four Buddhas viz. Kakusandha, Konāgamana, Kassapa and Gotama of which only two images, those on the north and south are considered to be original and contemporary with the foundation of the pagoda. They both have their hands raised to the breast in the dharma-cakra mudrā¹. The image on the western side i.e. of Gotama has two statues flanking its sides. These images have been identified by some authorities as those of Thiluñ Mañ and Mahāthera Arahant.

The king has the usual royal ornaments, viz. a crown, a necklace or breast-plate and anklets. His dress consists of a close-fitting jacket and a lower garment of which the folds are clearly discernible. Shin Arahant is distinguishable by his cleanshaven head and the lack of ornaments².

In the west porch there are also two Buddha-pāda—Buddha's foot-prints—each bearing the traditional 108 marks.³ The Lawkananda pagoda and the Shwezigon pagoda have also similar foot-prints dating back to our period.⁴ One inscription dated A.D. 1294 mentions a Buddha-pāda being painted with various colours.⁵

Professionals who made images of Buddha were called purhāsamā and they were paid either in cash or kind or sometimes both. In one instance a female slave was sold to pay the image-maker.⁶ The Sawhla-win inscription (1236)⁷ records that wages for the purhā samā were 30 teals of silver, one piece of black linen and one horse for making ten purhā ryap—standing Buddhas.

Sometimes the height or the height and weight of a standing Buddha equalled the height or the height and weight of the donor and such a one was called a ryaputinipurhā or the kuw ryap tuin purhā but this is not synonymous with "portrait-statues"⁸ of Khmer Cambodia where a royal personage was thus apotheosized. The following extract will show us that a standing Buddha was made equal in height to that of the king (?Klacwā) but it was not the portrait-statue of the king apotheosized as Buddha.

1 ASI, Memoir No. 56, Plate VII, figs. 1 & 2

2 Ibid, p.13

3 Commentaries like Anāgatavāmsa-Atthakathā, Samantabaddikā Atthakathā and Jinālankāraṭīkā have the full list.

4 PI.238¹⁹

5 PI.97⁵, 16, 21

6 For a full discussion see U Mya: "A Note on the Buddha's Foot-Prints in Burma", ASI, 1930-4, Part 2, pp.320-31

7 PI.283⁷

8 L.P. Briggs: The Ancient Khmer Empire, pp.229-30

//*Sakarac* 600 *pussa nhac* *Namkā la chan* 4 *ryak Krassupatiy niy skhiñ* *Ui Plañ Wa* *Sañ kuiw atuiv skhiñ* *Rājāsū piy taw mū so* *Toñ Ni* *Nā Chū kywan* 7.3 *yok sa kā mañ* *aryap tuiñ anok purhā ryap* 1 *chū skhiñ* *Ui Plañ Wa* *Sañ aryap tuiñ rhuy purhā* *ryap* 1 *chū rhuy purhā thiaway* 2 *chū i purhā* 4 *chū so kuiw lup klwañ ciy* *hu lhū sate*//

On 17 July 1238, seventy three slaves (from) *Nā Chū* of *Toñ Ni*, given by Lord *Rājāsū* to Lady *Ui Plañ Wa*. *Sañ* were dedicated to look after four images of the Buddha (namely) a standing Buddha on the west made to the height of the king, a gold standing Buddha made to the height of Lady *Ui Plañ Wa* *Sañ* and two gold sitting Buddhas.²

There are many instances of these *ryāptuiñ purhā* and *kuiw ryāp tuiñ purhā*. One *Nā Nuiw Sañ* in A.D. 1263 made *kuiw ryip tuiñ phurhā*—an image equal to his weight—and dedicated three slaves to look after the image when he and his beloved wife passed away.³ In A.D. 1270 two ladies of *Sacmati* (near Pagan) who called themselves *sukrway ma kri*—elder rich woman—and *sukrway mañai*—younger rich woman—made two images as tall as themselves and dedicated slaves to administer to them.⁴ The king's *mañi myā moi*—brother-in-law, *Nā Mryat Sañ* also made an image of his height and weight.⁵ In A.D. 1276 the wife of *Phin Sañ Jayabhin* dedicated slaves to an image made to her height.⁶ Nevertheless there is no indication whatever for considering these *ryāp tuiñ purhā* as “portrait statues”. They were just the images of Buddha except for the fact that they are of the donor's measurements. Perhaps the donor's ambition was the boon of Buddhahood.

To consider the Buddha as God would be absurd, but to some early Burmans he was something similar. Infinite faith in Him gave, it is believed, long life and happiness. One donor called *Jayyasiñ* spent 10,000 ticals of silver in A.D. 1197 in founding religious establishments leaving aside some treasures for repairs when necessary. Then he said:

//*mlat cwā so purhā skhiñ e* ānūphaw *nuik asak rhañ e*, *hū mū kā nā plu lā am sate* //*nā asa te mā rhañ mū kā* // *nā miyyā* //*skhiñ*// *Nā Koñ Rhañ Sañ Skhiñ Nā* (*Thwak*) *Sañ* //*Skhiñ Noñ Thoñ*// *i mhya so plu am so hui a*//⁷

If the most exalted Lord wills it I will live long and do the repairs (myself). If I do not live long, let my wife and (my) lords (of the monastery) *Nā Koñ Rhañ Sañ*, *Nā Thwak Sañ*, and *Noñ Thoñ* do the repairs.

Thus in A.D. 1190 a donor named *Sīighāsūra* dedicated musicians such as *cañsañ*—drummers, and *pantyā*—nautches, for the enjoyment of music.⁸ Old Burmans apparently thought the Buddha was a living deity. May be as a super celestial king because they endowed Him with all the earthly luxuries that a mighty potentiate has. Slaves dedicated to Him were of various professions. Such musicians as *pavāsañ*⁹—side drummers, *saro sañ*⁹—violinist,

1 PI.130¹⁻⁵

2 See also *JBRS*, XXVI, i, p.58

3 PI.209¹⁻⁵

4 PI.229¹⁷⁻¹⁸⁻¹⁹

5 PI.253⁴⁻⁶

6 PI.18⁵⁻⁹

7 PI.10a¹⁻⁶

8 PI.10a¹⁻⁶, PI.31¹, PI.103a²⁵, PI.138¹⁰ & PI.387a⁵

9 PI.387a⁵

ñāhā sañ¹—trumpeters, *candrā sañ²*—?dulcimer players, *sikrañ sañ³*—singers, and *kakhriy sañ⁴*—dancers, were also mentioned in the inscriptions of our period as slaves for the Buddha. The wife of *Kāñkasāñ* gave the services of such persons as *panpwal*—turners, *panpu*—sculptors, *pankhi*—painters, *puran*—masons, *cāriy*—secretaries, *rwāthiñ*—cowherds, *panthiñ* goldsmiths, *üyan sañ*—gardeners, and *kuhā sañ*—launderers, when she dedicated them to the Buddha in A.D. 1242. In the same year *Cuiw Mañ* gave to the Buddha slaves such as *sanryai sañ*—palanquin bearers, *kuhā sañ*—launderers, *thi sañ*—umbrella bearers, and *yan sañ*—weavers⁵. In A.D. 1243, *Samanta Kumāthāñ*, the uncle of King *Uccanā* (?1249-56) dedicated an elephant called *Na Khyāt Phuy* to the Buddha and his disciples⁶. Such slaves as *muchit rip⁸*—barbers, *hañ sañ thamañ sañ amay sañ⁹*—cooks, and *kwam sañ¹⁰*—servers of betel, were also dedicated to the Buddha. The following extract from an inscription (A.D.1241) recording the offerings of *Cāñv*, the queen of *Narasiñgha-Uccanā* (?1231-5) is a very good example of how the Buddha is served with articles of daily use.

||parikkhārā|| ok purhā sañkan tāw tuyaiñ 1 ||tankhyat|| athak purhā yañkan tāw tankyat riy 1 ||rhuy salawan 1|| imrā tāw nak pūcañ tamñtuñ 1 ||khamñ tāñ mwāñ 1|| khan nhī üñ acurñ|| kwamñ khyap 1 kriy chimñ tuñ kriy pratuiw, ||kriy krā kri 1|| kholñ lonñ chway so chañ krā 1 ||rhuy sapit nuy sapit kriy pway 2 khūfñ lañpan 2 khlap khwak 5 up ||caloñ kri 1|| naroñcarā 8 khlop noñnañ 9 khlap ||khwak khwañ suni chū khyū 3 chū|| ... ||parikkhārā kā rhuy salawan kri myak khat||| pratuiw 1 ||kriy krā|| khwak khriy lañpan nhac khlap|| khwak 5 up || caloñ||¹¹

Professor Pe Maung Tin's remark and translation of this extract is reproduced below.

The anthropomorphism of Buddha-worship is well brought out in L.254 (Pl.138). The requisite things are for lower Buddha his wearing apparel 1 outer robe, 1 inner garment (*Tankyat*); for the upper Buddha his wearing apparel 1 embroidered inner garment, 1 gold couch, 1 apartment for his dwelling-place, 1 high cot complete with bed-covers and pillows, 1 betel box, copper oil lampstands, copper spittoons, 1 big copper kettle, 1 elephant-lotus from which the bell is hung, golden bowls, silver bowls, 2 pestles, 2 trays, 5 covered dishes, 1 big cooking pot-lid, 8 pieces of *narañcarā*, 9 of gongs, 3 cymbals, 3 castanets ... The requisite things are 1 big gold couch studded with gems, spittoon, copper kettle, 2 trays with cup-legs, 5 covered dishes, cooking pot-lid. It will be noticed that the lower Buddha is not wearing his royal outer robe (the *duyaiñ*) as he is represented as being 'at home', just as a king with his robe off might recline on the couch in his state-room after supper, chewing his betel as he listens to the strains of music.¹²

1 PI.396b¹⁸

2 PI.85⁹

3 PI.31⁸, PI.421b⁴

4 PI.151², PI.31⁴, PI.102⁵, PI.391⁴

5 PI.1444-16

6 PI.148b⁵⁻¹⁰

7 PI.1522⁴

8 PI.395⁵⁰

9 & 10 PI.39150-54

11 PI. 138¹⁵⁻¹⁷, 26-1

12 *JBRS*, XXVI, i, p.61

Most donors prayed for nirvana with no specifications. In some inscriptions we find that the donors prayed for Buddhahood. It is interesting because it is exceptional. Only the most ambitious reached for nirvana as the Buddhas. A king (most probably of the earlier half of the Pagan dynasty) prayed for Buddhahood.

Siri Tribhuwanādityawaradhamma disampatiakāsi buddhapaṭimamimani sañibodhi pattiyaṭi Sri Tribhuwanādityawaradhammarājā (dānapati)

Sri Tribhuwanāditya, the noble and righteous Lord of the Regions, made this image of the Buddha, for the attainment of omniscience. *Sri Tribhuwanādityawaradhammarājā* (the Donor).

The Great Shwezigon inscription² mentions that king *Sri Tribhuwanādityadhammarāja (Thiluin Mai)* also prayed for omniscience. His successor King *Cañsū* I after the completion of Shwegugyi pagoda prayed thus:

In strong desire for Buddhahood, he cried aloud this aspiration: "As this great Being, having fulfilled the ten Perfections and attained perfect knowledge, has released beings from bondage, so also would I hereafter, fulfilling the ten Perfections and having attained perfect knowledge, release beings from bondage!"³

In the Khemawara pagoda inscription, it is recorded that King *Nātoñmyā* made a dedication with the desire to attain Buddhahood. It says:

||Sakarac 569 khu Jitasā...sañiwacchir nhac Tankhu l-chan 1 ryak 5 niy ā Sri Tribhwanādityāpawaradhammarājā mañ so Nātoñmyā mankrī sañ sabbañu phurhā chu kuiw kuiw khyāñ ruy||

On 18 March 1208, the great king *Nātoñmyā* called *Sri Tribhwanādityāpawaradhammarājā*, desiring the boon of omniscience—Buddhahood, (made the following dedications).

Actually all the kings of the Pagan dynasty prayed for Buddhahood and *purhāloñ*⁵—the future "purhā" or *purhā rhañ taw*⁶—the living "purhā", in the inscriptions of this period invariably means the then reigning king.

Apart from the kings some great ministers and learned scholars too asked for the Buddhahood in their prayers. A few extracts given below regarding this particular kind of prayer will give us a good picture of what they felt about Buddhahood. In A.D.1190, *Siñghasū* (*Nātoñmyā*'s minister) prayed thus:

*sañssārā chuiw nray khappāy soh kun rā phlac so sabbañu mañ so || purhā aphlac kuiw kuiw soh kroñ,*⁷

1 PI.568b

2 *Ep.Birm.*, I, ii, 1D¹⁵⁻¹⁷, pp.102 and 121

3 PI.1 stanzas 30-2; *BBHC*, I, i, 19

4 PI.311-5

5 PI.36⁵, PI.902^{5, 6}, PI.115^{5, 5}, PI.133²⁹, etc.

6 PI.113², PI.115¹⁵, PI.141a¹⁵, PI.174¹⁴, PI.194¹, etc.

7 PI.10a2-4

(I made this dedication) because I want sataññu which is also called Buddhahood —the end of all miseries in the chain of rebirths.

Knowing that such a reward will be fulfilled only in a very remote future, he took special care to ask for all good things in the intermediate lives before he attained Buddhahood. Perhaps his love of music also compelled him to ask as follows:

//purhā ma phraç so krā // pañcaṅgatūr mañ so cañ ñhyāñ phlañ nhuiw tha tha so cañcim lūiñ ra kā // cañ kri pantyā plu so // cañsañ kā//1

Meantime, before I become the Buddha, I want the fortune of being excited by the five kinds of musical instruments such as drums and trumpets. Therefore I dedicate the following players on big drums and ?nautches. The drummers are...

As one who prays for Buddhahood should receive the prophecy of the Buddhas about his future enlightenment² he is very anxious to meet Maitreya the next Buddha and to receive a prophecy from his very lips. In A.D. 1182 one donor prayed to this effect.

/ñā kā Mityā purhā shhiñ thani byadissa ra r(u)iy sattwā khapsimi so kūw sansarā chuiw ñray mha kāy pi tat so phlañ lūiñ so teñ//3

May I receive from Maitreya the prophecy (of my future Buddhahood) and become the Buddha so that I may be able to redeem all beings from the miseries of samsāra.

An inscription of A.D. 1198 gives us a rough idea of the means to attain Buddhahood. He said:

/iy mhyā so koñmu akluw phlañ // stan suni so akluw phlañ // byat-tā mū so aklaw phlañ // alhū piy so akluw phlañ // purhā chū ñā rā lūiñ so teñ//4

For the benefit of this amount of merit (namely) the benefit for observing the religious precepts, the benefit for (?meditating on kindness and love) and the benefit for giving away ones property in charity, may I receive the reward of Buddhahood.

The ten pāramī⁵ must be fulfilled in order to reach the highest form of enlightenment.

1. Pl. 10a¹⁴⁻¹⁷ See also *JBRSS*, XXVI, iii, 135

2. *Mahāvārīsa* (1950 Reprint) pp. 1-2; Pl. 8a⁶, Pl. 283²⁴, *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, Ayethama Hill inscription (now at the Rangoon University Library) V⁵⁰

3. Pl. 8a⁵⁻⁸

4. Pl. 21 17-19

5. Queen Saw in an inscription dated A.D. 1291 (Pl. 273⁵⁴) mentioned that there are 10 pāramī for those who aspire for Buddhahood. They are:

1. *Dā pāramī* (the perfection of charity)
2. *Sīlapāramī* (the perfection of behaviour)
3. *Nekhammapāramī* (the perfection of renunciation)
4. *Paññapāramī* (the perfection of wisdom)
5. *Viryapāramī* (the perfection of effort)
6. *Khantipāramī* (the perfection of patience)
7. *Sacca pāramī* (the perfection of truth)
8. *Adhitthāapāramī* (the perfection of resolution)
9. *Metapāramī* (the perfection of love)
10. *Upakkhāpāramī* (the perfection of equanimity)

But according to W. Geiger (*Mahāvārīsa*, p. 2, n. 1) this idea of 10 pāramī is late as they are not mentioned in the four *Nikāya*. See also Pl. 3902, Pl. 4132

ment, i.e. Buddhahood. What is the extent of time required to fulfil there *pāramī*? *Jayasethe* (?son-in-law of King *Cañsū* II) said that it would require

liy saṅghey amlat kambhā tac sin¹ — 4 asaṅkheyya plus 100,000 kappa.

Kappa means the life of the earth and *asaṅkheyya*² means incalculable.

Medieval Burmans have coined a beautiful phrase of their own for the Pali word *sabbaññutāññāna* or omniscience as *si cap mrañ nham*—"know wide, see deep"³. Thus the Buddha knows everything and to obtain such a state of perfect knowledge certainly would require a very long time of practice and piety. *Anantasūra*, the Commander-in-chief of King *Nātonomyā* gave the reason of his dedication as:

nā le si cap mrañ nham, so sabbaññutāññāna purhā chu kuiw khyāñ so kroñ⁴

Because I also desire the boon of Buddhahood or *sabbaññutāññāna* which is to know wide and see deep.

The famous monk *Mahākassapa* whom we believe to be the head of the *Araññavāsi*—forest dwelling sect, used a similar phrase when he prayed for omniscience. He said:

iy nā mū so koñmhu akluiw phlañ kā si cap mrañ cap so sabbaññutāññāna purhā chu kuiw lhyāñ luiw sate //5

For the benefit of this merit (that) I made, may I get the boon of Buddhahood—*sabbaññutāññāna* which is to know wide and see wide.

Lady *Caw*, the aunt of King *Tarukpliy* also used the same phrase when she asked for Buddhahood.

/Sakarac 622 khu Kratuik samwarechā nhac Namiyun l-chut 3 ryak Caniy niy phurhā rhāñ tāw ari Caw i lu twāñ nhuik atuñ ma sī satdhā lā rhuy plu so koñmhu akluiw kā riy mluy khapsim so áskhiñ phlac so mañkri ca so mañni mañsa mañsamī mañhama khapsim amiphurhā ca so moñma khapsim amattyā ca so puilpā khapsim // ok Awiciy ca so athak phwak tuñ oñ atuñ cakkrawalā ca so atuñ ma sī so cakkrawalā nhuik niy so lū nat sattawā khapsim ákrwan may saphlañ sañsarā chanñray mha thwak mlok kha ruy chanñray may so nirrabban prañ suiw rok ciy khlyāñ so kroñ // nā le si cap mrañ nham so sabbaññutāññāna phurhā chu kuiw luiw so kroñ //6

1. Pl. 154-6 (A.D. 1197) See also Pl. 3902, Pl. 4132

2. "The neuter *Asaṅkheyya* is the highest of the numerals, and is equal to 10,000,000²⁰ or 1 followed by 140 cipher." R.C. Childers: *A Dictionary of the Pali Language* (1875) p. 59

3. *JBRS*, XXII, iii, p. 126 (Know thorough, see extensive)

4. Pl. 73⁵⁻⁶ (A.D. 1223)

5. Pl. 140b²²⁻⁵ (A.D. 1242)

6. Pl. 194¹⁻⁸

On Saturday 28 May 1260, (Lady) *Caw*, the aunt of the reigning king (*Tarukpliy*) made dedications (as she was) in this life greatly moved by faith (in the Religion). As for the benefits of this meritorious deed, may all (the Royalty) starting with the Great King, who is the lord of all water and land, all the King's brothers, all the King's sons, all the King's daughters and all the King's sisters, all the ladies-in-waiting starting with the queens, all the retinues starting with the ministers, all beings including mankind and *deva* living in this universe between *Avici* below and zenith above and in all other universes without number, be freed from the miseries of rebirth and reach the city of *Nirvana* where there is no misery. I also want omniscience, to know wide and see deep! i.e. the boon of Buddhahood.

Minister *Jeyapikrama* gave another interpretation of Buddhahood. He said:

...ram mak 1500 mha kan ruy saccā tryā 4 pā pwañ so sabbañutāñan prañā ra ruy purhā lhyan phlac luiw sate//2

May I become a Buddha endowed with the wisdom of *sabbañutāñāna* when the Law of Four Truths blossomed (within me) and I am free from the 1500 desires.

In A.D. 1276, Princess *Acaw* after obtaining the King's permission, built a monastery for *Anantapañā* on a site to the east of *Āmanā* (Minnanthu) and dedicated 1366 *pay* of land and 149 slaves to the above religious establishment that she had founded. Then she explains the reason for her donation:

//iy myha lok so uccā kuiw kā nā ma khyac ruy lhū sa kā ma hut // iy uccā kuiw khyac so thak-kā purhā aphlac kuiw khyac mlat cārā rakā nā lhū sate//3
I dedicate so much property not that I do not love it but that I love Buddhahood more.

In A.D. 1291 another *Caw*, this time a queen of *Tarukpliy* (probably the famous Queen *Saw* of the chronicles)⁴ prayed for Buddhahood.

/ achum cwan so kuiw aphlac nhuik-kā// Mittaryā purhā skhin tāñ tay khrāñ suiw lhyan tāñtay lyak // lū nat khapi so kuiw // sansarā chuiw niray mha kay piy lyak // niyrapan prañ kri suiw lhyan choñ piy kun lyak // sabbañuta-ñan purhā chū lhyan plāñ-cum khyāñ e, //5

In my last life I want sublimity of the same nature as the sublimity of the Lord *Maitreya* and after helping all the men and *deva* out of the miseries of *samsarā*

1. This phrase *si cap mrañ nham* for omniscience has lost its original meaning with the passage of time and in its new form *si mrañ nham*, *cap* it only means resourcefulness.

2. Pl. 17527-8

3. Pl. 344b12-14

4. *JBRSS XXXII*, i, p.81: "...the great Queen *Saw* (*Co*) of the chronicles is a medley of at least two Saws of history. Nor did she start as a farmer's daughter, with the lowly if useful function of scratching the king's back when he was itchy: she was, on the contrary, the first lady of the land, sister of the late queen of royal birth on her mother's side, of high ministerial rank on her father's."

5. Pl. 27512-15

10. U.P. 0.144-1009.23.8-78

and taking all of them to the grand city of *Nirvana*, (I myself want) the fulfilment of my boon for omniscience—Buddhahood.

As mentioned above, only the very ambitious prayed for omniscience. There is an extraordinary case of a man and his wife praying for Buddhahood.¹ A *sukrway*—wealthy man, whose name is not legible after building eight alms houses and planting some banyan trees (*ficus indica*) made a dedication of one hundred ticals of silver and ten slaves and prayed thus:

nā myā nāñ nā kā phurhā chū ma lway ra luiw state²

May I and my wife without fail get the boon of Buddhahood.

This is very unusual, because no such express wish for both man and wife is mentioned in any other known inscriptions. Owing to the fact that the Buddha is always a male, it was thought proper for ambitious women to pray first for manhood in the coming existences and Buddhahood later. We have mentioned above that Lady *Caw*, the aunt of *Tarukpily* prayed for Buddhahood but here is an extract in which the same lady prayed for manhood when she made a dedication in A.D. 1265 at the *Kutha* pagoda, north of the *Dhammayazika*, Pagan:

lū nat sattwā tricchan ma krwāñ khapañ // sañsarā chuiw nray mha // thwak mlok kha ruy // chuiw nray may so niyaban siuw rok ciy luiw so nāñ // nāñ le iy miyama aphlac mha lwat kha ruy // lū rwā nat rwā kyuñ lañ so khā stan, prañā saccā saddhā plāñ curi cwa so yok-yā phlac ruy //

In order that man, deva and all beings without excepting the animals may be freed from the miseries of rebirth and may attain *nirvana* where there is no misery and that I also may be freed from this womanhood and in all my wanderings (i.e. future existences) in the village of men and the village of deva, I may be a man who is endowed with piety, wisdom, truth and believe (in the Religion of Buddha)...

The last point in this prayer is important. In her next existence, she wants to be a man believing in the Religion of the Buddha because it is possible that she may be born as an unbelieving man. Only when manhood had been attained would the donor pray for Buddhahood.

In none of the inscriptions of our period we find the mention of the *Anekajā*⁴ ceremony which is very important nowadays. Modern Burmans when they have completed a pagoda or an image use the *Anekajā* without which the pagoda is just a pile of bricks and the image is just another statue none of which are considered worshipful. They must be properly consecrated. The ceremony requires the assembly of men and monks in which the monks

1. See *JBRS* XXVI, ii, ip. 132

2. PI. 213^{1,5} (A.D. 1260)

3. PI. 249^{6,9}

4. See *Sackhyatōñ U Tiloka: Bhurāñ Anekajā Tañ*, (*Pāli and Nissara*). Rangoon Kawmyakhman Press, (1926) and also U Ketu: *Anekajā Tikā* Rangoon Zabumeikshwe Press, (1932). The earliest mention of *anekajā* was perhaps made in 1480. See the *Kalyāñi* inscription, *Ep. Birm.*, III, ii, M⁵², p. 281

recite a formula beginning with *Aneka jāti sanisārami* which is supposed to be the very first words uttered by *Gotama Buddha* on attaining enlightenment. The formula is:

anekajātisamisārami sandhāvissam anibbisam
 gahakāram gavesanto dukkhā jāti punappunani
 gahakāraka diṭṭhosī puna geham na kāhasi
 sabbā te phāsukā bhaggā gahakūṭam visanākhitam
 visanākhāragatam cittam taṇhāqam khayam ajjhagā

This occurs in the *Dhammapada* (153, 154) and a rough translation of it is:

Through worldly round of many births
 I ran my course unceasingly,
 Seeking the maker of the house:
 Painful is birth again and again.
 House-builder! I behold thee now,
 Again a house thou shalt not build;
 All thy rafters are broken now,
 The ridge-pole also is destroyed;
 The end of cravings has attained.¹

Perhaps the people of Pagan thought that such a ceremony was not necessary at the end of building pagodas, etc.

The evidence cited above shows that the people of Burma in the 12th and 13th centuries A.D. understood the doctrines of Buddha very well. They believed in the chain of rebirths, the miseries of life and they endeavoured for the final attainment of *nirvana*. It seems that the practice of charity was the most popular means of achieving merit. So great was the number of *pay* of land dedicated to the Religion that King *Klacwa* was forced to confiscate them all, which ultimately led to the appointment of a royal commission. As Buddhists they tolerated the existence of other religions. It is worthy of note that some considered the Buddha as God or some form of living deity and dedicated slaves of all professions and articles of everyday use so that the Buddha may enjoy them. The average Burman would say that he takes refuge in the Three Gems—*Purhā*—the Lord, *Tryā*—the Law, and *Saṅghā*—the Order; but *Purhā* to him was the most important of all.

1. E.J. Thomas: *The Life of Buddha as Legend and History*, p. 75

CHAPTER VI

TRYĀ

Tryā in its broadest sense means the law and it is not necessarily the law of the Buddha. It includes all laws—moral, legal or religious and thus it embraces also the customary observances or prescribed conduct for everybody either ecclesiastical or lay as the Sanskrit *dharma* implies. In the inscriptions of our period the word *tryā* means firstly the Buddhist scriptural texts¹ synonymous with the *Tipiṭaka*, secondly the preachings² whereby the monk tries to explain some part of the teachings of *Gotama* to his congregation, thirdly a law suit³, fourthly the judges⁴ themselves and lastly to describe a natural phenomenon such as death, *atañ may so tryā*⁵—the law of impermanence. Thus the medieval Burman used the word *tryā* in connection with all applications of law or discipline ranging from *khutw tryā*⁶ a petty theft case—to *akhwat tryā*⁷—the attainment of *nirvana*. But the origin of this useful and comprehensive term is still an open question.

The derivation of the word *tryā* presents a real problem and no satisfactory solution has as yet been reached. Professor G.H. Luce suggests that it is probably the spoonerised Sanskrit *ṛitī* which means law. When Buddhism was first introduced among the Burmans, their language was still in its infancy and therefore they undoubtedly were confronted with the problem of being unable to find suitable words to translate some Indian philosophical terms and thus adopted many of such terms in their entire form. If this is so they should have adopted the more familiar *dharma* rather than *ṛitī*. The word *dharma*⁸ was used by King *Thiluñ Man* (1084-1113) in his Mon inscriptions. But from the reign of King *Cañsū II* (AD. 1174-1211) when Burmese became the language for inscriptions the combination *pūrha tryā saṅghā*⁹ was used for *buddha dharma sangha* meaning the Lord, the Law, and the Order, and thus *tryā* becomes the Burmese term for *dharma* with only one exception where

1. PI. 27¹⁸, PI. 50¹, PI. 73¹⁸, PI. 102²⁷, PI. 194¹⁴, PI. 234⁴, PI. 249²¹, PI. 251⁴, etc

2. PI. 17^{3,5,9}, PI. 22^{4,5,7}, PI. 27¹⁵, (PI. 53¹⁰), PI. 67¹¹, PI. 202²⁵, PI. 233¹⁵, PI. 262²⁸, PI. 308²⁵, PI. 370¹⁸, PI. 390^{16,18,17}, PI. 391¹, PI. 428²², and PI. 581a¹⁸

3. PI. 74¹⁵, PI. 79b²⁷, PI. 117a^{2,4,6,8,15}, PI. 120b¹⁷, PI. 141a^{11,16}, PI. 174^{15,16}, PI. 272²⁶, PI. 381²⁸

4. PI. 141a⁵, PI. 191b¹⁰, PI. 307a¹, PI. 381^{27,28,31,57}, PI. 394⁵, PI. 560f^{7,10}

5. PI. 82b¹⁰, PI. 182b¹⁸, PI. 235³. Other phrases used in connection with death are *nag ṛwā lā*—gone to the village of *deva* (PI. 147a⁵, PI. 428¹⁵) and *pyāñ taw mā*—the royal return—as if the *devaloka* was one's real abode and the life in this world of men was only a short visit (PI. 158¹⁰, PI. 203²) and so by death a man returns to his old place. The phrase *masa* which nowadays means a corpse was in those days only signified serious illness—*masa so* (PI. 201a¹⁴, PI. 272²¹, PI. 274¹⁸)

1. PI. 141a^{14,14}

2. (PI. 202²⁵), PI. 216¹⁵, PI. 235²¹, PI. 247²⁶

3. Old Mon: I D^{21,23} (*saddhamma*)⁵⁵; I E^{9,16} (*saddharmna*)^{25,59}; I F²⁸, I G^{20,50}, I H⁴, III C^{16,21}, VIII A²⁴

4. PI. 135, 11, 15, PI. 253, 31, PI. 422, 5, PI. 44a⁴, PI. 692, 10, PI. 802, PI. 83⁵, PI. 895⁵, PI. 901⁴, PI. 102⁸, PI. 103⁵, PI. 127a⁵, PI. 131a², PI. 132a⁴, PI. 133¹, PI. 143a^{8,22}, PI. 144², PI. 147a⁵, PI. 147b²⁰, PI. 148a⁶, PI. 148b⁴, PI. 152⁷, PI. 175²⁵, PI. 186², PI. 190a¹², PI. 192⁹, PI. 196²⁰, PI. 200¹⁶, PI. 205^{5,21,22,24}, PI. 208², PI. 220^{1,9}, PI. 229¹¹, PI. 232^{5,6}, PI. 233⁶, PI. 234^{1,11,44}, PI. 235^{5,8,44}, PI. 239², PI. 245b⁴, PI. 247^{2,12}, PI. 249^{1,25}, PI. 250¹², PI. 254a⁵, PI. 256²⁵, PI. 257², PI. 266a¹⁴, PI. 289², PI. 308^{1,12}

dhanmasattha—the Code of Law, is retained in its original form dhammasātta up to this day. Very often this tryā has been suffixed or prefixed to mañ—the King—to form either mañtryā² or tryāmañ³ and this combination suggests that this tryā is the Sanskrit trā which means a protector or defender. Then the mañtryā or tryāmañ⁴ would be translated as the King Protector. Unfortunately these terms also happen to be the translation of dhammarāja⁵—the just king—which appears frequently in the panegyric of King Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja (Thiluñ Mañ) in the early Mon inscriptions. The derivation of Tryā is thus still a mystery:

Tryā in a religious sense is the Tripitaka and to denote a compilation it is used together with the word apum⁶—the heap. The whole phrase would be piñaka suni pum so tryā apum le plu e,⁷—“three heaps of piñaka (i.e.) the heap of law are also made” whereby the donor means that he has caused the whole set of the piñaka to be copied and kept at the Library in the monastery which he had just built. In A.D. 1223 minister Anantasūra⁸ made a great monastic establishment at a place called Amanā⁹ and took special care to provide it with a set of piñaka. In A.D. 1250 Princess Saw, also known as Ari Caw (aunt of King Tarukpily) who built a big monastery at Sacmati¹⁰ also provided it with a set of piñaka,¹¹ as the

1. Pl. 174¹⁴ (A.D. 1228)

2. Pl. 141a¹⁰, Pl. 597c⁵

3. Pl. 96⁵, Pl. 273²¹, Pl. 299⁶, Pl. 303^{5,8,9,10}, Pl. 390⁶, Pl. 413⁷

4. Incidentally, because of this combination of mañtryā or tryāmañ certain scholars have been lead to think that a king in Burma is considered as the best Buddhist on the assumption that the law in connection with the king's name was the Buddhist law (See Kyaw Thet: Burma's Relation with her Eastern Neighbours, 1752-1819 Ph. D. Thesis, 1949, ff. 3-5). The fact that all Burmese kings considered themselves as Bodhisattva supports this idea—the position of a man is attributed to his deeds in past existences, a Burman Buddhist would consider the king as a man who had acquired considerable amount of merit in his anterior lives but he would not rate him as the best Buddhist. The Buddhist par excellence would be Gotama Buddha himself, who renounced the world and became an ascetic. To the average Burman the Charātoon—the head priest of a monastic establishment, would definitely be a better Buddhist than the king who lives with many queens and concubines. To quote a popular story, once King Mindon sent one of his junior amat to go and find out what the Bhamo Sayadaw was doing at his forest retreat in a valley of the Sagaing Hills. The indiscreet officer approached the Sayadaw directly and told him the nature of his visit. The Sayadaw who was famous for his caustic tongue, replied: “Your king must take me as a rebel or perhaps he wants to instruct me in the way of the ascetics. Tell him that a man who lives between the hills does not need instructions from a man who lives between the thighs (of women).” To the great displeasure of the king the officer went back and reported the reply verbatim. For this amusing story see Hisaya Thein: Upamāsamūhagirakkhama Kyam, II, pp. 277-8.

5. Old Mon. I G^{3,4,22}, III A^{4,11,17,24}, III B^{5,29}, III C^{2,8,11,22,25,27}, III D^{4,16}, V 50, VII 4,25,52 VIII B^{15,23,24}, IX F²²

6. Pl. 73¹⁸, Pl. 116³, Pl. 164⁵, Pl. 194¹⁴, Pl. 205^{4,10,11,12}, Pl. 220⁸, Pl. 225a⁵, Pl. 234⁹, Pl. 248², Pl. 249²¹, Pl. 275²⁰, Pl. 289⁵, Pl. 390¹¹, Pl. 393²², Old Mon. IIIC¹⁵, VIIIA⁵

7. Pl. 73¹⁸, Pl. 194¹⁴, Pl. 249²¹

8. Pl. 73

9. Minnanthu, east of Pagan

10. Pwazaw, southeast of Pagan

11. Pl. 194 (A.D. 1271)

minister mentioned above had done before her. In A.D. 1265 she gave another set probably to the same establishment.¹ Nevertheless we should not have the impression that the monastery was the only place where religious works were kept in those days. The kings had them in their palaces too. In A.D. 1102, King *Thiluini Mai* completed building his new palace in which there was a separate apartment where the statues of the Buddha and Gavampati together with a set of *Tipiṭaka* were kept.² The king, according to the Prome Shwesandaw Pagoda inscription,³ gave an order to make a careful copy of the *Tipiṭaka*. In the *Myagan* inscription a similar statement is made:

He shall purify and make straight, write down and establish all the Holy Scriptures.⁴

This may have lead Dr. C.O. Blagden to remark,

That is to say, he is to issue a revised edition of the Buddhist Canon.⁵

As this statement occurs in a panegyric of the king, in all probability, it only meant the making of a careful copy of the *Tipiṭaka* by order of the king for his palace. A minister called *Caturāgapaccaya*⁶ is mentioned as a person well versed in the *Tipiṭaka* and therefore it may be expected that such persons would have their own private sets.

The cost of a set of *piṭaka* was extremely high. In A.D. 1248 Princess *Acawkwram*⁷ mentions that the price she paid for her set of *piṭaka* was 2027 ticals of silver. In A.D. 1273 another donor *Samipyāṇ Lak Chon*⁸ built a monastery with a library at an expense of 2300 ticals of silver to which he gave a set of *piṭaka* valued at 3000 ticals of silver. At a time when a tical of silver could buy one *pay* of land⁹ (1.75 acres) with that amount one could buy an estate of 2000 acres. This gives us a rough idea of the cost of a set of *piṭaka*.

The *Tipiṭaka* is divided into 84,000 *dhammakhandha* or sections according to subjects and a medieval Burman knew that a complete set must contain all these sections. In A.D. 1267 a daughter of King *Klacwā*, said:

// purhā heau tha so nikay 5 pā dhammakhan yyac soñ le thoñ thā añ so ñhā rhuy.....pitakañ sumi pum le-plu e' //¹⁰

In order to keep the the teachings of the Lord—5 nikāya, 84,000 dhamma-khandha, (I made) a golden (? case).

1. PI. 249

2. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, pp. 37-8; (IX.A⁵¹⁻²)

3. *Ibid.*, I, ii, VIII, A⁵

4. *Ibid.*, I, ii, III C¹⁵⁻¹⁶

5. *Ibid.*, I, ii, p. 141, n. 11

6. PI. 2895

7. PI. 164⁵⁷

8. PI. 243¹⁴

9. PI. 162^{28,52} See Appendix I

10. PI. 220⁷

In A.D. 1245 Queen Saw, the grandmother of *Tarukpily* built a brick monastery which was perhaps a separate library building in a monastic establishment. It was record as:

|| piurhā haw so nikāy nā pā yhat soñ liy thoñ tryā piṭakat sum puri thā am so nhā Kūlā kloñ le plu e, || thuñ kloñ twāñ rhuy talā nhai, piṭakat le thā e, ||/

In order to keep the teachings of the Lord—5 *nikāya*, 84,000 *tryā* of the three heaps of *piṭaka*, (I) built a brick monastery. In that monastery the (said) *piṭaka* is kept in a golden case.

In A.D. 1274 a minister of *Tarukpily* built a monastery at *Āmanā* with a separate library built of bricks where the 84,000 *dhammakhandha* were kept in a golden cabinet². But not all *piṭaka dāyakā*³—donors of *piṭaka*—were able to give away complete sets.

Some donors, who could not afford the whole set, gave just what was needed at the particular library to which they wanted to contribute or copies which they thought would be of the greatest use. An inscription of A.D. 1223, mentions the list of works given to a library.⁴ They were:

1. *Vinaya*—five volumes⁵
2. *Dighanikāya*—nine volumes, text and commentaries⁶
3. *Netti (pakaraṇa)*—five volumes⁷
4. *Majjhimanikāya*—nine volumes⁸
5. *Ānguttaranikāya*—ten volumes⁹
6. *Vissuddhimagga*—two volumes¹⁰
7. *Khuddakanikāya*—nine volumes text and commentaries¹¹

1. PI. 234⁰

2. PI. 247¹⁰

3. PI. 264⁴, PI. 464a¹

4. Unfortunately this inscription (*List. 187, B II 171*) is only a copy made in King Bodawpaya's reign but in the absence of the original one, we are inclined to accept it as the best material and therefore it is included here.

5. The five are *Pārājika*, *Pācittiya*, *Mahāyagga*, *Cūlavagga* and *Parivāra*.

6. It forms the first book of the *Suttantapiṭaka* and consists of thirty-four long *sutta*, divided into three *vagga*—the *Silakkhandha*, the *Mahāvagga* and the *Pātheya* or *Pāṭikavagga*. *DPPN*, I, p. 1082

7. An exegetical work on the *piṭaka* ascribed to *Kaccāna*. *DPPN*, II, p. 85. There are fifteen texts in the

8. *Khuddakanikāya* of the *Suttantapiṭaka* but in Burma four additions are made, viz., the *Milindaparīha*, the *Sutrasaṅgīha*, the *Peṭakapadesa* and the *Netti* or *Nettipakarana*. See M.H. Bode: "The Pali Literature of Burma", p. 5, n. 2.

9. It is the second book of the *Suttantapiṭaka* containing discourses of medium length. It consists of eighty *bhāgavāra* and is divided into three sections of fifty *sutta* each (*pāṇṇāsa*), the last *pāṇṇāsa* containing fifty two *sutta*. *DPPN*, II, p. 418

10. It is the fourth book of the *Suttantapiṭaka*, consisting of eleven *nipāta* (sections) and 9,557 *sutta*. *DPPN*, I, p. 21

11. "Path of Purity" by *Buddhaghosa*—an encyclopaedia of Buddha's teachings. *DPPN*, II, p. 906

12. The fifth and last of the *Suttantapiṭaka* and it contains all the most important collections of Pali poetry. See above (note 7).

8. Milindapaphāṭhā¹
9. Anāgatavāmīsa Attīhakathā²
10. Mahāvāramāñjūsā Tikā³
11. Thūpavāmīsa⁴
12. Bodhivāmīsa—text and commentaries⁵
13. Mahāvāmīsa⁶
14. Tathagatuppatti⁷
15. Kaccāyana⁸
16. Nyāsa Tikā⁹
17. Mahāthera Tikā¹⁰
18. Cūlasandhivisodhana¹¹
19. Sandhivisodhana Tikā
20. Mahājanaka (Jātaka)¹²
21. (Major) Jātaka—seven volumes
22. Abhidhammā—seven volumes¹³

This donor therefore gave an almost complete set of Piṭaka as all Vinaya and Abhidhamma and some Sutta works together with such popular Sinhalese works as Mahāvāmīsa, Thūpavāmīsa and Anāgatavāmīsa were included in his list.

1. The conversations between King Milinda of Sāgala (the Baktrian king Menander) and the Buddhist Elder Nāgasena. DPPN, II, pp. 636-7
2. A poem on the story of Metteyya, the future Buddha by an elder called Kassapa, an inhabitant of the Cola country. DPPN, I, p. 66
3. Grammatical commentary or gloss. In the list of 295 works given by the Governor of Taungdwin to a library in A.D. 1442 (List 934, PPA, 83-6, TN, 39-47, M.H. Bode: Op.cit., 101-9) it is No. 227, Mañjūśārīkābhyākhyam
4. A Pali poem written by Yācīssara. It has sixteen chapters, the last eight of which contain a description of the Mahā Thūpa by Duṭṭagāmaṇi at Anurādhapura. The work probably belongs to the 12th century. DPPN, I, p. 1042
5. The history of the arrival of the Bodhi tree in Ceylon, written in about the 10th century probably by Upatīssa. DPPN, II, p. 537
6. The Great Chronicle of Ceylon up to the time of King Mahāsena, attributed to Mahānāma Thera.
7. Perhaps written by the thera Nānagambhīra of Pagan. M.H. Bode: Op.cit., p. 16
8. Probably this is the same as Kaccāyanasuttaniddesa, a grammatical treatise explaining the sūtra (aphorisms) of the Kaccāyana, Ibid., p. 17
9. Another grammatical work also known as Mukhamattadīpani, probably written by Mahā Vimalabubhī of Pagan. Ibid., p. 21
10. It appears also in the inscription (List. 934) mentioned above (note 3) as No. 140
11. No. 159 of the above inscription
12. Jātaka No. 539
13. The seven being Dhammasaṅgani, Vibhāga, Kathāvatthu, Puggalapaññati, Dhātukathā, Yamaka and Paṭṭhāna

Some donors only gave *Vinaya* texts to monastic establishments probably due to the growing demand for them as a result of the increasing number of monks or to the growing laxity in the observance of the *Vinaya* among the monks in general. In A.D. 1220 *Suvannapaccaya* recorded his contributions towards the library at the monastery of *Skhīn Athapatiy*.

// piytakata ū Silakhamidhawāsi tac klam // Abhidhañmasaṅgīni tac klam Tassa
Jat tac klam // Dhammapada tac klam Wineñ tac pum le plu kha phlu e //¹

I have also made one volume of *Silakkhandha*—the first book of the *piṭaka*, one volume of *Dhammasaṅgani*, one volume of the Ten *Jātaka*, one volume of the *Dhammapada* and one heap of the *Vinaya*.

Out of the three *piṭaka*, the donor began with the very first book, i.e. the *Silakkhandha* of the *Dighanikāya* in the *Suttantapiṭaka*.² Then he added two more popular books of the *Suttantapiṭaka*, viz. the *Dhammapada* and the *Jātaka* of the *Khuddakanikāya*. Of the *Jātaka*, he selected the most popular ten stories which formed the last anterior lives of the Buddha.³ As for the *Vinayapiṭaka* he decided to give the whole set of five as the phrase *Wineñ tac pum*—one heap of *Vinaya* implies. Lastly he gave the first book of the seven of the *Abhidhammapiṭaka*, i.e. the *Dhammasaṅgani*.

Some donors, considered the *Abhidhamma* works to be the most important. In A.D. 1273 a donor named *Nā Lat* gave only a book of the *Jātaka* but all the seven of the *Abhidhamma*.⁴ We may also include here some donors who gave only a volume of the *piṭaka*⁵ or gave as much as twenty-six volumes but would not bother to name them.⁶ So far we have discussed *tryā* in terms of *piṭaka* and we come to the conclusion that the monasteries of our period must have had libraries with a fairly complete set of *piṭaka* and that the monk were able to find donors who would supply them with the more popular or important texts of the religious books so that their libraries would remain always complete with even some extra numbers of those texts in general use. This leads to the question as to who were the people who used these libraries.

We have shown already that people who could afford the exorbitant price of a set of *piṭaka* might have their own libraries, but most of the libraries were attached to the monasteries and therefore the monks formed the majority of people who used them. Even among the monks, there was a special group who devoted their time to *pariyatti*⁷

1. Pl. 372⁴² (Note the peculiar spelling *Piytakata*)

2. Unlike the western scholars who begin with the *Vinayapiṭaka* (Childers: *Dic. of P. Lang.* p. 507) Burmans count the three *piṭaka* as *Sut* *Winañ*; *Abhidhamma* i.e. *Sutta*, *Vinaya* and *Abhidhamma* and therefore the first book the *Suttantapiṭaka* becomes the very first book of the *piṭaka*.

3. In Burma, the ten *Jātaka* always mean the last ten stories of the 547.

4. Pl. 242²⁷

5. Pl. 303² (*nidān ja le tac klam*—one volume of *Nidānajātaka*) and also Pl. 208¹⁹ where the donor gave only one volume of the *jātaka*. In Pl. 161b⁵ a rich lady *Uin Nuii Sari* gave only the first three books of the *piṭaka*.

6. Pl. 30824

7. Pl. 273.²⁸ Old Mon. I, G¹⁶⁻¹⁷

—learning—and were called *cāsañi*—students—and some monasteries which were devoted to learning were called *cāsañ_tuñk*² or *cāsañ_klon*³—educational institutes. Such institutes also provided free board and lodging⁴ to the students and some institutes had as few as two students⁵ while some had as many as twenty big buildings within a compound serving as hostels for them.⁶ These students used *piy*⁷—(*corypha elata*) umbrella palm leaves or *thanwak*⁸—(*borassus flabellifer*) palmyra palm leaves and *stylus* for their writing material with a view to longevity. In this case they bound their finished *piy* with *klam*⁹—wooden boards—usually of *Lakpam*¹⁰—*bombax malabaricum* and stored them up in *talā*¹¹—cases—made of wood or in *cājuik*¹²—cabinets—which were sometimes so profusely decorated that one would cost as much as 215 ticals of silver. Sometimes they used *pajabuit*¹³—a single long sheet of paper folded backwards and forwards to form a book—to be written with *kanikuchāñ*¹³—(steatite) soapstone pencil—kept a in *kanikutamiklen*¹³—cylindrical case specially made for those pencils. For daily use, they had *mliyphlu*¹⁴—chalk, and *sanphun*¹⁴—blackboard.

After building the library, the donor's next concern was to provide it with attendants and necessary funds so that repairs to the building, preservation¹⁵ of the manuscripts and new acquisitions to the library would be possible. Such works of merit were known as *tryā wat*¹⁶—duties towards the Law. To fulfil these purposes the donor dedicated lands,¹⁷ slaves¹⁸ (sometimes including scribes)¹⁹, elephants²⁰, palmyra-palms²¹ and sesamum²² (to extract oil for lighting) to the Law. The duties towards the Law included also the offering of daily food in the same way as to the Lord and the Order. For example, in A.D. 1278 the

1. Pl. 85²⁵, Pl. 143a²⁶, Pl. 144²⁶, Pl. 195b⁸, Pl. 206,¹ Pl. 365a⁴

2. Pl. 138²⁵, Pl. 205⁵, Pl. 271⁷

3. Pl. 105a¹², Pl. 152⁶, Pl. 290¹⁵

4. Pl. 85²⁵, Pl. 138²⁵, Pl. 195b⁸, Pl. 203²⁰

5. Pl. 195b⁸

6. Pl. 152⁶

7. Pl. 235⁸, Pl. 296²⁵

8. Pl. 417⁶

9. Pl. Pl. 208¹⁹, Pl. 235⁸, Pl. 242²⁷, Pl. 303², Pl. 372⁴², Pl. 417⁶

10. Pl. 416⁶

11. Pl. 234⁹, Pl. 235⁸, Pl. 247¹⁰

12. Pl. 164⁴¹, Pl. 205⁴

13. Pl. 310b⁵⁰⁻²

14. Pl. 310b²⁷⁻⁹

15. Pl. 422², Pl. 365a⁵

16. Pl. 422⁸, Pl. 202⁵, Pl. 276b⁷, Pl. 293¹⁶, Pl. 365a⁴, Pl. 380²⁸

17. Pl. 233⁵, Pl. 4222,²⁸, Pl. 501, Pl. 85²⁴, Pl. 162¹⁵, Pl. 182b^{15,28}, Pl. 194¹⁹, Pl. 205^{10,11,12}, Pl. 222a^{5,19,20}, Pl. 2421^{8,20}, Pl. 248⁵, Pl. 265²⁸, Pl. 285¹¹, Pl. 313a⁸, Pl. 365a^{2,5}, Pl. 371b⁹, Pl. 394⁸, Pl. 396b⁴, Pl. 571b⁷

18. Pl. 422⁸, Pl. 122a^{6,15}, Pl. 152²⁶, Pl. 182b^{1,15}, Pl. 190a⁸, Pl. 194¹⁹, Pl. 208¹⁷, Pl. 229¹⁹, Pl. 248^{8,5}, Pl. 251⁴, Pl. 262¹⁵

19. Pl. 422⁸

20. Pl. 182¹⁵

21. Pl. 202⁵

22. Pl. 393²²

minister *Caturaṅgapaccaya* said:

// apoṇ lay 3230 kywan 160 // iy lay khwan ra so capā twāñ kā ta niy so purhā
chan ta carwat khyak sañput // pitakat ta niy so to prañ khyak sañput // kloñ
thera cā so ta la capā 30 // aryā 20 ta niy chan ta prañ twāñ a prañ 20 //

The total of 3230 (*pay*) of land and 160 slaves (are dedicated). Out of the paddy received as rent from these lands, $\frac{1}{6}$ basket of rice (is to be) cooked everyday (as) almsfood for the Lord, 1 *prañ* ($\frac{1}{6}$ of the basket) of rice (is to be) cooked everyday (as) almsfood for the Law, 30 (baskets) of paddy are (to be set apart) every month for the chief monk of the monastery to eat and 20 *prañ* of rice at 1 *prañ* for each monk are (to be cooked) daily for 20 monks.

Another donor after dedicating 8073 *pay* of land said:

// i lay nhuik ra ap so capā twāñ kā ceti sañput ta niy chan 1 prañ piṭakat ta
niy chan 3 tumī purhā ryap sañput ta niy chan 1 tumī purhā tanthim sañput ta niy
chan 1 tumī nā smī plu so kū 4 myaknhā so sañput ta niy chan 4 tumī tan cīy
sate //

From the (yearly) produce of paddy from these lands, 1 *prañ* of rice (is to be cooked) daily as almsfood for the *cetiya*, 3 *tumī* of rice daily for the *piṭaka*, 1 *tumī* of rice daily as almsfood for the standing Buddha, 1 *tumī* of rice daily as almsfood for the recumbent Buddha, 4 *tumī* of rice daily as almsfood for the four sided hollow pagoda built by my daughter are to be offered.

Thus apart from this rite of offering daily food to the Law, the medieval libraries of Burma had adequate staffs and funds as its modern counterparts. But the nature of the collection was mainly religious, and a complete set of the *tipiṭaka* together with commentaries would be available there and perhaps even spare copies of some popular texts. Naturally, the majority of the readers were young monks whose ambition was to learn by heart the whole of the "three heaps of the *tryā*" with some of the *ṭikā* and *atthakathā* of the texts.

Besides meaning *tipiṭaka*, *tryā* also means the preachings of the monks who try to explain some part of the teachings of *Gotama* to his congregation. To give such a sermon is known as *tryā³*, and to listen to it would be termed *tryā nā⁴* and a sort of donation called *tryā chū⁵* is given to the preacher by way of recompense for his pains. It is interesting to note here that the donations vary from areca-nuts⁶ and loin-cloths⁷ to paddy⁸ and paddysfields⁹. Usually there was a weekly sermon on every *satañ¹⁰*—sabbath day—during the *wāñ*—lent. In some monasteries preaching was heard twice every sabbath, i.e. once in the

1. Pl. 289¹⁷

2. Pl. 393²⁰

3. Pl. 27¹²

4. Pl. 17^{3, 9}, Pl. 224^{5, 7}, Pl. 27¹⁵, (Pl. 53¹⁸), Pl. 67¹¹, Pl. 370^{16, 16, 17}, Pl. 392¹

5. Pl. 36²⁵, Pl. 422¹⁻², Pl. 138²⁷, Pl. 275²², Pl. 289¹⁹, Pl. 393²⁵, Pl. 396a²⁷

6. Pl. 32²⁵

7. Pl. 275²², Pl. 393²⁵

8. Pl. 138²⁷, Pl. 289¹⁹

9. Pl. 422¹⁻², Pl. 396a²⁷

10. & 11. Pl. 36²⁵, Pl. 138²⁷, Pl. 275²², Pl. 289¹⁹

morning and again at night.¹ Big monastic establishments generally had a separate building called the *dhammasā*² or *tryā im*³—or *tryā klon*⁴—hall of the Law—where most of the preaching was done. In such a hall, a special seat called *tryā panlai*⁵—sometimes gilded, with a golden umbrella and canopy⁶ above—was made for the preacher. From this seat, the preacher would address the congregation on such subjects as *Dhammacakka*⁷—the wheel of law, *Paṭiccasamuppāda*⁸—the working of cause and effect, *Rathavinita Sutta*⁹—the seven acts of purity and *Satipaṭṭhāna Sutta*¹⁰—the four methods of meditation. The listeners thus became well acquainted with the methods of obtaining the *paṭisambhidā*¹¹—analytical knowledge, and the four *sacca*¹²—truths—that would ultimately result in their becoming *arahat*¹³ when *Maitreya*¹⁴ becomes Buddha or in other words in attaining *aklyat tryā*¹⁵—the knowledge that would help one to achieve *nirvana*. In present day Burma, stories from the *Jātaka* are usually quoted by the preacher as illustration and these tales which are quite interesting, attract a considerable portion of the audience to the *dhammasā*. It is not unlikely that some old Burmans were also attracted to the *dhammasā* in the same way. The *Jātaka* are full of moral lessons and scenes from them were painted on the walls of some buildings¹⁶ with a dual purpose, viz. to decorate the hall and to convey some information on Buddhism in pictures. There are two interesting names in connection with these teachings. They are *Mālañ* and *Pisamantra* and in an inscription of A.D. 1201 they appear as:

// Sakarac 563 // Mruikkasor nhac // Sañkri Nōñ Up phun mū so Tankho la chan
14 rek Tannhāñkunuy niy Mālañ nā e, // laprañ Tannhāñlā niy, kā Pisamantra
nā e, // la chut 1 rek Añkā niy kā Dhammacakkra nā e, //

In A.D. 1201 *Sañkri Nōñ Up* did the following meritorious deeds. On Sunday 19 March¹⁸ *Mālañ* (story) was heard; on Monday 20 March the *Pisamantra* (story); and on Tuesday 21 March the *Dhammacakkra*.

1. Pl. 275²²

2. Pl. 75¹⁹, Pl. 102⁹, Pl. 105a⁹, Pl. 152⁵, Pl. 185⁴, Pl. 234¹⁰, Pl. 303⁵, Pl. 366¹⁸, Pl. 575⁹, Pl. 602a²

3. Pl. 152⁵, Pl. 164⁷

4. Pl. 68³

5. Pl. 105a⁹, Pl. 205⁴, Pl. 371a¹³

6. Pl. 73¹⁹

7. Belongs to the *Samyuttanikāya* of the *Suttantapiṭaka* and supposed to be the first preaching of all the Buddhas. Pl. 76⁸, Pl. 227¹, Pl. 202²⁵, Pl. 209¹⁵, Pl. 249¹⁴

8. Pl. 67

9. Twentyfourth *sutta* of the *Mijjhimanikāya*. Pl. 396b¹

10. Tenth *sutta* of the *Mijjhimanikāya*. Pl. 53¹⁸

11. Pl. 197¹²

12. Pl. 390⁵, Pl. 413⁵

13. *Arahattaphuil* (*Arahattaphalattha*) Pl. 235²¹, Pl. 247²⁶, *Rahantā* (*Araha*) Pl. 10b⁵¹, Pl. 23¹¹, Pl. 194b⁴⁹, Pl. 144³², Pl. 149¹⁶, Pl. 197¹⁵, Pl. 206⁸, Pl. 209¹⁵, Pl. 233¹⁰, Pl. 239²⁸, Pl. 240¹², Pl. 246¹⁵, Pl. 249¹⁵, Pl. 253b¹⁰, Pl. 263¹¹, Pl. 299¹⁹, Pl. 422b¹², Pl. 579¹⁶

14. Pl. 23², Pl. 8a⁵, Pl. 10b⁵⁰, Pl. 14⁶, Pl. 23¹¹, Pl. 44b¹⁰, Pl. 94b⁵⁰, Pl. 122a¹⁵, Pl. 152⁵⁵, Pl. 164³, Pl. 182a²⁸, Pl. 197¹¹, Pl. 202²⁴, Pl. 206⁸, Pl. 216¹⁴, Pl. 233¹⁵, Pl. 249^{9,15,25}, Pl. 275^{11,15}, Pl. 283²³, Pl. 293⁴, Pl. 299¹⁹, Pl. 331b¹², Pl. 334a¹⁵, Pl. 364⁵⁹, Pl. 366¹¹, Pl. 384⁸, Pl. 558a⁷, Pl. 572a¹⁵

15. (Pl. 202²⁵), Pl. 216¹⁵, Pl. 235²¹, Pl. 247²⁶

16. Pl. 105a⁹, Pl. 248¹⁸

17. Pl. 221-7 Pl. 308²⁵ has *Pisamantrā*

18. According to A. Irwin: "Elements of Burmese Calendar", IA, Nov. 1910, p. 303, 19 March 1201 is Monday.

Mālañ according to Professor Pe Maung Tin is.

Māleyya, now known as Shin Māle, a Sinhalese *thera* whose conversation with the coming Buddha Metteyya is told in the *Rasavāhīni*², a non-canonical Pali work of Ceylon. Metteyya tells Māleyya among other things that if any one wishes to meet him when he becomes the Buddha, "he must make offerings to the present Buddha of a thousand rice-alm, a thousand sweet and sour fruits, a thousand oil-lights, water flowers, land flowers, banners, a thousand umbrellas, together with betel to chew and pickled tea-leaves appropriately conveyed in *hawga* boats and listen to the law of *Vessantara*."³

Pisamantra or *Pisamantara* is perhaps *Vessantara* (Jataka No. 547) because a later Burmese legend quoted above made an allusion to *Vessantara* in connection with *Malaya-Mahādeva Thera*. Although the inscription of A.D. 1201 quoted above⁴ mentions that the story-telling of Mālañ and *Pisamantara* falls around the full moon day of *Tankū*: (19-21 March 1201), another reference⁵ connects the listening of *Pisamantara* with the *kaṭhina*⁶ ceremony. In present day Burma *kaṭhina* is generally held on any day between the first day of the waning moon in *Sitan:kyaw* to the full moon day of *Tanchonmuni*: (October-November). But most popularly it is held on the last day, i.e. the full moon day of *Tanchoñmuni*: and perhaps not incidentally *Shyañ Mālai Pwai*: also falls on that day too.⁷

As part of *tryā* we should also deal with *paritta*. The old Burman used *parit-krī*: (*Mahāparittam*) which is a small collection of texts gathered from the *Suttantapiṭaka* to ward off "various evils physical and moral"⁸, as the modern Burmans do to-day. In A.D. 1102 the *Mahāthera Arahan* and 4108 *bhikkhu* recited *paritta* in and around the new palace built by

1. *Malaya Mahādeva Thera*. *DPPN*, II, pp. 450-2
2. A collection of 103 stories in Sinhalese by *Ratthapāla*, revised and translated into Pali in about the early part of the 14th century by *Vēdēha* (*DPPN*, II, p. 718) and then translated (date unknown) into Burmese by *Vajirapabhāsā*. The Burmese version appears under the name *Madhurarasavāhīni Vatthu* (Rangoon, Hamsawati Press, 1927) and the story of *Mālīya Thera* appears in pp. 503-52 and his dialogue with Metteyya is given in pp. 550-1. *Mahāvarisa* (tr. by W. Geiger, Colombo, Government Publication, 1950) has also references to him (xxxi, 30 and 49, pp. 222-4). *Mahāwāṇi* (tr. by Kyi:sai Le:thap Charātoau, Rangoon, Sudhammawati Press, 1953) adds notes about him on pp. 320, 392 and 397.
3. *JBRS*, XXVI, 1, p. 59 (*BRSFAP*, II, p. 430). The instructions by *Maitreya* to offer 1000 lights, etc., seems to be a Burmese modification and Professor Pe Maung Tin is quoting here a translation made from a palm-leaf MS (No. 1450 Bernard Free Library, Rangoon, now in the National Library, No. 1329) called *Shyañ Mālai Watthu*. (Two other MSS under the same title at the National Library are Nos. 1330 & 1331.) The story was versified in 1804 by *Mōi Nut*: and part of this *Shyañ Mālai Prūi*, appears in *Kyoñ Thwan: Mrañmācā Ñwan, pori: Kyam*: II, *Anthology of Burmese Literature*, Rangoon, Government Publication, 1927, pp. 328-9. The National Library, Rangoon, has a copy of the *Shyañ Mālai Prūi*, (No. 2038) but unfortunately the MS is not complete. (See also *JBRS*, X, pp. 130 and 145; U: *Tāñ Kabbandasāra Kyam*: Rangoon Amyuisā Press, p. 85, No. 128; *Muiñ:Khuiñ Mruiñ: Pitakat Samūñi*: Rangoon, Hamsawati Press, 1959, p. 251, No. 1816). The story of 1000 lights on a *lhoaukā* is repeated in U: Sin: *Porāñadīpani Kyam*: II, Rangnon, Mrañmāwati Press, 1913, pp. 330-43.
4. Pl. 22⁵
5. Pl. 308²⁵
6. Pl. 23², Pl. 99², Pl. 117b⁷, Pl. 163¹⁷, Pl. 234¹, Pl. 272¹², Pl. 274⁷, Pl. 308²⁵, Pl. 372⁵⁶
7. U: Sin: *Porāñadīpani Kyam*: II, p. 343
8. M.H. Bode: *Pali Literature of Burma*, p. 3

*Thiluñ Maj.*¹ In A.D. 1190 *Singhasūra*, minister of *Cañsū II*, built a hollow pagoda. When the relics were enshrined in that pagoda, eight monks came and recited the *paritta*.² Princess *Acaw Lat*, daughter of King *Narasiñhā Uccanā*, on a similar occasion in A.D. 1261 had seven *bhikkhu* and one *bhikkhuni* to recite the *paritta*.³ There are eleven selections in the modern *parit kri*.⁴ and although nothing is known except the fact that *paritta* was used, it may safely be assumed that these eleven were also in vogue then.

Tryās also means civil and criminal law. The law court at the capital was probably known as *tryā kwan sāyā*⁵— the Pleasant Hall of Justice. Perhaps every large village and town had law courts called *biñh tryāt*. The court of appeal was known as *atam tryā*.⁶ One of the criminal courts was the *khuiw tryā*⁷— the court of petty theft cases. We have quite a number of inscriptions⁸ mentioning law suits especially disputes on ownership of land⁹ and slaves.¹⁰ Sometimes, complaints were made by the clergy against the king for the confiscation of their lands by royal order.¹¹ In such cases, a royal commission was specially appointed to deal with it and it is interesting to note that the commission always found the king guilty. The monks occasionally quarrelled among themselves for the ownership of land¹² but usually it was the monk versus the descendants of the donor who claimed that part of the monastic land was their inheritance. In A.D. 1259 *Nā Mwan* and son took a certain portion of land belonging to the monastery built by *Nā Lap Sañ* where *Gunagambhi* had been the chief monk for over three years. Originally the land belonged to *Nā Cañ Kray Sañ* who gave it to the monastery during the reign of King *Nātoimyā* (1211-? 1231). Now *Tarukpily* was king, and thus five kings had passed away; and during all that time the monastery enjoyed the produce of the land. Then suddenly:¹³

...*kok si phyak ruy lu ca lat sate hu piy e, // Nā Mwan kā nā phuiw Nā Cañ Kray Sañ, may, pri kā sañkhā ta yok tañ hyan ma cā phū hu piy, e, //*
*thuiw rhaw sañphama nhac yok cat lat so te*¹⁴ ...

1. Old Mon IX A^{14,19,21,26,59,46,48, C^{7, D^{14, G^{35,56,40,42,42,44,45,48}}}}

2. Pl. 10a⁷

3. Pl. 200^{12,14} Another mention of *paritta* appears in Pl. 266a¹¹ but unfortunately a large portion of the inscription is illegible.

4. The eleven are: 1. *Manigalasutta*, 2. *Ratanasutta*, 3. *Mettasutta*, 4. *Khandhasutta*, 5. *Morasutta*, 6. *Vattasutta*, 7. *Dhajaggasutta*, 8. *Aññanāthiyasutta*, 9. *Āngulimālasutta*, 10. *Bojjhaṅgasutta* and 11. *Pubbāñhasutta*

5. See above pp. 42 & 44-6

6. Pl. 54⁷, Pl. 371b⁸

7. Pl. 79b^{19,27}

8. Pl. 79b^{17,27,55}

9. Pl. 141a^{14,14}

10. Pl. 74, Pl. 78b, Pl. 79b, Pl. 90, Pl. 141a, Pl. 162, Pl. 174, Pl. 191b, Pl. 193, Pl. 231b, Pl. 272, Pl. 273, Pl. 331a, Pl. 371b, Pl. 381, Pl. 395, Pl. 421b, Pl. 560, Pl. 574b

11. Pl. 54, Pl. 90, Pl. 141, etc.

12. Pl. 74, Pl. 78b, Pl. 79b, Pl. 174, Pl. 191b

13. Pl. 90, Pl. 231b, Pl. 296

14. Pl. 54, Pl. 371b

15. Pl. 193, Pl. 381, Pl. 421b, Pl. 560f

16. Pl. 193⁹⁻¹²

...they destroyed the crop and (took possession of the land.) So says (*Guṇagambhi*). *Nā Mwan* (replied that) from the time his grandfather *Nā Cañ Kray Sañ* passed away, not even a single monk has been known to enjoy (the produce of this land). Then the two judges began their investigation ...

The witnesses were summoned. They probably lived in the same village where the disputing parties also lived. *Nā Rok Ü*, the *lawkā sukri*—coxswain of the royal barge at *Takoi* and *Paccarā* representing the *rwā sañ kri nay*—villagers old and young, testified that the land was reputed to be monastery property. *Kanikā*, another witness, probably the oldest man in the locality confirmed the above statement. According to him, from the reign of King *Nātonimyā* until then which was more than twenty five years, only the monks had enjoyed the produce of the land. Not satisfied with a mere statement, he took an oath. We must note here that taking an oath came only after making a statement, and that only the most important witness took one. This is unlike the modern procedure. The judges decided in *Guṇagambhi*'s favour. To be successful in a law suit is termed *tryā on e'*¹ and to be defeated is *tryā yhumi e'*². In criminal cases, the judges consulted the *amunwan*³ to determine the kind of punishment suited for the crime committed. For civil cases, the guide book was the *dhammasatā*⁴ but we are unable to say what sort of *dhammasattha* was used in those days. We find only one mention of *dhammasatā* in the inscriptions of the period and it is in an inscription dated A.D. 1249. It is probable that the courts used the *dhammasatā* as the Civil Code and the *amunwan* as the Criminal Code. In the course of the trial, the witnesses were asked to hold the relics of the Buddha⁵ or the book of *Abhidhammā piṭaka*⁶ or to take an oath before an image of the Buddha⁷ swearing that they were telling nothing but the truth. After weighing all evidences, the judges pronounced their verdict which was always *cā khyup e*,⁸ — recorded, and *tanchip*¹ — the seal of the court — was affixed to the

1. Pl. 74¹⁰, (Pl. 79⁵), Pl. 117a^{2,4,6,9,15}, Pl. 141^{5,9,12}, Pl. 174¹⁵, (Pl. 331a¹¹, Pl. 574b⁹)

2. Pl. 174¹⁶

3. King *Klaçwā*'s Edict against thieves. Plates 166ab, 167-9, 170, 173-4, 343 and 345ab. See above pp. 24-9

4. Pl. 174¹⁴. *Dhammavilasa* *Dhammasat* and *Wagarū Dhammasat* are believed to be the oldest works on law in Burma. Tradition attributes them to our period; early 13th century for the former and late 13th century for the later. Originally they were written in Pali and Mon respectively and translated later into Burmese. No originals are now available and therefore we are not in a position to ascertain their claim to antiquity. They codified the customary law and they would be modified and enlarged considerably in the Burmese translation. Probably the translations were made in the 16th century or later. The British Museum has a 1749 copy of the *Dhammavilasa* *Dhammasat* and Dr. Forchhammer used a 1707 copy of the *Wagarū Dhammasat* for his translation. (E. Forchhammer: *King Wagarū's Manu Dhammasattham* Rangoon, Government Publication, 1892) A fairly recent work on Burmese law maintains that these two are the earliest works in Burmese legal literature though it is impossible to say with certainty that they belong to the 13th century, that both were compiled within a comparatively short interval of each other, and that *Dhammavilasa* is slightly earlier than *Wagarū*. (See Shwe Baw: *Origin and Development of Burmese Legal Literature*, Ph.D. thesis submitted to the University of London, 1955, f. 86)

5. Pl. 78b⁷, Pl. 191b¹¹, Pl. 381^{17,17,18,19,29}

6. Pl. 78b⁷

7. Pl. 231b⁸

8. Pl. 196⁴, Pl. 272²⁰, Pl. 274¹⁸, Pl. 279²⁵

record. In cases where evidence was not available, the contestants had to undergo a trial by ~~Ordeal~~ after having taken a corporal oath. The following extract relates a trial by ordeal (water) for the ownership of land:

(// Mañkalā) picañ tuiw nhañ, // (Yan Sañ) sā..... so // | kamuy than...
 (tuiñ) sūkri Nā Lak Cway, Sañ mholk // (ryā ra) khrañ kroñ, riy nup e //
 Mañkłapi)cañ (hyā)ñ on liy e // muiv 6 nhac cā pri mha te // Nā Mañ Kri min
 lat-tum e // rty nup sā kā ryā ra khrañ te nup e hu e // ryā r̄i khrañ kā ma nup
 phu hu plan, ruy // ryā ra khrañ yū lat e hu krā lat e // tānchip pan lup so
 saiphama tuiw // acit aciy miy so // Mañkalapicañ hū e // athuiw rhaw riy nup sā
 kā ryā ra khrañ kroñ, nup so hut-tā // si so kā // tuiñ sūkri Nā Lak Cway Sañ
 lhyāñ si e hu min e // Yan Sañ sā Nā Mañ (Kri) hu e // tuiñ sūkri Nā Lak Cway
 (Sañ) ryā ra khrañ nup sā kā nā lhyāñ si so te hu amūkwan khat ciy hu min ra kā
 // saiphama tuiw, le ...

Mañkalapicañ² ... and Yan Sañ's son (contested for the ownership of a piece of land). It was in the presence of Tuñ Sūkri (Land Officer) Nā Lak Cway Sañ that they underwent a water ordeal (to decide who should own) the ryā (dry-cultivation land). Mañkalapicañ won. Six muiv (rain) had passed that he ate (the produce) of the land. Then (Yan Sañ's son) Nā Mañ Kri said: "The water ordeal was done to get the ryā. But the ordeal was never carried out. (Nevertheless he) took the ryā". He informed this to (the officers concerned). Saiphama (the judges) who (? fix) the 'Flower Seal' made enquiries. Mañkalapicañ said: "It is true that the water ordeal was done to get the ryā. Nā Lak Cway Sañ the Tuñ Sūkri knew it." (Then) Nā Mañ Kri, son of Yan Sañ, replied. Nā Lak Cway Sañ said: "I knew that the water ordeal for the possession of land was carried out. Put that on record." The Judges ...

Another inscription dated A.D. 1242 also said that a land dispute was settled by a water ordeal in the presence of three judges, viz., Narintasū, Mahāsman's son and Nā Kriuw Cā.² Chañ thin (mahout) one of the contestants won the case, but his rival raised an objection that he won by means of magic (chīy plu cā ruy). So the case was sent to the Criminal Court (Khuiw Tryā). Unfortunately we do not know the rest of the proceedings as the remaining part of the inscription is now no longer legible. Perhaps such incidents led later judges to investigate whether the contestants and their supporters had secreted charms and magic about them before the trial by ordeal began.³ So far we have discussed tryā as a law suit.

Tryā was also used to signify the judges of the court.⁴ But, sometimes it was prefixed or suffixed to some other word to mean a judge. For example, there are the combinations

1. Pl. 598a1,22

2. Pl. 141a⁹,¹¹

3. Acinga (Editor): *Rājāsippasattha Kyam*; Añ:rwā Mrui, Sac. Prañlum; mhanku Press, 1929, pp. 129-30

4. Pl. 7410, Pl. 79b4,⁵⁶, Pl. 19321, Pl. 23511, Pl. 598a¹¹

5. Pl. 56b⁹, Pl. 78b²²,⁵⁴, Pl. 79a¹⁷,²⁰,²⁴,⁵⁵, Pl. 79b⁴, Pl. 191b¹⁰, Pl. 381²⁷,²⁸,⁵¹,⁵⁷, Pl. 394⁵, Pl. 560f⁷,¹⁰

tryā samipyāñ,¹ *tryā saiphama*,² and *tryā sūkri*³ where the word *tryā* is prefixed to those words which generally denote 'officer' and thus we have the law officers. We do not know how they differ from one another although it is almost sure that they dealt with law cases. With *tryā* suffixed, we have the names like *khuīw tryā*,⁴ *khuīw tryā cākhi*⁵ and *būh tryā*⁶ meaning the judge of petty theft cases, a clerk attached to the above and junior judge respectively. It is interesting to note that there were some women judges⁷ in those days. Some judges were given such titles as *Manurājā*⁸ or *Manorājā*,⁹ probably because they were very good judges, as the titles suggest some connection with *Manu*, the law giver. Incidentally we must mention here three other names for judges which do not contain the word *tryā*. They are *amhu cuiv*,¹⁰ – the officer in charge of the case, *samphama*,¹¹ – the judge who administer the law (*tryā chaj so*),¹² and *khuīw sūkri*,¹³ – the judge of theft cases. This all we know about the word *tryā*.

As we have seen the word *tryā* is capable of many interpretations. It is the *Tipiṭaka*, the preaching at the hall of law, the law suit and the judge. As the *Tipiṭaka*, the old Burmans' knowledge of the *tryā* was by no means slight. Although very costly they had complete sets of *piṭaka* together with commentaries. The monasteries had well stocked libraries with ample staff, funds and fine buildings which also served as educational institutes where the youth was given free religious education. Much learning was by rote. Monastic education was considered a very important qualification for those who aspired to high offices in the civil service. As regards *tryā* in its aspect as religious teaching the monks considered it their duty to instruct their lay devotees in the ways to *nirvana*. They attempted to explain even the more difficult but important parts of Buddhist philosophy in plain words with illustrations from the *jātaka*. These discourses given in special buildings known as *dhammasā* were well attended. Sometimes there were two sessions, once in the morning and once in the evening on sabbath days during the lent. After thus receiving the method, it was the duty of the listener to practise and attain *nirvana*. *Tryā* in its legal aspects meant the law courts with *dhammasāt* and *amunwan* as civil and criminal codes respectively. Kings noted for their justice would acquire the popular name of *tryā mahi* – the just king. Lastly, *tryā* meant judges themselves who were undaunted even at the idea of dealing out justice to the king himself if need be.

1. PI. 78b⁹, PI. 144a²

2. PI. 149¹⁴

3. PI. 544, PI. 191b⁶, PI. 371b⁶

4. PI. 141a¹⁴,¹⁴

5. PI. 2691

6. PI. 79b¹⁹,²⁷

7. PI. 174¹¹

8. PI. 44b¹⁵, PI. 2734,⁶, PI. 331b⁷

9. PI. 231b⁶

10. PI. 421b¹⁷

11. PI. 74¹⁵, PI. 79b²⁷, PI. 120b¹⁷, PI. 141a¹⁶, PI. 272²⁶

12. PI. 74¹⁵, PI. 78b²²,²⁴, PI. 79b²⁰,²²,²⁷, PI. 161b⁵, PI. 174³,⁴,⁶,¹¹, PI. 194¹⁴

13. PI. 2415

CHAPTER VII

SANGHĀ

SANGHĀ is the Pali loan word for the Order. It is interesting to note that in *ratanā sum pā*—the phrase denoting three gems of the Buddha, dhamma and saṅgha, *saṅghā*² is the only word of which the derivation is clear as the three gems are known to the old Burmans as *pruhā*, *tryā* *saṅghā*. We are still very much in the dark as to the origin of the words *pruhā* and *tryā*.³ The old Mon used *saṅghā*⁴ and probably the Pyu *sagha*, which are only slight variations in spelling from the Burmese *Saṅghā*. The Pali *sangha* means the assembly or the multitude but the old Burmans affixed some adjectival phrases to that word and therefore we will consider here these phrases which came together with *saṅghā* in old Burmese in order to understand what *saṅghā* really meant to them.

We very often come across the phrase *kloñ niy so saṅghā*⁵—monks living in monasteries which is quite different from *taw mlat kri*,⁶ *taw skhīn*⁸ and *taw kloñ saṅghā*⁹—the lords dwelling in the forest—who would be otherwise known as *Araññayāśi* or *Araññi*. *Skhīn saṅghā*,¹⁰ the reverend monk suggests that monks occupied an exalted position. They were respected by the people in much the same way as respect was shown to those belonging to the royal family or government officers who were addressed with *skhīn* prefixed to their names. As Prince *Rājāsūra*, the great minister *Anantāsūra* and King *Klacwā* were called *Skhīn Rājāsū*, *Skhīn Anantāsū* and *Skhīn Klacwā*¹¹ respectively, so the exalted lords of the Order were addressed *Skhīn Wineydhuir* (*Vinayadharma*), *Skhīn Mahākassapa*, etc.¹² Even in cases where the monk is known by the lay name which is not infrequent, he is sure to get the honorific *skhīn* (e.g. *Skhīn Nā Mlat Khac*).¹³ But these *skhīn* of the monastery were by nature quite different from those in the royal family and executive offices as they were defined as

1. Pl. 135^{11,15}, Pl. 241³, Pl. 255, Pl. 422⁵, Pl. 43¹, Pl. 68⁴, Pl. 69^{5 6,10}, Pl. 80³, Pl. 84⁵, Pl. 90¹³, Pl. 94a^{27,50,52,53,57,47}, Pl. 94b^{12,51}, Pl. 102^{7,55}, Pl. 103a⁵⁸, Pl. 127a⁵, Pl. 131a², Pl. 140a⁴, Pl. 140b⁵, Pl. 143a^{5,8,22,29}, Pl. 144^{2,52}, Pl. 145⁴, Pl. 147a⁵, Pl. 147b⁴, Pl. 152^{7,10,29}, etc.

2. Pl. 10a^{27,58}, Pl. 135^{11,14}, Pl. 16⁶, Pl. 17^{5,10}, Pl. 21¹¹, Pl. 22¹⁵, Pl. 26a¹⁸, Pl. 28b²², Pl. 31^{5,19,56}, Pl. 36¹⁴, Pl. 53^{12,22}, Pl. 68⁴, Pl. 72²¹, Pl. 94a^{16,25}, Pl. 99²², Pl. 100b¹⁰, Pl. 102²⁸, etc.

3. So far there has been no satisfactory answer as to the derivation of the words *pruhā* and *tryā* though some tentatively take the Sanskrit or Pali “*vāra*” for the first and a spoonerised Sanskrit “*ritā*” for the second.

4. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, IX A^{6,10,20,22,54}, D⁴⁴ and G^{55,42,44}

5. *Ibid.*, I, i, The Pyu face of the *Rājakumār* Inscription line 17.

6. Pl. 10a²⁷, Pl. 16⁶, Pl. 28a¹⁸, Pl. 132a³, Pl. 216⁴, Pl. 291², Pl. 599b⁶

7. Pl. 208¹⁷

8. Pl. 223a⁶

9. Pl. 125¹⁶

10. Pl. 94a¹⁶, Pl. 265⁵, Pl. 274⁵⁶, Pl. 283¹⁰

11. Pl. 105a²⁰(*Skhīn Rājāsū*), Pl. 79b¹(*Skhīn Anantāsū*) and Pl. 742⁵(*Skhīn Klacwā*)

12. Pl. 152³⁰(*Skhīn Wineydhuir*), Pl. 123⁵(*Skhīn Mahākassapa*)

13. Pl. 385a⁷

sañkhāni so skhiñ!—the patient lords, or *ñrim niy so skhiñ?*—the quiet lords. *Sāriputta* and *Moggallāna*, the two chief disciples of *Gotama* were also known as *Skhiñ Sāriputtrā* and *Skhiñ Mokkalāñ*³ and this shows that the people of our period considered their ecclesiastics on the same level as those of *Gotama*'s life time. This perhaps also leads them to define their monks as *purhā skhiñ tapesā ariyā sañghā*⁴—the noble monks, sons and disciples of the Lord Buddha or *purhā tape, sā rahan sañghā*⁵—the worthy monks, sons and disciples of the Buddha. The word *tape*, freely translated means pupil but if it is to be connected with the Pali *tapassīn* or Sanskrit *tapasyīn* it would simply be another name for an ascetic. Anyhow, *tape*, usually is coupled with *sā*—the son and to be a *tape*, *sā* of somebody is to be attached to that person as apprentice to undergo a training on some craft for which he is considered master⁶ and it is believed that the master would teach his pupils as he would teach his own sons. In a religious sense, it means disciples. For example, a couple after dedicating five slaves to the pagoda prayed:

*purhā skhiñ Mittāñ phlac so khā lakyā rāni so tape, sā kri Skhiñ Sāriputtrā
ñā tuiw 2 yok phlac luiv sāte/*⁷

When *Maitreya* becomes the Buddha, we two wish to become the right hand or the chief disciples as Lord *Sāriputtā* (was to *Gotama* Buddha).

It is left to the imagination as to how both a man and his wife were going to share the one and only existence of such an exalted position, but here *tape*, *sā kri* is clearly the *aggasāvaka* and therefore *tape*, *sā* would be a *sāvaka*—the disciple. The monks were also known as *ariyā sañghā*⁸ and *rahan sañghā*⁹ meaning the nobles and arahants. Although all the monks were not arahants, they were taken to be on the right way to *nirvāna* as the arahants were *Anantasūra*, Commander-in-Chief of *Nātoñmyā* in A.D.1223 defined *sañghā* as:

*sāsanā kuiw khyat ruy, sāñ kyan, so skhiñ ariyā tuiw,...*¹⁰
the noble lords, who practised self restraint for love of the Religion.

But the best descriptive phrase about the monks is given by a queen of *Tarukpöliy* in A.D. 1266 as:

*kloñ twāñ niy so satāñ samādhi prāñā hū so kloñjā sum pā kuiw rhā so satāñ
cañ so purhā tape, sā rahan sañghā*¹¹

the monks (or) the arahants—the disciple of the Lord (who) live in the monastery (and are) pure in piety (and) ever seeking the three graces of self-possession and wisdom

1. Pl. 735⁰, Pl. 225⁰

2. Pl. 385a²

3. Pl. 64⁵

4. Pl. 2492⁴

5. Pl. 216⁵

6. Tradition goes further than this. If the master has a beautiful daughter the ablest of the pupils gets her hand in marriage and become "son" of the master. This explains well the combination *tape sā*.

7. Pl. 558a⁷⁻⁸

8. Pl. 211⁵, Pl. 162¹⁷

9. Pl. 311⁹, Pl. 216⁵

10. Pl. 7321-22

11. Pl. 2164-5, See also Pl. 181⁵

Thus *saṅghā* is synonymous with respectful, pious, wise and celibate. We have another reference which would be very useful if the information were complete. In a partly legible inscription dated A.D. 1198 a donor dedicated slaves and lands and said that some of the lands were for:

... *coñ tat so saṅghā* // *talāñ theñ tat so saṅghā* // ... *tat so saṅghā* //.

the monks who ... , the monks who sweep the compound and the monks who ...

From what it remains in the description, we find that there were monks who did some menial labour. But there can be no harm for a monk to sweep the compound of the monastery as keeping a religious place clean and tidy is also considered an act of merit. Some suggest that *cojitat so saṅghā* is monks playing the harp. That is not possible because even a lay disciple observing *āṭhangika uposattha* on sabbath days is forbidden *nacca*—dancing, *gīta*—singing, and *vādita*—playing instrumental music. In another inscription we find that the donor invested the *thera*—senior monk, with three duties:

*purhā phuiw kā thera sīñ ciy sate phurhā cut twāñ ra rā phā ciy sate cañ pantyā
kuiw te plu ciy sate* //2

The *thera* shall take charge of (the lands) for the pagoda and do repairs at the pagoda (with) whatever he gets (from the lands) and provide *cañ* (drums) and *pantyā* (?singing).

With regard to the last duty, it probably meant that the *thera* was to take charge of the pagoda slave musicians. Another inscription dated A.D. 1232 mentions that a slave was dedicated to the Three Gems to learn *pantyā*.³ It seems that the monasteries also gave some sort of musical courses—they probably trained pagoda and monastery slaves in the art of singing and music. From the illustrations just shown, we have a clear impression of what the old Burmans meant by the word *saṅghā*. *Saṅghā* belonged to the respected Order of the Buddha, lived in monasteries in the village or in the forest practising piety and were well on their way to *nirvana*. Of course, there were some *saṅghā* who had to manage the monastery and see that slaves of the establishment carried out their duties properly, including musical entertainment and the teaching of music to some slaves. They would occasionally sweep the compound themselves as that was a way of acquiring merit. This is the picture gained by the study of the word *saṅghā* with its various adjectival phrases. But *saṅghā* is not the only word used by the old Burmans to describe their monkhood.

There were other words to signify monks. The old Mon sometimes shortened *saṅghā* into *sañ*⁴ or supplement *sañ* with *arya* as *sañ ariy*.⁵ Very often they used their own

1. Pl. 2111-12

2. Pl. 195a9-10

3. Pl. 94a4⁶. See also Pl. 276b11

4. Ep. Birm., I, ii, I F⁴⁵

5. Ibid., I E⁹

word *gumir*.¹ The old Burmans also used *sañ*² for all the monks and *sankri*³ for senior monks and *sanyan*⁴ for junior monks. A forest dwelling monk was mentioned once as *sañ aran*⁵ and like the old Mon, they also used the combination *sañ aryā*.⁶ The word *bhun:kri* for a monk was not in use then although a very similar one *phun sañ*⁷—the possessor of merit—was sometime used as an honorific to a monk's name. But the term *phun sañ*⁸ was also applied to some lay devotees. Next to *sainghā*, the most popular term for a monk was *aryā* (ariyā) which originally meant noble and later was extended to include Buddhist monks. Sometimes the combination of *aryā sātāu koñi*⁹ is used, suggesting that to the old Burmans, *aryā* means a holy man. Next to *aryā*, they had *rahan*¹⁰ which is derived from *araha*—the person who arrives at the fourth and last stage on the way to *nirvana*.¹² But to the old Burmans the term *rahan* had no such meaning as they used *rahanī* for those who had acquired *arahattaphuñi* (*arahattaphalattha*) and therefore *rahan* simply means monk and to become one is termed *rahan mi*.¹³ Only adults of over twenty were ordained monks or nuns.¹⁴ Deacons or novices were called *samani*¹⁵ which is derived from the Pali *sāmanera*. The word *kurai* for a novice was not in use then and the words *syāñ*¹⁶ or *asyāñ*¹⁷ from which perhaps the word *kurai* is derived does not

1. *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, 1 C⁵⁵, E²⁹

2. Pl. 40³, Pl. 139¹⁷, Pl. 157^{10,10}, Pl. 223a⁸, Pl. 226²⁹, Pl. 241^{27,28}, Pl. 365c¹¹, Pl. 367a⁸

3. Pl. 6⁸, Pl. 222¹⁴, Pl. 411⁵, Pl. 113⁸, Pl. 157¹¹, Pl. 269¹³, Pl. 362^{22,23,25,24,24,25,25}, Pl. 366³¹, Pl. 373a⁹, Pl. 381⁵⁶. The Mon face of the *Rājākumār* Inscription (*Ep. Birm.*, I, i, pp. 55-6) also uses this term.

4. Pl. 113⁸

5. Pl. 40^{3,8}

6. Pl. 285²⁶

7. Pl. 118b⁹, Pl. 123^{14,15}, Pl. 134a¹⁸, Pl. 134b⁴, Pl. 157^{9,9,10,26}, Pl. 253b⁵, Pl. 329⁴

8. Pl. 7^{4,15,17,20}, Pl. 8a⁵, Pl. 18⁵, Pl. 21², Pl. 422^{4,4,15,16}, Pl. 432¹, Pl. 44b^{2,9,17}, Pl. 51^{2,11}, Pl. 56a^{8,8}, Pl. 74^{9,11}, Pl. 78b⁵, Pl. 79b²⁵, Pl. 122a⁴, Pl. 123a¹⁸, Pl. 128b^{5,8}, Pl. 182b² (*phunsañ ma*), Pl. 214b¹¹, Pl. 252², Pl. 331b¹¹, Pl. 335b¹¹, Pl. 373a⁵, Pl. 377b², Pl. 558a¹¹, Pl. 559b¹, Pl. 563a¹², Pl. 573b⁹, Pl. 594a^{3,17}, Pl. 599d², Pl. 602a^{8,10}. Perhaps the term in the latter part of our period was used only for the monks and the modern *bhun:kri* evolves from it.

9. Pl. 121⁰, Pl. 211⁵, Pl. 732^{1,22}, Pl. 143a²², Pl. 198²⁵, Pl. 203^{12,16}, Pl. 206¹, Pl. 222a¹¹, Pl. 229²¹, Pl. 242¹⁶, Pl. 244^{23,30}, Pl. 246³, Pl. 249²⁴, Pl. 257⁹, Pl. 268²⁷, Pl. 270²⁸, Pl. 271¹⁴, Pl. 275²⁹, Pl. 276^{4,7,10}, Pl. 280b¹¹, Pl. 282²¹, Pl. 285²⁶, Pl. 286^{15,15,18}, Pl. 289¹⁸, Pl. 293⁸, Pl. 295¹⁰, Pl. 298a^{5,7}, Pl. 307c⁶, Pl. 373b²⁵, Pl. 390¹², Pl. 392^{56,58,59}, Pl. 393³⁰, Pl. 395²¹, Pl. 396a³⁴, Pl. 396b⁷, Pl. 594⁷

10. Pl. 271⁴⁸

11. Pl. 32², Pl. 7⁹, Pl. 311^{9,50}, Pl. 44b¹¹, Pl. 147b²⁰, Pl. 149¹⁶, Pl. 200²², Pl. 211⁵, Pl. 216⁵, Pl. 220⁹, Pl. 240⁴, Pl. 256⁷, Pl. 263^{9,10,13}, Pl. 303⁴, Pl. 308^{52,53,55}, Pl. 331b⁵, Pl. 376^{4,5,5,9,11,14,14,15,17,19,24,28,30}, Pl. 381¹², Pl. 600b¹⁰

12. The *cattāra magga* or Four Paths are four stages of sanctification leading to *Nirvana* and they are *saññāpattimaggo*, *sakadāgāmī maggo*, *anāgāmī maggo* and *arahattamaggo*.

13. Pl. 220⁹, Pl. 308^{32,35}, Pl. 381¹²

14. See J.F. Dickson: "Upasampadā-kammavāñā", *JRAS*, VII, 1875, pp. 1-16

15. Pl. 308³³

16. Pl. 244²⁰, Pl. 246⁴, Pl. 271^{15,18,22,33,51}, Pl. 279¹⁸, Pl. 291¹³, Pl. 296^{8,10}, Pl. 380^{9,12}, Pl. 388a^{11,91}, Pl. 392⁵⁸, Pl. 395²¹, Pl. 419b⁴⁰, Pl. 423⁵

17. Pl. 368a², Pl. 389b³

mean a novice but a monk with the exception when *asyan* was applied to royalty as *asyan mankrī*—the liege lord, the great king. Monks addressed each other as *nā syāñ*²—my lord. They were also mentioned as *pancañ*³ which literally means a pure flower and the spelling does not permit it to be connected with *pañcarāga*, the five attributes of the burmanised *pañcāñi*; as the modern Burman believes.⁴ Thus we find the use of *sāñ*, *sāñ ariy* and *gumir* among the old Mons for the monks and among the old Burmese, *sāñ*, *sāñkñi*, *sāñlyāñ*, *sāñ arāñ*, *sāñ aryā*, *phun sāñ*, *aryā*, *rahan*, *samariy*, *syāñ*, *asyāñ* and *pancañ*.

It will be interesting also to study the prefixes to a monk's name meaning "the Reverend" etc. As the Reverend, Very Reverend, Right Reverend, and Most Reverend are used before the names of the clergy, the old Burmans used such terms as *phun mlat so*⁵ or *mlat so*⁶ for senior monks, *mlat cwāsa*⁷ or *mlat kri*⁸ for the most senior monks and *mlat kri cwāñ*⁹ or *phun mlat kri cwāñ*¹⁰ for the exceptionally respected monks who were royal preceptors, etc. But such terms as *thera*¹¹, *sāñghā therā*² and *maha therā*¹³ are equally popular. The old Burmans called their senior monks *chryā*¹⁴ (*acāriya*)—the teacher. Very often a monk would be referred to as the teacher of a certain prominent person among his lay

1. Pl. 249, Pl. 682⁵

2. Pl. 271¹⁵

3. Pl. 411⁵, Pl. 100b²⁸, Pl. 113¹⁵, Pl. 128a¹⁴, 20, Pl. 149⁵, 11, Pl. 202¹⁴, Pl. 207¹⁴, Pl. 210b⁸, 15, Pl. 214a⁶, Pl. 218b⁷, Pl. 224¹⁷, Pl. 226¹⁵, Pl. 232a⁸, 9, Pl. 257¹⁶, 54, Pl. 268⁷, Pl. 279²⁹, Pl. 284b⁶, Pl. 307b⁵, 5, Pl. 308³³, Pl. 329¹⁵, Pl. 335b⁶, Pl. 367a⁸, Pl. 370⁵⁴, Pl. 372²³, Pl. 373a¹⁵, 15, Pl. 423⁵⁰, Pl. 424²⁰, Pl. 578b¹⁹, Pl. 579¹², Pl. 602a¹⁵

4. The five attributes are connected with the ordination service where the perfection of the president of the chapter (to be of ten years standing as an elder monk), the perfection of the chapter (consisting of ten monks who have been ordained before without any flaw or mistake in their ordination services), the perfection of intonation during the service on the part of the president and his ten colleagues, the same on the part of the candidate and the perfection of the candidate as to his qualifications required by the service, are necessary. The qualifications of the candidate are:

1. He must not be suffering from such diseases as leprosy, boils, itch, asthma and epilepsy.
2. He must be over twenty, a male human being, with full permission from parents to become a monk.
3. He must be a free man, free from debts and from military service as well.
4. He must have the almsbowl and robes complete with him.

5. Pl. 297¹⁸, Pl. 246¹⁷, (*phun mlasso*), Pl. 256⁴⁸, (*phun mlat*), Pl. 296⁵, Pl. 365c², Pl. 395⁶ (*phun mlassa*)

6. Pl. 84¹⁵, Pl. 264⁷, 15, Pl. 366¹⁹ (*mlasso*), Pl. 373a¹⁴, Pl. 603b⁴ (*mlassa*)

7. Pl. 261⁷; Pl. 578a²

8. Pl. 102⁹, Pl. 203², Pl. 208¹⁷ (*tawmlat kri*), Pl. 2652⁵, 10, 13, 17, 21, 28, 50, 53, 55, 57, 59, 40, 41, 41, Pl. 2565⁰, Pl. 266b⁵, 5, 13, 28, 59, Pl. 266c¹, Pl. 2582, 27, Pl. 2701⁷, 19, 23, 25, Pl. 272⁸, Pl. 274⁵, 9, 10, 10, Pl. 277², Pl. 280b¹², Pl. 295⁸, Pl. 2975⁶, 3, 7, 8, 24, Pl. 298a², Pl. 2991⁰, Pl. 3922⁸, Pl. 4243⁸, 9, 12, 13, 15, 18, 26, 53, 34, Pl. 594⁹, 14, 20

9. Pl. 12¹¹, Pl. 215b¹¹, Pl. 2354⁰, 41, 41, Pl. 2391⁸, Pl. 271⁴⁹, 31, Pl. 384², Pl. 419b¹, Pl. 423⁵¹, 55, 55, Pl. 424⁴⁰, 12, 15, 18, 26, Pl. 428¹⁸

10. Pl. 196², 5, 8, 9, Pl. 209⁷, Pl. 212³⁴, Pl. 221²⁵, Pl. 244⁴, Pl. 2792⁴, 12, 20, 23, 24, 50, Pl. 423⁹, Pl. 424⁵⁵

11. Pl. 12⁹, Pl. 298¹⁸, Pl. 702²⁰, etc.

12. Pl. 22¹¹, Pl. 30a³, Pl. 53⁷, etc.

13. Pl. 31¹⁵, 24, Pl. 62¹, Pl. 10a⁸, etc. Old Mon, *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, B⁴⁵, 45; III, i, IX, A²⁵, 55, 40, 45, 45, 45, D⁴⁴ and XII⁴

14. Pl. 13⁵, Pl. 262²⁸, Pl. 361⁰, Pl. 67¹¹, Pl. 83¹⁸, Pl. 852¹¹, 19, Pl. 120a²⁰, Pl. 123¹⁴, etc. Chryā would be used also for some people who were not monks (Pl. 205¹⁴, 14, 15, 15, 18). In modern times, chryā is seldom used for monks with the exception of *charatthau* or its shortened form *chatoau*. *Char* today is a schoolteacher, physician, etc.

devotees. For example, the king's preceptor came to be popularly known as *manī charyā*¹, and the preceptor of Queen Pearl (Queen of King *Klacwā*) as *Caw Pulay May Charyā*², the preceptor of a minister as *Amatkri Siriwatthanā Chiryā*³, and so on. As a matter of fact, even the Lord Buddha is mentioned as *lū nat takā chiryā*⁴—the teacher of all men and *deva* or *sunilū charyā*⁵—the teacher of Men, *Deva* and *Brahma*. There is an interesting reference to a monk called *Ratanāucchi*⁶ who was known as *Nat Charyā Mlat cwā so Skhin Ratanāucchi*⁷—the Most Reverend Lord *Ratanāucchi*, the teacher of *deva*, *Pūtanā*—brahman and *hurā*⁸—astrologer, would probably also be addressed as *chryā*. Another equally popular prefix to a monk's name is *sukhamin*⁹—the wise, although some people who were not monks were also known as *sukhamin*¹⁰ too; perhaps they were exmonks who were still called by that name after they had left the Order. It is also possible that they were so known for their wisdom or scholarship. There were also terms such as *taw thwak*¹¹ (monks or nuns who were once married) as well as *lū thwak*¹² (people who were once monks and nuns). Thus terms like *mlat kri*, *thera*, *sanghathera*, *mahāthera*, *chryā* and *sukhamin* were prefixes to the names of senior monks who were regarded by the people with deep reverence. As they were learned they gathered around them quite a following who looked upon them as great teachers.

Among the followers of a prominent monk, *cāsai*—the students, formed the most important group. They devoted their time to *pariyatti*—learning. There were other monks who devoted their time to *paṭipatti*¹³—practice. In A.D. 1243, the Queen (?) of *Klacwā* who was the sister of *Tākakri*, and King *Uccāna*'s uncle *Samantakumītharī* and wife built as many as twenty monasteries encircling a hollow-pagoda, a library, a monastery and a hall of law, and dedicated three hundred *pay* of land, thirty slaves and fifty cattle for the students of the Most Reverend *Vinayadharā*.¹⁴ Thus the *thera* and his pupils could devote their time to study without troubling about food and shelter. A donor built five school buildings for the

1. Pl. 36¹⁰, Pl. 83¹⁸, Pl. 852, Pl. 139^{5,24}, Pl. 182a², Pl. 182b²¹, Pl. 191a^{9,9}, Pl. 261^{51,54}, Pl. 297^{24,27}, Pl. 378^{8,10}, Pl. 581a¹⁷

2. Pl. 246¹⁸, Pl. 266b¹⁴, Pl. 384^{6,18}, Pl. 395⁷

3. Pl. 244⁵⁵

4. Pl. 232²

5. Pl. 388b⁴, Pl. 421a⁶, (3 *lū chryā*)

6. Pl. 366²⁰. In another case (Pl. 228b^{5,7}) a monk is called *Nat thamarā so Skhin Thamīpā*—Lord *Thamīpā*, receiver of *Deva*'s food.

7. Pl. 102¹⁸, Pl. 117a¹, Pl. 126b¹¹, Pl. 186⁸, Pl. 203⁷, Pl. 239⁹, Pl. 262⁴, Pl. 336b⁷, Pl. 417⁵

8. Pl. 44b¹⁸, Pl. 61¹⁵, Pl. 102¹⁸, Pl. 121b^{6,6}, Pl. 133^{18,19}, Pl. 186⁸, Pl. 212²⁴, Pl. 263⁶, Pl. 272²⁹, Pl. 289¹⁴, Pl. 366⁵², Pl. 428¹¹, Pl. 567a¹, Pl. 581a¹⁷

9. Perhaps the Tibetan *mk'yan-pa* (to know) is prefixed with *sū* (man) to mean "the man who knows". Pl. 123¹⁵, Pl. 132a¹⁰, Pl. 1491⁵, Pl. 191a¹¹, Pl. 238¹², Pl. 251⁷, Pl. 268⁸, Pl. 271^{9,10}, Pl. 373a¹⁰, Pl. 381²¹

10. Pl. 162^{9,11,17,27,55,57}, Pl. 163⁴, Pl. 186⁸, Pl. 196⁵, Pl. 242²⁵, Pl. 261²⁵, Pl. 272¹³, Pl. 273⁹, Pl. 329¹², Pl. 370³⁵, Pl. 574a¹⁵

11. Pl. 25², Pl. 76²¹, Pl. 269^{11,17}. Literally it means those who had renounced the world and seek solitude in the forest.

12. Pl. 579¹⁸. It means those who have gone back into the world.

13. Pl. 275^{26,27}

14. Pl. 152^{1,10}

students and a monastery for the *thera*, in one compound in A.D. 1236.¹ *Krāsawat* and wife in A.D. 1262, built within an enclosure wall with four gates, a hollow-pagoda, a great spired monastery, a brick monastery, a library, a *sīma*, a throne of law and eight school buildings and dedicated 652 *pay* of land and twenty slaves to the whole establishment.² Queen *Caw* in A.D. 1299 built a big spired monastery, a *sīma* and a school building.³

There were also some donors who made special provisions for the students of such establishments. A donor in A.D. 1235 said that out of the fifty *pay* he had dedicated, twenty were for the pagoda, five for the library, ten for the *thera* and fifteen for the students⁴ who should exclusively enjoy the produce of these fifteen *pay* of land. Queen *Caw* (of *Narasiṅga-Uccanā*), mother of *Singhapati* and *Tryāphyā*, in A.D. 1241 dedicated 300 *pay* of land and 174 slaves to a monastic establishment which had ten school buildings.⁵ On the death of Queen *Ratanāputri* daughter of *Sariy* (20 May 1262), King *Tarukpily* built a monastery for the Most Reverend *Mahā Kassapa* and dedicated 300 slaves and 300 *pay* of land of which fifty were for the students. As these illustrations show, the student population in those days was quite considerable and the people were well aware of the fact that these students should be encouraged and supported. They were given all the requisites of a monk so that they could devote their time to learning only.

There were also many lay devotees attached to the monasteries who were known as *upāsakā*⁶ or more popularly *satañ sañ*⁷ who would sometimes dedicate lands and slaves to the monastery as the *dāyakā*⁸ did. There were also people who looked after the comfort of the *thera* and they were known as *kappikā*⁹ (*kappiya*). The *kloñ sañ*¹⁰ however looked after the comforts of all the inmates of the monastery. These people may have been monks at one time or perhaps were unable to become monks for some reason or other. Perhaps the *kappikā* and *kloñ sañ* were the liaison officers used by the monks when dealing with the outside world. For example, in about A.D. 1248, when King *Klacwā* gave *kaṭhina* robes to monks, he also gave the Most Reverend *Mahākassapa* an elephant which was sent to a *Kantū* village on the Chindwin where it got lost. The *thera* sent his *kappikā* *Na Myai Sañ* to look for the lost elephant which was subsequently found in the hands of *Na Kroñ Sañ* and wife who were brought to the law court by the *kappikā* to answer for the *chañ khuiw*—elephant theft.¹¹ When monks bought land, which they often did in spite of the fact that they were frequently given acres and acres of it, such people would be used to conduct the transaction¹². The following illustration will show us the nature of such transactions. *Saṅkramīmasū*, great grandfather of the Most

1. Pl. 105a¹²

2. Pl. 205⁵

3. Pl. 390¹³

4. Pl. 852⁵

5. Pl. 138²³

6. Pl. 297²⁰

7. Pl. 94a⁴⁷ (*cane satañ sañ*), Pl. 997, Pl. 208¹⁶ (slave)

8. Pl. 44b¹⁷, Pl. 101^{2,6}, Pl. 122a¹⁴, Pl. 123¹⁹, Pl. 197²¹, Pl. 264⁴, Pl. 265^{5,1}, Pl. 280b⁵, Pl. 367b², Pl. 372^{4,14,16,18,45}, Pl. 380^{16,29}, Pl. 578b⁸

9. Pl. 10a³⁰, Pl. 163¹⁷, Pl. 392²⁹ (slave)

10. Pl. 259³, Pl. 284b⁵, Pl. 290b⁵; Pl. 329¹⁵, Pl. 333¹⁵, Pl. 365b^{11,12}, Pl. 543a^{23,26}, Pl. 574a³

11. Pl. 163

12. Pl. 162 & Pl. 163

13. U.P.O. 144. 1000. 23. 878.

Reverend Mahākassapa, dedicated to the Religion eighty-nine *pay* of land at Surokha in Sāntapikkhaun.¹ After the death of Sāñkrāmīśū, one of his descendants called Na Rok Sāñ took the land as if it were his inherited property. Adversity compelled him to sell it later to the Cakraw belonging to the frontier guard at Chiptorā—the Poison Mountain. After the death of Na Rok Sāñ it was discovered that he had no right to sell the land and so the matter was brought before two judges—Caturāñkapūl and Acalapharac. The royal register showed that the land originally was given by the king to Sāñkrāmīśū, and probably the judges also believed that Mahākassapa had better claims on the estates of Sāñkrāmīśū than Na Rok Sāñ. Mahākassapa won the suit. Anyway Mahākassapa having compassion for his cousin Na Rok Sāñ who had committed the grievous sin of molesting religious property and thus likely to suffer in hell, ordered lū sukhamīn—the lay wise man, Dhammabhanḍā to buy the land at fifteen *ticais* of silver per *pay* with money from saṅghika uccā—the fund of the monks. This happened in the year A.D. 1244². In the same inscription where the above story is mentioned, there are five other cases mentioned³ where the lay wiseman Dhammabhanḍā was ordered to buy lands with the monks' money. So far we have shown Mahākassapa employing only laymen in land transactions. But we also have an instance where Mahākassapa employed monks for the purchase of land. This occurred when he bought 170 *pay* of land north of Chunithā great lake

... phuiw khin so sū kā Syāñ Upa(kut) Syāñ Paññā Syāñ Uttamā lu kā sukrway
Na...⁴

The price was weighed by Syāñ Upakut, Syāñ Paññā, Syāñ Uttamā and the rich laymen Na...

Thus, there were such people known as upāsakā, satañ sañ, dāyakā, kappikā and kloñ sañ who looked after the comfort of the monks and who carried out the business transactions of the monastery. The daily begging of food and preaching dhamma are about the only times that a monk usually comes into contact with the villagers.

There were also slaves who attended to the needs of a monastery. Although most of the donors mentioned simply in their inscriptions that so many slaves had been dedicated to the Three Gems, some would state the number that were to serve the monks.⁵ The total might vary from a whole village⁶ to one or two slaves.⁷ Sometimes, a donor would leave the monks of a particular monastery in charge of all the slaves that he dedicated,⁸ perhaps giving them the right to determine how many of them should serve the monastery. The thera of the monastery then would have the final say in such cases as he was the head of all the monks in the monastery.⁹ We have however, one exception where the donor, the Mahāthera

1. See map of the Eleven Villages in the Kyauze District.

2. Dhammabhanḍārīka, name given to Ānanda for his skill in remembering the word of the Buddha. DPPN, I, 262

3. Pl. 162

4. Pl. 162¹¹, 17, 27, 37, 57

5. Pl. 424⁴

6. Pl. 73⁵⁰⁻⁵, Pl. 114a⁷⁻⁹, Pl. 127a⁵, Pl. 152²⁴⁻⁵, etc.

7. Pl. 127a⁵ (Mlaçsā kloñ kywan rwā) and Pl. 215¹⁸ (wat khlañ rwā)

8. Pl. 208¹⁸

9. Pl. 112¹⁸, (Pl. 132a⁵)

10. Pl. 143a²⁶

Skhiñ Acala, the preceptor of Queen Caw (Queen of Narasingha-uccāṇā) dedicated in A.D. 1241 one hundred pay of land and five slaves to the pagoda and said that after his death, only two monks—his favourite pupil Gunañāsīthi and his nephew Puñarāsi, were to take charge of the lands and slaves.¹ Inscriptions also give us some idea of the duties of these monastery slaves. In A.D. 1255, minister Mahāsman said that the duties of the slaves were “to fetch water for the monks to wash their feet, hands and bodies and to drink; to cook the rice food; and to sweep (the compound) and remove the refuse.”² Queen Caw (younger sister of Queen Ratanāpumi and Queen Phwā Caw) in about A.D. 1301 mentioned the slaves of the monastery were:

kloñ nhuik lup kluy so capā thon riy khap than khuy tanlāñ mrak so kywan tuiv³

those slaves who serve the monastery by pounding the paddy, fetching water, chopping firewood and sweeping the compound.

As most of the donors gave away land, cattle and slaves⁴, it is probable that most of the slaves, including those given to the monasteries were used largely as farm labourers either to look after the crop or cattle or both. Some slaves were allotted to tend the santhika (sanghika) nwā⁵—cattle of the monks, and the nuiw nñhat nwā ma⁶—milch cow, so that

saññcham so skhiñ tuiw ... nuiw sac nuiw thanim ryak tak thawpij thawpat arasa nñā pā cā cim so nñā⁷

the patient lords.(of the monastery) may enjoy the five delicacies of fresh milk, sour milk, butter milk, unclarified butter and clarified butter.⁸

The slaves of the monasteries were sometimes so numerous that they alone formed a separate village. When only a few dozen slaves were attached to a monastery they might have had their own quakers within the monastery compound. Usually, the monks took charge of all the slaves dedicated to the Three Gems. Musical entertainment was one of their major services. Their other duties were to fetch water, chop firewood, cook food and clean the premises. A large portion of their number would be detailed to tend the crops and cattle as the monastery also owned lands and cattle. The milch cow seems to be a prized possession of the monastery as the monks enjoyed all kinds of dairy produce and therefore some slaves were turned into diarymen. This is all we know about the slaves of the monastery.

We shall now turn our attention to the lands of the monastery. As in the case of the slaves, the donors usually mentioned how much of the land dedicated to the Three Gems was for the monastery⁹ and some went even further and said that a certain portion was for the thera¹⁰, another for sanghā liy myaknhā¹¹—the monks from four directions, and the rest

1. Pl. 139

2. Pl. 186²⁷⁻⁸. See also *JBRS*, XXVI, i, p.61.

3. Pl. 393⁵²⁻⁵

4. Pl. 201^{5, 6, 7, 8, 10}, Pl. 344, Pl. 83^{6, 7}, Pl. 91¹⁴; etc.

5. Pl. 202²². “Peaceful cow”—*JBRS*, XXX, i, p.331, n.112; *BRSFAP*, II, p. 370, n. 112

6. Pl. 134a⁴. See also Pl. 262²³.

7. Pl. 235⁹

8. See *JBRS*, XXX, i, p.291(*BRSFAP*, II, 331).

9. Pl. 422¹, Pl. 502, Pl. 105a⁵⁰, Pl. 164¹², Pl. 182b²⁶, Pl. 205²⁰, Pl. 217¹⁰, Pl. 241⁹, Pl. 396b⁷

10. Pl. 129, Pl. 85²⁵, Pl. 105a⁵⁴, Pl. 140b⁹, Pl. 203^{11, 12}, Pl. 242¹⁴, Pl. 286¹⁸, Pl. 396^{4, 6}

11. Pl. 162¹⁰. See also Pl. 121⁰, Pl. 253⁴, Pl. 411⁵, Pl. 94a¹⁸, Pl. 105a⁵⁰, Pl. 140⁹, Pl. 203^{12, 17}, Pl. 205²¹, Pl. 222a²⁰, Pl. 242¹⁵, Pl. 286¹⁸, Pl. 396b⁷

for the cāsāri—students.¹ We also have many instances where monks bought lands² for themselves.

These lands were purchased with the money received from their devotees³ and in some cases they appointed an agent to do the business transaction⁴ though we find in one instance that monks themselves were weighing the silver to pay for a land bought. Anyhow, it seems that agents were usually asked to carry out such transactions. Perhaps they did not wish to handle money themselves⁵ or they knew that they were not shrewd enough for such business which often led to disputes and law suits. For example, in A.D. 1277, one thousand pay of land, probably near Tabayin were bought for the monastery at the price of one thousand ticals of silver.⁶ The handing over of the land was delayed for nearly four years because of disputes. In the end, when possession of the land was obtained the monastery found that it had spent 1830⁷ ticals of silver and 53½ viss of copper. Monastery lands were usually free from any form of taxation. When King Tarukpily was informed that village headmen had taxed the lands belonging to the mahāthera Samantabhadra in A.D. 1260 by mistake he sent his chief minister Mahāsmaṇa to stop the headmen and declared that the lands were free from taxation then and for ever afterwards.⁸ In connection with these monastic lands, we have instances where disputes over ownership arose between monks and kings or between monks and the laity or even among themselves.

A few instances of disputes were as follows. In A.D. 1235 King Klacwā and the monks disagreed as to the ownership of certain lands in the possession of the forest monastery of Jeyyapwat.⁹ Again in A.D. 1245, King Klacwā was doubtful as to the ownership of some pagoda land under the trust of three senior monks.¹⁰ In A.D. 1255, King Uccanā or Talapayam Maṇi—the king who died at Dala, confiscated all glebe lands at Pankli of Chindwin¹¹ which included 1500 pay of land belonging to the Reverend Lord Mahāmatimāṭhe of the Kramtū Nini forest monastery. In that very year, the king died at Dala—probably he and his retinue were murdered. Panpwat sañ mliy—grandson of the turner i.e. Tarukpily succeeded him. Then, Sariy, father of three of his queens informed him of the unjustified act of Uccanā in taking the lands of Mahāmatimāṭhe at the audience given in Kwan Prok Krī—the Variegated Great Hall. In all these cases investigations followed and the kings having been proved wrong the land were given back to the monks. We are greatly intrigued to find two monks as Sūkri in A.D. 1272. They appeared as witnesses to a land dedication.

...*Si pā sakā rwā sukri Syāñ Upakut mlač ok rwā sukri Syāñ Mañkalapañā*¹²
...those who know are *rwā sukri* *Syāñ Upakut*, *mlač* *ok rwā sūkri* *Syāñ Mañkalapañā*.

Occasionally there were disputes between monks and lay men and of this, we have two interesting cases.¹³ The monks were successful in both cases. In A.D. 1315, the teacher of

1. Pl. 852^a, Pl. 1055^a, Pl. 195b^a, Pl. 2032^a

2. Pl. 162, Pl. 163, Pl. 268, Pl. 380, Pl. 395, Pl. 423, etc.

3. Pl. 16224.7, Pl. 382¹⁸, Pl. 424⁹

4. Pl. 1628, 11, 17, 27, 35, 57, Pl. 1634

5. The dāsasilām of monks prohibits the handling of money.

6. Pl. 268; see also *JBRs*, XXX, i, pp. 298-300; *BRSPAP*, II, pp. 338-40

7. Pl. 196

8. Pl. 90¹⁴-25

9. Pl. 213b

10. Pl. 296

11. Pl. 42422³.

12. Pl. 193 (A.D. 1259) and Pl. 381 (A.D. 1262)

Im Kri Sañi's monastery sued Saṅkri Chan and party in a civil court for encroaching on his land.¹ Anhu cuiw—the judges, decided in favour of the monk. Then Skhīn Dhammasiri investigated and gave the same verdict. In spite of these judgements, Saṅkri Chan and party continued encroaching on the land and so Lord Rājastū took up the case and he affirmed the above verdicts. Note that a monk was also included in the investigations—Skhīn Dhammasiri. He probably intervened only in cases where monks were concerned. As this episode occurred just on the fringe of our period, it may be possible to assume that in our period too in cases where monks were concerned, an elder or a committee of elders among the monks sometimes acted as arbitrators. Until the annexation of Upper Burma the ecclesiastical court also had legal authority.² We have, however an exception to this rule where a quarrel between two monks for land was decided in a civil court. In A.D. 1224 two grāñ (ārañikā)—forest dwelling monks, disputed the ownership of four pay of hill-side cultivation on the hill of Turan. Akliwhi, Cattaruy, Kaccakāpatij and Kaccapakram four judges heard the case and gave the land to Arañ Nā Cuik Sañi.³ Thus monks individually or severally owned lands either through donations or by purchase and their appearance in law courts—both lay and ecclesiastical to claim lands was not infrequent. As these monastic lands were free from taxation and as they were continually increasing, some of the kings undoubtedly became greatly concerned at the loss of revenue. Thus where evidence was weak they confiscated them. Unfortunately, in the three cases mentioned above, the kings had to relinquish their seizure and acknowledge defeat.

Besides slaves, cattle and land, the donors also gave the monks various articles of daily use. Among the articles of daily use given to the monks, first and foremost comes food. They called it niccapat⁴ (niccabhāttam)—the constant rice i.e. they made it their duty that they would never fail to offer some portion of their food to the monks when they came begging for it once every day. This duty is termed wat⁵ and sariput, chīmī, kwāmī, panī—food, light, betel flower, all of which came under this heading. Very often wat itself is used in the sense of the Pali vattu—objects of offering like almsfood, etc. Land producing food for the monastery are called wat lay⁷ or sariput lay.⁸ We have also seen that sariput khyak kywan⁹ or wat khyak kywan¹⁰ or cā chwām nhūk lop khy so khywan¹¹—slaves for cooking food, were dedicated to monasteries. Detailed instructions to them would be given as to how much rice and curry was to be cooked for the therā and monks of the monastery. Two specimens of them are given below—one from an inscription dated A.D. 1241 and another from an inscription of about the end of the 12th century.

// niy tuiñ khyak so sariput wa: tac niy chan 3 prañ // capā twak kā chan 3 prañ //
han phuiw kwām phuiw khapāñ curni tac niy so capā to prañ // ta la so capā 18
ton 3 cit // tac nhac so 225 tan //¹²

1. Pl. 421b^{14,21}

2. During the Alaungpaya Dynasty, either the thethanabong or a commission of eight elders had jurisdiction in cases under Vinaya, disputes about monasteries, gardens attached thereto, etc. See G.E. Harvey: *History of Burma*, p. 326

3. Pl. 54 (and duplicate Pl. 371b)

4. Pl. 392⁵⁴

5. Pl. 3150, 51, Pl. 422⁸, Pl. 55b³, Pl. 1382^{0,29}, Pl. 245b⁵, Pl. 2591⁵, Pl. 2701⁷, Pl. 2852⁵, Pl. 2861¹, Pl. 2931⁸, Pl. 365a^{1,4}, Pl. 3702^{6,30}, Pl. 3801⁵⁰, Pl. 3821⁹, Pl. 383a^{9,16,19,21}, Pl. 389a⁵, Pl. 3902², Pl. 3925^{5,56}, Pl. 3931⁸, Pl. 396b⁴, Pl. 417⁹, Pl. 4195^{7,42}, Pl. 421b^{15,21}, Pl. 423⁴⁴, Pl. 594⁸

6. Pl. 735³

7. Pl. 3150, 51, Pl. 55b³, Pl. 245b², Pl. 2591⁵, Pl. 3702^{8,50}, Pl. 4195⁵⁷, Pl. 421b^{15,21}, Pl. 423⁴⁴

8. Pl. 61⁹, Pl. 111⁵, Pl. 68¹¹, Pl. 105a²⁷, Pl. 365b⁹

9. Pl. 502²²

10. Pl. 417⁹

11. Pl. 275²⁸

12. Pl. 1382^{8,9}

As for the daily cooked-food offering, three prañ of rice are cooked daily. Paddy is to be taken out of stores enough to get 3 prañ of rice. The cost for curry and the cost for betel, all complete, in a day is 10 prañ of paddy. The monthly (total) is 18½ baskets of paddy. Yearly it is 225 baskets.

...kloñ kri coñ so skhiñ sañghā 1 yok kuiw kā 1 niy chan 1 prañ hañ phuiw capā 2 prañ cā ciy sate i apa 108 yok so skhiñ aryā tuiw kuiw kā 1 niy chan 1 tum hañ phuiw capā 1 prañ cā ciy sate¹ //

As for the worshipful monk who looks after the big monastery, 1 prañ of rice and 2 prañ of paddy as the cost of curry are allowed to be consumed daily. (Each of) the remaining 108 worshipful monks may consume 1 tum of rice and 1 prañ of paddy as the cost of curry daily.

Rice and curry for the reverend lords is termed chwam.² Some donors invited a large number of monks to a feast³ on the occasion of big dedications. Invitation of 100 monks was not a rare occurrence.⁴ Towards the end of our period the monks were served not only with rice and curry but also with yamimakā aphyaw—sweet liquor made from palmyra palm juice at some of these feasts. Palmyra palms were very often dedicated to the monastery⁵ or planted around it.⁶ Perhaps these people supplied the yamimakā aphyaw, jaggery, fans and writing material for the monks from the leaves. The people of our period made it a daily practice to share a certain portion of their food with the monks. The rich gave cultivable lands to provide food for the monastery and also slaves with full instructions to cook it.

Next to food comes chīmī—oil lamps for lighting. The oil used for lighting was extracted from sesamum and a donor mentioned that 50 (measures) of sesamum yielded 20 tanak of oil.⁷ It is probably the same donor who dedicated 750 pay of land under sesamum and millet and said :

ra so nham nham chī kā pitakat 3 pum so ta niy chīmī 3 khwak ceti ta khwak /
kloñ ū ta khwak / kloñ twai ta khwak / phurhā ryap ta khwak / nā smī plu so kū 4 myaknhā so chīmī 4 khwak nhī ciy sate /⁸

As for sesamum and oil that (the land) produces, three cups of oil lamps are to be lit daily at the tipitaka, one cup at the cetiya, one cup at the porch of the monastery, one cup in the monastery, one cup at the standing Buddha and four cups of oil lamps at the four sided hollow-pagoda built by my daughter.

1. Pl. 39329-50

2. Pl. 73¹, Pl. 246⁴, Pl. 2745⁸, Pl. 2752⁵, Pl. 2791⁷, 22, 3¹, Pl. 299⁵, ⁹, Pl. 3931⁶

3. Pl. 68-⁹, Pl. 175, 5, 10, Pl. 361⁴

4. Pl. 100a⁸, Pl. 582b¹⁰, 14

5. Pl. 233¹⁴. See also *JBRs*, XXX, i, pp. 321-322, n. 69; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 361-2, n. 69

6. & 7. Pl. 121⁰, Pl. 737, Pl. 136¹², ¹⁴, Pl. 2027, 22, Pl. 233¹⁵, Pl. 253b⁶, Pl. 372⁶, etc.

7. Pl. 3902⁹-50

8. Pl. 39322-4

Professor G.H. Luce remarked: "How dark their nights must be or have been!"¹ But there were also special nights when *chīmīthoni*²—one thousand oil lamps were lit. As a matter of fact it was not necessary for the monks to have too much light at nights as their only duty after dusk was for the younger ones to repeat from memory what they had learnt from the canon during the day and for the older ones to find a secluded corner and meditate. But there were always donors to give them sesamum oil for lighting and at times even land to grow sesamum.

Next to light, a donor's duty was to provide a monk with the betel *quid* or the necessary ingredients for making one. The betel leaf was called *sāmīnlhū*³ and a donor in A.D. 1212 mentioned that he gave the monks ten *sāmīnlhū* and forty bundles of *areca seeds*. We are not told what type of measure that ten was. Probably it was ten *viss*. As for the areca seeds measure, the old Burmans used *kadun*⁴ (*kuduba*, *kudaya*) a measure of three fingers square and one and a half finger deep or a handful of grains. Princess *Acawkriwan* in A.D. 1248 said that while building the hollow-pagoda she spent among other things 2 *kadun* and 1160 areca seeds and while building the spired monastery 2200 seeds. A donor gave six baskets of paddy to the monastery to cover the expenses of fruit and betel.⁵ For offering food, light and betel to the pagoda throughout the year another donor gave 117 baskets of paddy and for similar offerings to the *thera* and the monks 200 and 650 baskets of paddy respectively.⁶ Sometimes, betel quid was offered by the thousand,⁷ probably when the donor invited a thousand monks to a feast to commemorate a big dedication. Some appurtenances of betel chewing like *kwamī ac*⁸ and *kwamī khyap*⁹ or *kwamī kap*¹⁰—betel boxes, *kwamī khyati*¹¹—nut cracker or cutter, *kwamī lor*¹²—betel boat and *thūn phū*¹³—phials of chunam were also given to the monasteries. Seeds of the areca palm, leaves of the betel *piper vine*, white shell-lime or chunam and cutch—the ingredients of making betel quids were constantly supplied together with their containers to the monastery. It suggest that chewing betel was very popular among the monks and one who did not have that habit would be a very rare exception. We find the mention of such a monk by the name of *mlat kri cā Kwamimac*¹⁴—the Most Reverend Don't Eat-Betel or who may have been from *Kwamī ma cā rwā*.¹⁵ There

1. *JBRS.*, XXX, i, p. 293; *BRSFAP*, II, p. 333

2. Pl. 117b⁷

3. Pl. 361⁹, 21, 25, Pl. 495b¹², (Pl. 559a¹¹) Skt, *kramu*—the betel nut tree.

4. Pl. 164⁵⁵, 59. M.M.-W: *Skt.-Eng. Dictionary*, p. 289; Middle Mon *kdon*; Late Mon *kduin*

5. Pl. 1382⁵

6. Pl. 2262⁰, 50

7. Pl. 372⁵ 9

8. Pl. 135b¹² Sometimes the betel boxes were made of silver (Pl. 312b⁸) or gold (Pl. 2657) and studded with jewels (Pl. 421b⁹).

9. Pl. 1381⁴

10. Pl. 2657

11. Pl. 38b¹⁵

12. Pl. 312b⁸, Pl. 421b⁹

13. Pl. 2657. A gold gourd-phial of chunam together with a gold betel box were given by the wife of *Caissañ-khd* to the Reverend *Tāmalin* in about A.D. 1278.

14. Pl. 422b²

15. Pl. 75a⁷

were also villages with the names of *Kwamī rwā¹* and *Kwamīcātuik²*. As a matter of fact, this *kwamī* comes under the category of food which is one of the four necessities of a monk.³

Donors of our period were always careful to provide the Order with all of the *paccāñ le pā⁴* (*catupaccaya*)—four necessities of a monk. They gave away land so that *skhiñ saṅghā suiw kuiw paccāñ 4 pā ca so chiy wā atthok apañ phlac cim so nhā⁵*—the reverend monks get the supply of four necessities such as medicine, and they gave away slaves so that *kuiw cā paccāñ 4 pā lup klwañ cim so nhā⁶*—serve (the monks) with the four necessities on their behalf. Some donors considered that to provide *chiy wā⁷*—medicine, was very important although they made no specific mention of the sorts of medicine or medical treatment they used in those days. Perhaps the five standard medicine frequently mentioned in the *Vinaya⁸* were considered the best for the monks because we find the mention of *thawpiy⁹*—unclarified butter, *thawpat¹⁰*—clarified butter, *chī¹¹*—oil, *pyā¹²*—honey and *tañgāy¹³*—molasses, in the inscriptions and the *Jātaka* plaques of our period in connection with the monks. We have references which said that certain monasteries had *thawpat kīl¹⁴*—storehouse for clarified butter. Regarding the provision of medicines, in A.D. 1291, Queen Caw said:

// nā kloñ twāñ niy so skhiñ tuiw sañ phyā nā so le // chiy wā // su nā nhañ ap so paccāñ kā ra ciy kun sate // khandhā lhyāñ pyok so le thāñ phuiw // lhyā phuiw // ma kroñ kra ciy cwāmī te //¹⁵

If the monks who dwell in my monastery fall ill, may they get medicine and things proper for the sick. When the body disappears (in case of death) may there be no anxiety for the cost of fire-wood and the cost of *lhyā*¹⁶

Incidentally, note that the monks cremated their dead and the people took care of the funeral as is still the practice in Burma today. Thus monks were well supplied with medicines and they did not have to worry about the funeral of their fellows either.

The clothing of the monks is also one of the four necessities. *Sajikan¹⁷* is the old Burmese word for the robe of a monk and it is derived from the Pali *saṅghāti*—the outer

1. Pl. 396a⁵e

2. Pl. 276b¹⁰. Luce suggests that it was a special building for chewing betel. See *JBRS*, XXX, i, p. 312, n. 64; *BRSPAP*, II, p. 352, n. 64

3. The four requisites are *civārati*—clothing, *pītāpātō*—food, *senāsanāti*—bedding and *bhesajjāti*—medicine.

4. Pl. 69¹⁰, Pl. 131a⁴, Pl. 152⁸, Pl. 190a¹², Pl. 2052³, Pl. 217⁸, Pl. 2492⁵, Pl. 283¹⁹, Pl. 2917¹¹, Pl. 293⁹, Pl. 307c⁹, Pl. 365a⁴, Pl. 3902²

5. Pl. 3902²

6. Pl. 152⁸

7. Pl. 96¹⁶, Pl. 2752⁵, Pl. 293⁸, Pl. 3902⁵

8. I.B. Horner: *The Book of Discipline*, II, pp. 131-2. The five are *sappi*—clarified butter, *paranta*—butter, *tela*—oil, *madhu*—honey and *phāgūta*—molasses.

9. & 4. Pl. 393²⁻³

10. Pl. 393²

11. Pl. 361^{8,28}

12. *Ep.Birm.*, II, No. 20

13. Pl. 94a³⁵ (A.D. 1223), Pl. 376³⁴ (A.D. 1240)

14. Pl. 2752⁵

15. Unfortunately we are unable to give the meaning of the word nor the idea of the practice.

16. Pl. 10a¹³, Pl. 175⁹, Pl. 19b⁵, Pl. 21¹⁶, Pl. 30a⁵, Pl. 53¹⁹, Pl. 117b², Pl. 138^{15,15}, II, 331⁴, Pl. 368b⁵, Pl. 3901⁹, Pl. 3931^{9,28,29,28,31}, Pl. 423¹¹

garment but it also means all the three robes of the monks.¹ Moreover, we find the mention of *sakkham*² or *khruy khani*³ as inner garments for the upper part of the body and *saipuit*⁴ for the nether part. *Tuyañ* and *takyat*⁵ too are the monastic robes but unfortunately we are unable to identify them.⁶ Perhaps they are outer robe and inner garment respectively as Professor Pe Maung Tin suggests.⁶ *Kawthā*⁷ is another kind of monastic robe which we are also unable to identify. *Paisakū*⁸ (*panisakū*) the dusty robe was also given to the monks. Perhaps it comes from the original theory that the dress of a Buddhist monk should be made of dirty rags taken from a cemetery or a refuse pit and pieced together. But it was never strictly enforced and there were only a few monks who insisted on using only such type of robes. Such monks came to be popularly known as *Skhiñ Paisakū*.⁹ As it is mentioned in the inscriptions that *parisakū* was given to the monks, we gather that the original idea of monks taking for themselves the dusty rags discarded by the people was already modified and it may mean only an indirect giving of the robe by the donor to the monk by leaving it in the path of the monks.¹⁰ In the month immediately after *Wā*¹¹—the Lent, the monks are given *kathin*¹² robe which must be received only by a chapter of five monks. Of these only the one who is in sore need of a robe may have it. Although the time permitted for this particular type of offering is one whole month, the first day of it, i.e. the fullmoon day of *Satañ*: *kyawt* or the last day of it, i.e. the full moon day of *Tanchoñmūn*: are the most popular days for such an offer. In the inscriptions of our period we find the mention of this offer once on the first day¹³ and thrice on the last day¹⁴ of the period. Sometimes various other articles of daily use were also given together with the *kathin* robe and such articles were usually hung on an artificial tree known as *pateñsā pañ*¹⁵. But the following example shows that giving a robe is not confined only to the end of the Lent.

1. The three are *Saṅghāti*-outer garment, *Uttarasaṅgo*-upper garment and *Antaravāsaka*-lower garment, which are in modern Burmese called *dukut*, *kuiwar* and *sati*; *puñ* respectively. While using the robes, a monk is expected to bear in mind that "In wisdom I put on the robes as a protection against cold, as a protection against heat, as a protection against gadflies and mosquitoes, wind and sun and the touch of serpents and to cover nakedness, i.e. I wear them in all humility, for use only and not for ornament or show." (*JRAS*, VII, new series, 1875, p. 7)

2. Pl. 362⁵

3. Pl. 2121⁴

4. Pl. 393¹⁹

5. Pl. 138¹³, 13, 14

6. *JBRS*, XXVI, i, p. 61

7. Pl. 372¹¹

8. Pl. 232, Pl. 372⁵⁶

9. *Parisukūlika*-one who wears clothes made of rags taken from a dust heap. Pl. 299⁴, Pl. 428²⁶. See also *Hrannan* para 142; *GPC*, p. 132.

10. In modern Burma, not only a monastic robe but any object, e.g. coins, umbrellas, hats, etc., are left on highways in the dead of night so that the earliest passer-by may get them. This kind of charity is known as "throwing *parisakū*". If an article is specially meant for monks, it is left in or around the monastery. Even then the first finder, be he lay or monk, has the right to possess it.

11. The Lent begins after the full moon day of *Wāchui* (late in July) and ends on the full moon day of *Satañ*: *kyawt* (late in October). Pl. 138²³, 26, 27, Pl. 2752¹, Pl. 289¹⁹ (*wā sumla*); Pl. 308⁵⁴, Pl. 372¹¹, 12

12. Pl. 232, Pl. 117b 7, Pl. 308²⁵, Pl. 372⁵⁶

13. Pl. 274⁷

14. Pl. 992, Pl. 235¹, Pl. 272¹²

15. Pl. 117b³

*khrañ ñay sañ kā khrañ wañ ruy yan sañ kā puchuiw rak ruy wāchuiw sañkan .1
chū wākhoñ sañkan 1 chū wā klwat sañkan 1 chu skhiñ therā kui kap ciy sate//.../
skhiñ 103 tuiw kā wāchuiw sañkan 1 yok 1 chū phlac-ciy sate//1*

Let the spinners spin the thread and the weavers weave the loincloth and give the lord *therā* one set of monastic robes at the beginning of Lent, one set of monastic robes in the middle of Lent and one set of monastic robes at the end of Lent... Let it come to pass that each of the 108 lords (also get) one set of monastic robes at the beginning of Lent.

Perhaps the donor was very generous and not content with giving *kañhina* robes which meant that only one monk in five may have a robe. He wanted all monks to receive a robe each. Hence he used this method. Thus the three kinds of garment which made a set of monastic robes was given to the monks whenever they were in need of it or at the end of Lent. For the few who insisted on adhering to the old idea of wearing only the rags salvaged from refuse pits, the considerate donor would leave the robe at a place quite close to his dwelling so that he might soon find a so-called discarded rag practically at his very door steps. In fact the robe is one of eight articles that monks are entitled to possess.

The eight requisites of a monk are known as *parikkharā yhac pā2* and usually a would be monk must bring all these eight with him to the ordination service and the orthodox view is that these eight were all that a monk may have as personal possessions. But the people of our period had vastly extended the *parikkharā* so that it even included *sanryāñ3*-palanquin, *hīy4*-boat, and *chau5* - elephants, for the monks as means of transport. The following extract gives us a rough idea of such additional *parikkharā*.⁶

*||kloñ sañghika watihu kā// salwan 2 chu // sanryāñ 3 chū//sañphlū mwani hiy, 10
thañ //... 3 thañ// aiham 3 cañ// pu chin 3 cañ tarwañ 3 cañ// mikhat 3 cañ// kriy
sanihun 3 cañ// I Tha Nāy puchuiw lhī 3 cañ// chok 3 cañ// i mhya so kā// kloñ
sañghika wau te//*

The articles exclusively for the monks⁷ of the monastery are, two couches, three palanquins, ten very good mats, three... cloths, three porter's yokes, three axes, three spades, three flints, three copper razors, three cutters of loincloth (?scissors) of *I Tha Nāy*, three chisels. These are the articles exclusively for the monks of the monastery.

Such articles as *myakkhat*⁸-broom, *chañ lañ9*-bell, *khwak tac pway*¹⁰-a set of dishes, *cākhwak*¹¹-cup for eating, *saniyi*¹²-bowl, *cāloñ*¹³-pot cover, etc. were also included in the requisites for

1. Pl. 3932¹⁴-31

2. *Attha parikkharā* consists of *potto*-almsbow, *ticivarami*-three robes, *kāyabandhanani*-girdle, *vāsi*-razor, *sñcī*-needle and *parissāvanam*-water strainer. Pl. 3901¹⁵, Pl. 422b⁴, Pl. 423¹¹

3. Pl. 253a⁷, (Pl. 421b⁹)

4. Pl. 2352

5. Pl. 423¹¹

6. Pl. 373b^{14,16}

7. *Sañghika*, Pl. 1132⁵, Pl. 162⁹, 11, 17, 57, Pl. 163⁴, Pl. 20222, Pl. 373b^{14, 16}, Pl. 375², Pl. 382¹⁸, Pl. 398²⁰, 32, Pl. 424b, Pl. 559b¹⁷

8. Pl. 1382²⁰

9. Pl. 182a¹¹

10. Pl. 3722⁶

11. 12 & 13 Pl. 262 22-3

the monks. A donor gives a long list of vegetables grown in his garden donated to the monastery and he added a long list of articles (partly illegible) given to the monks. The list includes *uiw*-pots, *yap-fan*, *ñōñcor*-couch, *klokpyāñ*-grinding stone, *puchin*-axe, *chui*-mortar, *kliƿwe* - pestle, *riy mhut* - water dipper, *tanchoñ*-chandelier, *laipan*-tray, *tanikkwan*-streamer, *ip rā*-bedding, *bratuiw*-spittoon, *karā* - jug, *chimikhwaik* - oil lamp, *mliy phlu*-chalk *saipun* - blackboard, *parabuit* - paper folded backwards and forwards for writing, *kanikūchāñ*- soapstone pencil and *kanikūtarikleñ*-cylindrical case for the soapstone pencils.¹ Of *sapit*² - the almsbowl, we have a record of a donor giving as many as one thousand.³ Probably most of these bowls were earthen or lacquer ware but we also have references to those made of copper,⁴ gold⁵ and silver.⁶ Thus *pārikkharā* includes all the eight requisites of a monk plus various other things of everyday use in those days.

Another important item in the four necessities of a monk is *senāsanāñ* - bedding or lodging, and in its broadest sense the old Burmese took it as providing the monks with shelter from heat and cold. *Ari Caw* in A.D. 1260 said :

//skhiñ aryā pū so khyari so pañpan so ñrim cim so nhā sañ takā alay so skhiñ
thera nhañ akwa so aryā tuiw niy cim so nhā kloñ le plu e, // thuiw kulā kloñ kā asañ
aram thup lyok akhrañ amuiw khapāñ so kuiw le tañ tay cwā so achan akray chiy
thañ hañsapatā tuiw phlañ le riy e, //rhuy kyaktañuiw le tap e, // athak pitān kā
rhuy krā nhañ nhañ tañ tay cwā aroñ avā le tok pa ciy e, //

In order to relieve the lord *ariyā* from heat, cold and fatigue (and) in order to provide (a place) to live in for the Lord *thera* who is the central person of the Order and all the monks, (I) also build a monastery. As for this *kula* *kloñ* - brick monastery, all of the *asañ*-?posts, *aram* - railings, *thup* - crossbeams, *lyok*-pieces supporting the rafters, *akhrañ* - rafters, and *amuiw*- roof, are painted beautifully and wonderfully with *chiythañ* - yellow orpiment and *hañsapatā*-vermillion. *Kyaktañuiw*⁸ made of gold is also fixed (? to the ceiling) The upper *pitān*-canopy, is completely (covered with) golden lotus (pattern) so that its radiant colours would shine beautifully.

What a magnificent monastery it must have been! Another queen made an equally magnificent monastery and the description of it runs as follows :

//satañ samāthi koñ so akyāñ nhañ plañ cumi so ariyā pukkuil kuñ rāñ rāñ rāñ ;
pā nhuik ññ ñwat cwā so arip sāyā so mwarñ khorñ ta cwañ so krā cwā so ñiñr le
plu tāau mu e' rhu phway nhañ hi so athū 2 chan kray so chiy le riy et //⁹

1. Pl. 310ab

2. Pl. 117b⁹, Pl. 305⁵

3. Pl. 372⁵⁹

4. Pl. 15⁸, Pl. 182a²⁰

5. Pl. 65b⁴, Pl. 138¹⁵

6. Pl. 138¹⁵

7. Pl. 194¹⁴⁻¹⁸

8. See Pl. 73¹⁵, Pl. 97¹⁵, Pl. 194¹⁷, Pl. 308²⁵ and Pl. 372⁴⁰. See also *JBRS*, XXII, iii, 124, n.3.

9. Pl. 390¹¹⁻¹⁵

With intention (to provide shelter) for the noble lords who are replete with good practices (of) self-restraint and self-possession, (I) build a very big, fine and high roofed monastery (so that it would give a pleasant shade agreeable in all three seasons. (I) also let it be painted with various wonderful and admirable (designs).

No doubt every *kloñ tāyakāñ*-donor of a monastery wanted to build such a grand one but some had to be content with building only a *sac nay muiw kloñ*²-thatch roof monastery. Anyway, most of them endeavoured to construct *tāñ tāy cwañ so kloñ*³-the goodly monastery, or *sāyāñ cwañ so kloñ*⁴-the pleasant monastery.⁵ Some donors even converted their houses into monasteries.⁶ King *Klacwā*'s aunt desirous to turn her house which was given by *Klacwā* into a monastery, said :

*||mlat cwañ so nā skhiñ atuiv kywan kuiw plu piy so iñ te sā le sā nuiw cwa e, ||
athuiw kywan tuñw niy so thak kāñ/sañkhā niy so mlay e, hu ruy kū le plu e, ||
iñ le kloñrañ e, || piy taw mū so iñ thorn kywan lay le atuiv kywan. lhū e, ||nā krā
rakā mithuy tañ ap nuiw so sañkhā thā lañ hu min taw mu e||*

"My exalted Lord, the house you built and gave your servant is really very pleasant. But thinking that it would be excellent for monks to live there rather than for us, your servants, I built a hollow pagoda and intended (to turn) the house (into) a monastery. The household slaves and lands that you gave your servant, I dedicated". When I told this (to the King) he said: "Let my aunt place there a worthy monk."

There were also such buildings as *tawk kloñ*-forest monasteries and *kulā kloñ*-brick monasteries, which we will discuss later.

Although Pagan is noted for many pagodas we find that the inscriptions of our period contain more material on the construction of monasteries than of pagodas. Perhaps this is so because the people believed that to build a monastery was one of the most meritorious deeds a man could achieve as the following extracts will show. In A.D. 1273, *Samipyāñ akchonā* built a monastery at a place called *Āmanā* and dedicated 295 *pay* of land and 20 slaves to that monastery and wished that all those who supported his establishment might also share

phurhā prañā phlaiñ ma puiñ ma khrā so atuññ ma sī so kloñ akliuñ 8
the merits of (building) the monastery (which are) so vast that (even) the knowledge of the Lord could not put a limit to them.

incess *Acaupataññā*, after building a monastery for the Reverend *Anantapaññā* in the same charter of *Āmanā* also expressed her wish that the supporters of her establishment may share

1. 23¹⁵, Pl. 101², Pl. 280b⁵, Pl. 578b⁸

2. Pl. 428²⁸

3. Pl. 12⁶, Pl. 285⁵

4. Pl. 69¹⁰, Pl. 73²⁰, Pl. 220⁸

5. We must bear in mind that not all the *kloñ* built by the old Burmans were for the Order. There were also *purhā kloñ* (Pl. 66²¹, Pl. 389b³)-shrines and *tryā kloñ* (Pl. 68⁵, 247¹⁰)-Hall of Law.

6. (Pl. 143a⁶, 8, Pl. 1442), Pl. 145¹⁰, (Pl. 147a 7, 8, 9, Pl. 183a⁴)

7. Pl. 181⁶⁻⁹. See JPRS, XXVI, iii, p. 133

8. Pl. 243¹²⁻¹⁵

phurhā nhut taw phlāi ma hāw nuñ so kloñ akliw!

the merits of (building) the monastery (which are so vast that) even the Lord cannot express them (in full).

However vast and inexplicable the merits were, the monks would often be requested to give *kloñ akliw tryū*²—a lecture on the merits of building a monastery, whenever a donor had finished that kind of good deed.³ Thus, the old Burmans built monasteries or turned their houses into monasteries, in the belief that they were providing the monks with one of their four necessities and although this originally meant just a shelter from heat and cold, their enthusiasm to acquire more and more merit naturally led them to beautify it so that it would look grand and magnificent. Perhaps the donors usually spent more on building these monasteries than they had estimated. We have evidence where a donor had to sell his horses so that he might continue building the monastery with the proceeds of the sale.⁴ Perhaps one of the reasons for this enthusiasm was that they believed they were going to get an unlimited amount of merit from the act. The various types of monasteries they built and the cost of construction will be described in detail later. Incidentally, we must mention here that in an inscription dated A.D. 1232 we find mention of *cane satai sañ kloñ*⁵—the monastery of those who take sabbath on Saturday. We do not know what sort of religious belief they had and why they had fixed their sabbath on Saturdays. Even after a monastery was built, the donor felt that his duty was not over. He must maintain it.

To maintain a monastic establishment he had just founded, a donor usually dedicated lands and slaves to it. Indirectly, it meant that the monks living in the monastery could utilise them with the assumption that when the buildings needed repairs, they would look after them as well. But some donors were more explicit.⁶ The wife of *Sūpharac* in A.D. 1245 left thirty *pay* of land out of 685 mainly for the purpose of repairs at her monastery.⁷ Two donors in A.D. 1263 bought fifty *pay* of land and dedicated it to the monastery of *Krwani Skhiñ* saying:

*||kloñ nhuik niy so skhiñ tuiw nñ riy cā kra ciy sate kloñ pyqk ci so le ní ruy plu kra ciy sate|| ma plu piy mukā phun ma kri asak ma rhañ naray khani ciy sate||*⁸

May the monks living in the monastery in unison enjoy (the produce of the land) and in unison do the repairs when the monastery is ruined. If they neglect repairs may they not enjoy glory or long life (but) suffer 'the miseries of hell.

It is a rare example where the donor puts a curse on the monks if they neglect the repairs of the monastery. Another donor in A.D. 1269 dedicated slaves to the monastery and among the slaves he included three carpenters and three blacksmiths to do the repairs when the

1. PL. 254¹⁶⁻¹⁷

2. PL. 233¹⁵

3. Probably the monks used stories from *Vimāna Vatīhu* to illustrate their speech like their modern counterparts. *Vimāna Vatīhu* give examples where just a word of appreciation for others' work of merit was rewarded enormously, not to speak of the benefits reaped from doing the deed oneself. A lay devotee said a word of appreciation when *Viśākha* had finished building a monastery and as a result of it, after her death, she was reborn a *devī* and had "a great mansion that could travel through the sky, beautified with many pinnacles, with park, lotus-pond and the like; 16 yojanas in length and breadth and height, diffusing light for a hundred yojanas by its own radiance." (*The Minor Anthologies of the Pali Canon*, Part IV, Translation by J. Kennedy & H. S. Gehman, p. 76.)

4. PL. 270¹⁸

5. PL. 94⁴⁷

6. See PL. 26225, PL. 393¹⁹, 52, PL. 395¹⁹

7. PL. 156¹⁰

8. PL. 224¹⁴⁻¹⁶

monastery needed them.¹ Thus, there were some donors who thought it necessary to leave behind certain instructions to effect repairs at their buildings whenever necessary. Some went further and dedicated skilful artisans to the monastery so that they were permanently employed to look after the building. Perhaps the most effective provision for repairs was to put a curse on the monks if they neglected it. Another type of building given to the monks was called *simā*-the ordination hall.

Sim is the old Burmese word for *Sima*-the ordination hall. In a Mon inscription of probably the early 12th century, a Mon *mahāthera* in Kyaukse district is mentioned as the founder of *badhhasimā*-a permanent ordination hall.² But the earliest mention of it in Burmese is in an inscription dated A.D. 1212. It runs:

॥*Turañ toñ thak Cawrahan sim pyāk kha rakā Moñma Nhutchak amay/Uí, Pan Ü Sañ cākhipuih/iy 2 krā rakā/purhā loñ mah Ücinā mañkri rhuy toñ tak e, (1) nhac so krā rakā/mañkri plu ciÿ hū rakā/iy sim chok sa kā Sakarac 574/khu Kratuit nhac Namyun la chan 12 Tamhainkuny niy Amruitta Sut Sirikhā lak akhā //nam nāk ta pahui, a chok sate/iy sim kloç samuit sakā/mañ chārryā Dhammasiri samuit sate/lup ra so kā Mittrabicañ 1 Pokpo Ramam 1 Asak Lhwat 1 Pisūkā Nā Khyam Saj 1//4*

As the *simā* of *Cawrahan* on Mt. *Turañ* fell into ruin, concubine *Nhutchak* and mother *Ui*, *Pan Ü Sañ*, the chief clerk, these two heard of it. One year after the great king *Ücinā* (*Nātoñmyā*) the *Buddhisattva* had ascended the golden mountain, the great king commanded (the above two) to do the repairs. The building started at the first stroke (of the clock) in the morning when the *lagna* was in Leo of the *amruitta cut* on Sunday, 13 May 1212. The person who put the stone (boundary pillars) was the Reverend *Dhammasiri*, the teacher of the king. The persons who built it were *Mittrabicañ*, *Pokpo Ramam*, *Asak Lhwat* and the architect *Nā Khyam Saj*.

The consecration of a *simā* and putting the limits to it required a ceremonial as prescribed in the second *Khandhaka* of the *Mahāvagga*, *Vinayapiñaka*.⁴ Unfortunately, nothing of this is mentioned in the inscriptions. *Sim* is also a place where the monks meet twice a month to do the *uposatha* ceremony and once a year after the Lent to do the *pavāranā* ceremony which is in short meetings where monks made declarations if they had committed an offence mentioned in the *Pātimokkha*. In an inscription dated A.D. 1388 we have a definition of *sim* as

॥*skhiñ sañghā tuw āpattukat ca so aphlac phriy rā sim*⁵

Simā where the reverend monks make absolution for such offences like *āpatti*. In so far as the inscriptions of our period inform us, we know that *sim*⁶ were built for the monks though not as frequently as the monasteries and a senior monk like the king's teacher

1. Pl. 261⁷⁻⁸, 24-5

2. *Ep. Birm.* III, i, pp. 70-3

3. Pl. 361-15

4. See I. B. Horner: *The Book of Discipline*, IV, pp. 137-8. See also Taw Sein Ko. *The Kalyāñi Inscription*, pp. ii-iv for the modern ceremony.

5. Pl. 390¹⁴

6. Pl. 36⁶, Pl. 205⁴, Pl. 214a², Pl. 264¹⁴, Pl. 276b⁵, 5, Pl. 280b⁴, Pl. 370¹, Pl. 390¹⁴, Pl. 579² and old Mon XI⁸ (*Ep. Birm.*, III, i, pp. 70-3.)

would be called upon to put the limits to the *sim*. Land,¹ slaves² and palmyra palms³ were also dedicated to the *sim* in as much the same way as they were dedicated to a pagoda or a monastery. It was also the building where monks confessed and sought absolution. Perhaps it will not be out of place here to mention other buildings that the people built for their monks in those days. When building monasteries some donors made it a point to build also a *kappiyakuṭī*⁴-storehouse attached to the monastery. It was defined as *alhū paccañ thā cīn so ṇhā kappiyakuṭī*-the storehouse for keeping the gifts received. As the monasteries owned land, cattle and toddy palms, these store houses were also used probably to store butter and jaggery. We have mentioned before that some monasteries had separate store houses for clarified butter. Some donors dug wells and made reservoirs in the monastic compound.⁵ The following extract from an inscription dated A.D. 1223 gives a good example of it.

// *skhiṇ ariya tuiw, riy khyam sā cim, so ṇhā ut-ti phway, so riy twañ le tū e, / / ut-ti phway, so 4 thōñ, kān le tū e, / / arhiy plan kā kankri le 2 ḡhañ tū e, / / riy wañ cim, so ṇhā plwan nhan, talā le atan atāy plu e, / / riy kān apā wankyan kā uyan le cuik e, / /*

In order that the lords might be at ease for water, a well also was dug and built of bricks. A square tank built of bricks was also dug. To the east a large tank also was dug, with two levels. That the water might enter, pipes and basins also were beautifully made. All around the tank, a garden was planted.

In the same monastic compound, some donors built *cārap*⁷-almshouses, *tanchoñ*⁸-rest houses and *satañ* *tañkup*⁹-sheds to be used on sabbath days for the lay devotees who frequented the monasteries. Thus we have a rough idea of what a monastic establishment contains. There is the house for the chief monk, houses for his follower monks with lecture halls for the monk students, rest houses for the lay devotees, store houses, wells and tanks within the same compound. We will now consider the ceremonies made in connection with the dedications-the ceremony where the transfer of property from the hands of the donor into the hands of the monk was effected.

The following extract where a donor gave away a certain portion of his property to the Religion, gives a fairly good example of the period. In A.D. 1207 *Nātonīmyā* (four years before his accession to the throne) copied a set of *Tipitakā*, built a monastery and dedicated 1050 palmyra palms and 10,000 *pay* of land to that monastery and the ceremony of this dedication is recorded as :

// *ceñ kharā tī ruiy puiwpā amatryā rahan saghā nhan akwa re cañ taw khla e' / / krā pā so mañsā amat satthe sūkrwai tuiw sañ leñ anumotanā khaw pā kun e' / /*

1. Pl. 709, Pl. 113⁵, Pl. 126b⁴, Pl. 134a^{15, 19, 20, 24}, Pl. 222a¹⁰, Pl. 248⁵, Pl. 2642, 12, Pl. 2654^{5, 44}, Pl. 287a^{2, 10}, Pl. 370^{8, 19}, Pl. 380^{21, 22, 25, 27, 29}, Pl. 5754, 4

2. Pl. 134b¹⁵, Pl. 190b⁵, Pl. 212¹⁶

3. Pl. 2020¹⁰

4. Pl. 73²⁷, Pl. 234¹⁰, Pl. 247¹²

5. Pl. 153a⁵, Pl. 249²⁴, Pl. 303⁴

6. Pl. 7322, 5

7. Pl. 213a¹⁶, Pl. 242^{22, 22}, Pl. 303⁵, Pl. 372⁴¹, Pl. 428¹⁰

8. Pl. 73²⁵, etc.

9. Pl. 372^{5, 40}

10. Pl. 31¹⁸⁻²¹

The drums and the fifes are played and together with the retinues, the ministers and the venerable monks, the royal water of purity was poured. All those princes, ministers, and the rich people who heard and knew it called (aloud) the anumodanā.

In the case of common folk, the crowd that gathered for such an occasion would be different, that is to say there would be no courtiers but the process would be very much the same. Inscriptions often give lists of witnesses to these occasions; they always begin with the names of the monks according to seniority, then the village notables and lastly the villagers. Needless to say, the monks always must be there to receive the dedication and to recite the *paritta*¹ in order to solemnize the occasion. Pouring the water onto the ground to mark the end of dedication was the general practice and we notice one instance where the water jug used then was broken when the ceremony was over². In another instance when pouring water, the donors invoked the Great Earth to witness their good act.³ *Kankasū*'s wife in A.D. 1242 said:

mily kri Asuntariy llyan saksiy mū lat ruy alhū riy swāi e, //4

I poured the water of dedication calling upon the Great Earth *Asuntariy* to bear witness.

This is the only reference to *Vasundharā* in the old Burmese inscriptions that we have seen and therefore it may possibly be said that calling upon her to bear witness as *Gotama* did when *Māra* attacked him, is exceptional⁵. This leads us to question² - what did they pray for after these dedications.⁶

All the donors prayed for *nirvana* although we have observed before that only the very ambitious wanted to become Buddhas before the attainment of *nirvana*. *Nirvana* as understood by some of them is slightly different from that described in the scriptures and the monks who taught them the elements of Buddhism should be held responsible for it. *Nirvana* means annihilation and the end but some of the old Burmans took it as a place of great peace and enjoyment. The typical phrase would be "May I reach *nibban prāñ*" - the city of *nirvana*" or *nirvana* would be defined as *nibban mañ so ma siy prāñ* - the city of no death called *nirvana*. But this is not universal. There were also those who recognised *nirvana* as annihilation because they used such phrases as *rup noni khlup rā* - the annihilation of body and soul; *amuiak amyak ram mak kun ruy* - the end of stupidity, anger, and greed; and *sarisarā achum*⁷ - the end of *samsāra*. Perhaps, these various ideas on *nirvana* were due to the different ways that the monks preached. Some would mention *nirvana* as some form

1. Pl. 10a⁷, Pl. 200¹²⁻¹⁴, Pl. 266a¹¹

2. Pl. 270⁵³

3. Pl. 284a¹²

4. Pl. 145⁹

5. For the strange legend of the Goddess peculiar to South East Asia, see C. Duroiseille: "Wathunday, the Earth Goddess of Burma", *ASI*, 1921-2, pp. 144-6.

6. See also G. H. Luce: "Prayers of Ancient Burma", *JBRS*, XXVI, iii, pp. 131-8

7. Pl. 12⁴, Pl. 73⁵, Pl. 143a²⁸, Pl. 184¹⁷, Pl. 194⁵, Pl. 196²², Pl. 202²⁶, Pl. 206⁷, Pl. 235¹⁴, Pl. 236b², Pl. 275¹⁴

8. Pl. 202²⁶, Pl. 206⁷

9. Pl. 69²⁷

10. Pl. 233¹⁵

11. Pl. 117b⁵

of prosperity such as one would enjoy in the world of men or *deva* as *lū*, *cañcim nat cañcim mirabban cañcim* – the enjoyments of mankind, the enjoyments of *devolaka* and the enjoyments of *nirvana*. To attain this very great reward, the people believed that nothing was too great to sacrifice in support of the Religion and due to these good acts there are many pagodas, monasteries and other buildings in Burma. There were many important personalities among the monks of our period which will be dealt with in the next chapter.

CHAPTER VIII

SANGHĀ (Continued)

Of the important personalities among the monks of our period, the foremost is the Mahāthera Arahān who was reputed to have introduced the pure form of Buddhism into Upper Burma.¹ We do not know how much truth there is in the statement that he brought Theravāda Buddhism to Pagan nor how great was his influence over Aniruddha, who eventually conquered Lower Burma in A.D. 1057 simply because he wanted a few of the thirty sets of Tipiṭaka which Arahān assured him the King of Thaton had. According to the inscriptions of our period, he was the king's teacher throughout the reign of Thiuiñ Mañ. The great Shwezigon inscription² mentions that the king had a mahāthera as an adviser. It said:

A Lord Mahāthera, who possesses virtue, who is the charioteer, of the Law, King Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja shall make (his right-hand man), shall make (him) his spiritual teacher. In the presence of the Lord Mahāthera, abounding in virtue, who is the charioteer of the Law also, 'Together with my lord will I cleanse the religion of the Lord Buddha', thus shall King Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja say.³

The palace inscription identifies this mahāthera of King Thiuiñ Mañ as Arahān⁴ who had a following of 4108 monks. It is possible that this Arahān was the same as the Shin Arahān of the Chronicles. Through the initiative of Prince Rāj Kumār, the king made a death-bed gift⁵ in about A.D. 1113 and a mahāthera and six other dignitaries of the Order were present to witness it.⁶ If this mahāthera was our Arahān he would have been over seventy seven years old then.⁷ The chronicles maintain that he died after Cañsū I had suppressed a rebellion at Tenasserim but unfortunately we cannot fix the date for it.⁸ Anyhow it is certain

1. Hmannan paras. 131 & 133

2. Ep. Birm. I, ii, Old Mon Inscription I

3. Ibid., I B42-7

4. Ibid., III, i, XI A 6, 25, 55, 43, 45, D44, G21, 55, 41, 45

5. A death-bed gift in modern Burma is considered void. See O.H. Mootham: Burmese Buddhist Law (Oxford 1939), pp. 70, 135 and Sisir Chandra Lahiri: Principles of Modern Burmese Buddhist Law (Rangoon, 1930), pp. 248-53.

6. Ep. Birm. I, i, the Rāj Kumār inscription, Burmese text, lines 23-6

7. If we take A.D. 1056 as the year of his arrival at Pagan he would have been there for fifty seven years in A.D. 1113 and as no monk could be ordained under twenty, he was at least seventy seven years old then.

8. Hmannan para 141. How Dr N. Ray reaches the conclusion that Arahān died in about A.D. 1115 at the ripe age of eighty is a puzzle. (N. Ray: Theravāda Buddhism in Burma, p. 106). The reference he gives is no where to be found. Perhaps he takes the hint from Mr C. Duroiselle who says that in Lisī 227 inscription it is mentioned that "Narapatisithu, otherwise known as Alaungsithu, who ascended the throne in 1112, urged one of his ministers to build the (Nandamāññā) temple and the monastery close by; and that he, the king, sent Shin Arahān, the 'Talaing apostle of Pagan to Tenasserim' to collect relics to be enshrined in the new temple. Mr C. Duroiselle comments on this as follows: "Now, Shin Arahān began his work of evangelization in 1057; supposing him to have then been, at the lowest estimate, twenty years of age, he would, at that date of accession of Alaungsithu (1112), have been already seventyfive. So his mission to Tenasserim, an arduous journey at that time, cannot have been long after that. Hence the foundation of the Nandamāññā can be placed somewhere between 1112 and 1130 at the latest, allowing the venerable monk a span of life of about ninety-five years." Unfortunately the inscription quoted is dated A.D. 1248 and it clearly mentions that the mission under Arahān to Tenasserim was sent soon after 1248. Narapatisithu cannot be identified with Alaungsithu (Cañsū I) as many kings of Pagan were mentioned by that name in inscriptions and therefore it is highly objectionable to connect the Arahān of this inscription with our Arahān because even if he lived a very long life, we cannot expect him to live for over two hundred years. Nor can we deduce from that inscription that the Nandamāññā was built between A.D. 1112-30 although it was found near that pagoda. Even if we venture to attach the stone to the pagoda, all we can say is that the pagoda might have been built after A.D. 1248.

that one *mahāthera* called *Arahan* was the king's teacher during the reign of *Thiluin Mai*. But we know nothing about him from the preceding reign except for the story in the chronicles that it was he who brought the pure form of Buddhism to Pagan in *Aniruddha*'s time and that he died during *Cañsū* I's reign after that monarch had subdued the Tenasserim rebellion. According to the *Mhannan: Rājawayā*, the king appointed the elder son of *Cimñak Mai* to succeed *Arahan* as *Sāsanāpuñ* – the chief of the Religion.¹ Is the office of *Sāsanāpuñ* of our period the same as that of the Konbaung dynasty?²

In order to find out whether the office of *Sāsanāpuñ* or any other office similar to it existed we must scrutinise all mention of *mahāthera*, *sāṅghāthera* and *thera* in our inscriptions because there is no mention of *sāsanāpuñ* in all the available inscriptions of our period, although the *Mhannan Rājawayā* asserts that *Cañsū* I appointed an elder as *Sāsanāpuñ* to succeed *Arahan*. Undoubtedly there were *mañchāryā*³ or *rājaguru*⁴ – the teachers of the king but to be the king's teacher does not necessarily mean that such an elder was the head of the Order as *Sāsanāpuñ* was understood during the Konbaung dynasty. We find that the king's teacher would sometimes be addressed as *mahāthera*,⁵ *thera*⁶ or *skhī*⁷ but in matters of discipline among the Order, any elder well versed in the *Vinayapitaka* would be approached to intervene even though the king might have greatly desired that his teacher alone should have the final say. Even in the time of the Konbaung kings, some *thera* ridiculed the idea of appointing a *Sāsanāpuñ* or a commission of eight *Sudhammā Charātoau* to have jurisdiction in cases under *vinaya*.⁸ Although the king meant well, the monks did not need a king's sanction to enforce *vinaya* among themselves as it was by consent that they kept it.⁹ As mentioned above the King's teacher would be called a *mahāthera* but not all the *mahāthera* were king's teachers nor was there only one *mahāthera* or royal preceptor at a time. An old Mon inscription believed to be of *Thiluin Mai*'s reign mentions the existence of two *mahāthera*, one at Pagan and another at *Klok Sayon* and the latter informed the former of his good deeds done at his place of residence.¹⁰ In one instance the term *mahāthera* was applied to all the elders who lived in a monastery.¹¹ An inscription dated A.D. 1242 mentions two *mahāthera* and they were differentiated by the locality wherein they lived as *Muchuiwpuiw Mahāthi* and *Cañhan Mahāthi*.¹² In a list of witnesses to a dedication made by *Na Tuñ Pan*

1. *Mhannan* para. 141; *GPC*, p. 119

2. See note on Primate in G.E. Harvey: *History of Burma*, p. 326 and *Burma Under British Rule*, pp. 25-9.

3. Pl. 36¹⁰, Pl. 83¹⁸, Pl. 85², Pl. 139⁵, 24, Pl. 182a², Pl. 182b²¹, Pl. 191a⁹, 9, Pl. 2615¹, 54, Pl. 297²⁴, Pl. 378b⁹, 10, Pl. 581a¹⁷.

4. Pl. 31, Pl. 63², Pl. 191a⁹, Pl. 245a⁷, Pl. 272¹⁵, Pl. 274¹⁰, Pl. 2792⁰, Pl. 299⁸

5. Pl. 63², Pl. 139⁵, 24, Pl. 245a⁷, Pl. 2615¹, 54

6. Pl. 297²⁴, 27

7. Pl. 36¹⁰, Pl. 83¹⁸, Pl. 139⁵, 24, Pl. 182a², Pl. 2615¹, 54, Pl. 272¹⁵

8. See Ü: Sin: *Upamāsamūhagirakkama Kyam*: I, pp. 259-74

9. At the end of the ordination service the ordinand was instructed in the rudiments of the *vinaya* by the chairman of the assembly and an *upajjhāya*—tutor, was appointed to teach him the details later.

10. *Ep. Birm*, III, i, XI

11. Pl. 19a²⁰

12. Pl. 149¹⁰

Sāñ and wife in A.D. 1258 we find two monks who were both referred to as the king's teacher. As a general rule these lists give the names in order of importance and it is interesting to note that these two teachers of the king are preceded by a mahāthera. The list is as follows:

॥ krā pā sakā mlat so Mahāthi Uttamamati 1 yok// mani chryā Dhammarāc 1 yok//
mani chryā Pawaradhammarā jaguru 1 yok// Skhiñ Lhakanakkabram Chryā 1 yok//
Skhiñ Nā Surim Sāñ Chryā 1 yok// Bidarāc 1 yok// Kantaśmin 1 yok// Sukhamuin
Moggalān 1 yok// sukrywai. Nā Tuñ Bāñ Sāñ sā Nā Pa Nāy 1 yok// ni Nā Pa Nāy
1 yok// Nā Can Sāñ 1 yok // i mhyā so skhiñ takā tui, kā ariy aram yū ciy sate//
saksiy le phlac ciy sate//¹

Those who hear (and see this act of merit) are the Reverend Mahāthera Uttamamati, King's Teacher Dhammarāc, King's Teacher Pawaradhammarāja-guru, Teacher of Lord Lhakanakkabram, Teacher of Lord Nā Surim Sāñ, Bidarac, Kantaśmin, Moggalān the Wise, Nā Pa Nāy and Nā Can Sāñ. May these reverend lords take care of (my dedications). May they also bear witness to (my good deeds).

It was the same with the sāṅghāthera² and the thera³ who were mostly heads of monasteries but they did not possess any official status as in a hierarchy. Thus, there were many mahāthera, sāṅghāthera, thera and rājaguru at any one time and none of them had the same status as the Sāsanāpuṇi in later days. We have seen above⁴ that in disputes where both parties were not exclusively monks, the verdict of the lay court prevailed although a senior monk may express his view before the final judgement. But for cases which purely concerned the monks, an expert in the Vinayapiṭaka would be approached. A monk who is versed in the Vinayapiṭaka is popularly known as Vinayadhara or in its burmanised form as Wineñdhuir. There was one Wineñdhuir whose name appeared fairly frequently in the inscriptions of the 13th century.

It seems that the Reverend Wineñdhuir was the head of a great monastic establishment and had a great following. Members of the royal family and ministers were among his lay devotees. Asaṅkhyā the great minister of King Nātonmyā was one of them. He received from the king 700 pay of land as a reward for quelling a rebellion that broke out soon after the king's accession in A.D. 1211. From the 700 pay Asaṅkhyā gave 150 pay to the monastery of Skhiñ Wineñdhuir in A.D. 1216.⁵ This is the first mention we find of this reverend monk in the inscriptions of our period. Next he was mentioned as one of the witnesses to the dedication of 200 pay of land made by Lakkhanā Lakwoy, the hero of the Takoi battle in A.D. 1228.⁶ A queen, probably Phwā Jaw, Queen of Ngrasingha Uccanā, and her brother

1. Pl. 191a⁸⁻¹⁵

2. Pl. 22¹, Pl. 30a⁹, Pl. 53⁷, Pl. 60a¹², Pl. 79b⁹, Pl. 113⁵, Pl. 121b⁹, Pl. 127b⁸, Pl. 271¹⁵, 22, Pl. 280b¹², Pl. 329⁴, Pl. 373c⁶, Pl. 373d⁵, Pl. 381², 2, 3, 4, 4, 8, 8, 17, 56, Pl. 563a⁶, Pl. 594⁷

3. Pl. 129, Pl. 298, 1⁶, Pl. 732⁰, Pl. 852⁵, Pl. 94a¹⁴, Pl. 1022⁸, Pl. 105a⁵⁴, 35, Pl. 126b⁵, etc.

4. Pl. 421b^{18,19}

5. Pl. 422, Pl. 190a¹, 8, 24, 25, 30

6. Pl. 231b⁵

Samantakunitham also known as the maternal uncle of King *Uccanā*, were also devoted to the Reverend *Wineñdhut*. They in A.D. 1243 made a large addition of buildings to the monastery of the reverend monk, and among these new buildings were included a library, a lecture hall and twenty *cāsāñ kloñ* – probably residential quarters for the students.¹ This fact alone shows us that the monastic establishment of *Skhiñ Wineñdhuir* was a sort of university where hundreds of young monks flocked to learn most probably the *Vinayapitaka* on which he was considered an authority. In order that the monks of the establishment might get "the four necessities" with ease, the good donors gave 384 *pay* of cultivable land, 187 slaves, a garden, one hundred cattle and an elephant.² As a seat of learning would have required many copies of the *Tipiñaka*, extra copies were often added to the library of his monastery. An officer *Krañ Cañ* in A.D. 1221 gave him a copy of the *Tipiñaka*, ten slaves for the library staff and twenty *pay* of land for the maintenance of the library.³ The same inscription which records the above dedication also gives the names of two more donors who gave lands and slaves to his establishment. In 1234 *Nā Nōñ Sañ* gave fifty *pay* of land⁴ and in 1253 *Kañgapikram* gave 400 *pay* of land and ten slaves.⁵ Princess *Acaw Lat*, the wife of the minister *Jayyasadhiy* and the half-sister of King *Uccanā* was also devoted to the reverend monk. In A.D. 1261 she built a hollow-pagoda and *Skhiñ Wineñdhuir* headed the list of the eight names mentioned as reciters of the *paritta* when relics were enshrined in that pagoda.⁶ Four hundred and thirty five *pay* of land⁷ and sixty eight slaves⁸ were also dedicated. In the light of the above evidence we come to the conclusion that *Skhiñ Wineñdhuir* was a much respected *thera*, who devoted his time to learning and as his name implies, advocated orthodoxy, i.e., living strictly according to the rules of the *Vinaya*. He was already a famous *thera* with many devoted followers in A.D. 1216 and he was still a leading monk in A.D. 1261. In view of the fact that libraries, lecture halls and residential buildings for students were frequently added to his monastery and he was given lands and slaves for the maintenance of his establishment within this half century, we might credit him with being the leader of the orthodox group who tried to adhere strictly to the *Vinaya* and who maintained close contact with Ceylon. This leads us to consider in some detail the purification of the Order on Sinhalese lines which is said to have begun in about A.D. 1180. Pagan's dealings with Ceylon is as follows.

As regards contact with *Sinkhuih*⁹ or *Lañkā*¹⁰ (Ceylon), we will first mention all we know about it from the inscriptions of our period. The first reference made to Ceylon was in the *Dhammarājika* pagoda inscription which mentions that in A.D. 1197, King *Cañsū* II received four relics of the Lord Buddha from the king of *Sinkhuih* who had thirty. The king enshrined

1. Pl. 1521⁶

2. Pl. 1522⁸

3. Pl. 2481⁶

4. *Ibid* ⁶.¹⁰

5. *Ibid* ¹⁶.²¹

6. Pl. 200¹²

7. Pl. 2002⁰

8. Pl. 201a⁷

9. Pl. 19b¹, 2, Pl. 87¹⁵, Pl. 223a⁸, 12, Pl. 2502⁹, Pl. 2652⁰, Pl. 373⁹, 18, 19, Pl. 390⁵⁵, Pl. 431a⁷

10. Pl. 226¹, Pl. 302⁸, 14, 15, 16

them the next year in the Dhammarājika pagoda at West Pwazaw, Pagan.¹ As we have seen above Burma and Ceylon had had peaceful relations since the time of Aniruddha though they were broken off for a short while probably during the time of Imtaw Syān (?1162-5). He was also known as Kalakya – the king who fell at the hands of the Indians. His assassins came from Ceylon. Nevertheless, King Cañsū II must have successfully reestablished friendly relations with Ceylon as the gift of relics evidently bears witness to that effect. The Kalyāṇī inscription (1480) gives an account of a mission from Pagan to Ceylon in A.D. 1170.² The leader of the mission was said to be the king's teacher. Although it is not a contemporary account, it supports the statement that King Cañsū II tried to open relations with Ceylon and that he was successful. It also seems quite reasonable to think that the king's motives were largely religious in this affair. As we have seen above, there was Skhin Wineñdhuir with a large following at Pagan who advocated orthodoxy and purification of the Order on Sinhalese lines. Naturally these orthodox monks must have persuaded the king to send students to study in Ceylon and to invite Sinhalese teachers to come over and reside in Pagan. The Kalyāṇī inscription mentions that a monk named Chapata studied in Ceylon for ten years and came back to Pagan in A.D. 1180 with four learned Sinhalese monks.³ This is not impossible. An inscription dated A.D. 1233 mentions the presence of a teacher from Ceylon called Buddharanīśī⁴ who was then the head of a monastic establishment to which the donor gave land and slaves. Another inscription dated A.D. 1248 mentions educational mission to Ceylon probably between 1237 and 1248⁵ under the leadership of Dhammasiri and Subhūticanda.⁶ In an inscription dated A.D. 1268, a donor claimed that his deeds of merit were witnessed by all the Sinhalese monks.⁷ This evidently shows that not only teachers but also a considerable number of monks from Ceylon were settled in Central Burma. Ari Caw in A.D. 1274 narrated the story of the coming of Buddhism which shows good relationship with Ceylon and the people of Pagan were well acquainted with the Sinhalese chronicle Mahāyamīsa.⁸ In A.D. 1278, Dipankarā sent from Ceylon relics of the Lord to Reverend Tāmalīn⁹ who was the head of a big monastery supported by such important persons as Queen Sumiñlula's daughter Princess Acau and her uncle Lord Singasū. Probably he was also a teacher who came from Ceylon. He was one of the popular *thera* of King Tarukpli's reign. Thus briefly relations with Ceylon began with the reign of Aniruddha, were interrupted for short period during Imtaw Syān's reign and were reestablished from Cañsū II's time until the fall of the dynasty. During this second

1. Pl. 19b¹⁻²

2. T.S.Ko: *The Kalyāṇī Inscription*, pp. 50-2; *Ep. Birm*, III, ii, p. 188, n.5. *Hmannan* (para. 143, GPC, p.142) dates this mission in A.D. 1180.

3. The four were Sivali, Tamalinda, Ananda and Rāhula.

4. Pl. 373b⁹, 1⁸, 1⁹

5. The date of the mission is uncertain. But as these two monks were very popular at Pagan as Dhammasiri was mañchāryā – the teacher of the king (Pl.36¹¹) and mahāthera (Pl.297¹²), their names appeared frequently in the list of witnesses to dedications made at Pagan; and the name Dhammasiri being absent from the inscriptions after A.D. 1237 until A.D. 1248 suggests that he was abroad. Thus tentatively this mission to Ceylon is dated between 1237 and 1248.

6. Pl. 302

7. Pl. 233a⁸

8. Pl. 250²⁹

9. Pl. 265²⁰ (See also Pl. 227²¹, Pl. 266a⁵, Pl. 266b¹⁵, 50, 59, 45)

period religious missions were sent to Ceylon from Pagan which were most probably of the same nature as the mission of A.D. 1476 sent by King Dhammaceti of Pegu. Chronicles mention a mission from Pagan in A.D. 1170. In the inscriptions we find mention of a mission sent between 1237 and 1248 under the leadership of the King's Teacher *Dhammasiri* and *Subhūticanda*. Probably such missions took with them young monks to remain in Ceylon for study and brought back some learned *thera* from Ceylon to reside at Pagan. As a result, the monks educated in Ceylon, monks who received education from Sinhalese *thera* at Pagan and *thera* of Pagan who agreed with the Sinhalese advocated purification of the Order on Sinhalese lines. Nevertheless, we must bear in mind that there was also another group of monks who were not so eager for reforms. They were known as 'forest-dwellers'.

Monks of the *taw kloñ* - forest monasteries, belonged to the group who were not so eager for reforms, or in other words who allowed certain lapses in the observance of the *Vinaya*. The *Vinaya* requires these *Āraññavāsi* to observe three restrictions, viz., that a forest dweller must enter a village "properly clad"; that he must keep in his abode drinking water, fire, firewood and walking staff; that he must learn the positions of the lunar mansions and must become skilled in the quarters (i.e. in the four parts of the day).¹ As the practice of *āraññakañgam* is one of the thirteen *Dhugngam*, it is not a compulsory practice for all the monks, but it seems that from the time of *Nāroñayā* until the fall of the empire, this practice became very popular so that many donors began to build *taw kloñ*² or *araññavāsi taw kloñ*³ and the dwellers in such places became almost a different sect of the Order. Originally a monk went out alone into the forest withdrawing himself from the communal life of the monks in a monastery to practice *āraññakañgam* but this original idea of a lonely monk as a forest recluse was much modified. Big monastic establishments called *taw kloñ* appeared with hundreds of monks living in them under *taw mlat kri*⁴ - the Most Reverend Lords of the Forest. In an inscription dated A.D. 1216, a queen's mother built a forest monastery at the Reverend *Yāntaw*'s establishment and dedicated seventy *pay* of land and twenty slaves.⁵ *Rājamahāñkalapati* built a hollow pagoda at the forest monastery to the east of *Prasatā* (at Minnanthu) in A.D. 1233.⁶ *Jeyyapwat* established a forest monastery (at Pwazaw) in A.D. and dedicated a large number of Burmese slaves⁷ and in the next year he again dedicated 750 *pay* of land.⁸ We have seen how the monks had protested and won against King *Klaçwā* when he took the above lands as a sequel to his confiscation of religious lands after his accession. Minnathu⁹ and Pwazaw¹⁰ to the east of Pagan and Myinmu¹¹ and Anein¹² in *Thanywa* district were the centres of these forest monasteries. They were not confined to the forest areas alone. Some of them appeared even in the capital city of Pagan.¹³ As mentioned

1. *Vinaya Culivagga* VIII, I.B. Horner : *The Book of Discipline* V, p. 305

2. Pl. 44a⁵, Pl. 682, Pl. 891¹³, Pl. 90, 15, 17, 18, 25, 28, Pl. 123¹⁵, 16, Pl. 132a², Pl. 140a², Pl. 143a⁷, Pl. 143b⁵, Pl. 145¹⁰, 25, Pl. 147a⁸, Pl. 147b⁷, Pl. 153b⁴, 8, Pl. 160b²³, Pl. 163¹³, 15, Pl. 215a⁵, Pl. 226⁷, Pl. 246¹⁵, Pl. 268¹⁶, Pl. 296², Pl. 297²⁵, 52, Pl. 4172², Pl. 567a¹, Pl. 582a²

3. Pl. 463c⁵

4. Pl. 2081⁷, Pl. 223a⁸

5. Pl. 44a³, 12

6. Pl. 58²

7. Pl. 39¹

8. Pl. 2012, 14

9. Pl. 682, Pl. 132a² (*Carapilhe*), Pl. 163¹³ (*Krak An*). This Minnathu is the same as *Sacmait* or *Thamaihiti*, the stronghold of the Ari mentioned in the chronicles.

10. Pl. 89, Pl. 90

11. Pl. 123¹⁶

12. Pl. 296, Pl. 297

13. Pl. 163

above, we find that these so-called forest-dwellers were not practising *āraññakañgam* as their name suggests. They lived in big monasteries and had big estates in support of their establishments. The way they enlarged their estates and their connivance at the drinking of intoxicants were by no means in keeping with the Vinaya.

The forest monasteries, like other monasteries received enormous gifts of land from lay devotees, but they added to it by purchase. An inscription¹ dated A.D. 1248 gives a series of such purchases for the forest monastery of *Mahākassapa*. In A.D. 1242, 330 *pay*² at *Riruiñruin* were purchased in A.D. 1242 for 700 ticals of silver, i.e. a little over two ticals per *pay*.³ Eightynine *pay* at *Sainton* and fifty five *pay* at *Mlaçca* (both in Kyaukse district) were bought at fifteen ticals of silver per *pay* in A.D. 1244. Two years later, 3332 *pay* at *Thipesyan* (Shwebo district) belonging to the *Saw Kantū* people were bought at a tical per *pay*. Another 1010 *pay* from the same people were also bought at the same price. A hundred viss of copper was the price for another 500 *pay*. In A.D. 1248, 1000 *pay* at *Ploñpla* were bought at two ticals per *pay*. This inscription also records that the monastery received many more thousands of *pay* from various donors. When the Reverend *Cantimā* bought some land (the exact acreage is not given) in A.D. 1249 the price was :

*khwak 50 nwā lā tc phag sā nwā lā khufse khunhac lurnāñawat phyañ nā dhanā lhware sate!*⁴

fifty (viss of) copper, (only) one (from a pair of) yoke bullocks, one ox (for beef, seven pots of liquor and five pieces of cloth.

It seems that both parties to the transaction or at least the buyers of the land sat down to a feast when the business was over. The feast for which one whole ox and seven pots of liquor were reserved must have been a fairly big one. Probably the feast was in proportion to the importance of the transaction; because when two monks of *Mahākassapa*'s establishment bought fifty *pay* of land, they spent only five and a half viss of copper for *siy phuiw sā phuiw*⁵ – the price of liquor and the price of meat. This practise of feasting at the end of a transaction became popular from the middle of the 13th century onwards. It became increasingly so after the fall of Pagan until about A.D. 1500.⁶ For example, in A.D. 1269 when *Naraseñkram* bought lands from *Pyarikla Nā Luñ Sāi*, *Guñasiddhi* and *Nā Yon Sāi* it was recorded at the end of the transaction as :

*|| ī suiw Pyarikla tuiw kuiw mliy phuiw piy so akha le samipyān kalan su khapāñ sa tuiw kuiw lhyāñ asi amrañ hū ruy ut talā kan puñ thok nwā lā sāi 1 koñ siy uñw khak 10 cā sok piy e, || thuiw rhaw akhā cā sek so sā kā Prañ Khwanā 1 yok || Nā Cantī 1 yok || Nā Cantī sā Nā Khan Pha 1 yok || Nā Krami Sāi sā okri añai cum Saw akri añai aluri hi kun, e||*⁷

When *Pyarikla* and party were given the price of the land, all the hearing and seeing (i.e. witnessing) *samipyān* and *kalan* (were given a feast) by the side of the brick trough of the reservoir where a gelded bull and ten pots of liquor were eaten and drunk. Among those who ate and drunk were present *Prañ Khwanā*, *Nā Cantī*, *Nā Khai Pha* son of *Nā Cantī*, both elder and younger sons of *Nā Krami Sāi* and all *Saw* old and young.

1. Pl. 162-3

2. Prices of land in *khauñin* areas, i.e. in Kyaukse district, were as high as 20 ticals of silver or 8 viss of copper per *pay*. In *tuik* areas, i.e. outlying districts like Shwebo and Chindwin the price was as low as 1 tical of silver or $\frac{1}{2}$ a viss of copper per *pay*. The average was about 8 to 10 ticals of silver or 2 to 3 viss of copper per *pay*.

3. Pl. 380⁶.

4. Pl. 224^{10.11}.

5. See Than Tun: "Mahākassapa and his Tradition", *JBRS*, XLII, ii, 99-118

6. Pl. 395^{16.10}

Even when a *pay* of land was bought (in A.D. 1270), the price included a pot of liquor and money for meat.¹ In A.D. 1277, the trustees of the Minnanthu monastery dedicated by Minwaing *Phwā Jāauw*, queen-grandmother of Tarukply bought one thousand *pay* of land from the *Saw* (*Sāaw*). Expenses incurred including *thamāh phuiw sīy phuiw sā phuiw* – the price of cocked rice, the price of liquor, the price of meat given in a feast to the *Sāaw* was fifty four ticals of silver.² Thus, the “forest dwellers” enlarged their estates by buying up land especially in Shwebo district where the prices were low. To mark the successful end of their transactions, they gave feasts where intoxicating drinks were amply served. This sort of feast became fairly widespread towards the end of the dynasty. Among these forest-dwellers the most frequently mentioned *thera* was *Mahākassapa* who perhaps was the leader of this new group in the Order.

Mahākassapa was first mentioned in an inscription dated A.D. 1225 when he received the dedication of land, slaves and cattle made by King *Nātoinmyā* and his sister *Mañ Lha*.³ *Mahākassapa* was then already a famous *thera* at Myinmu in Monywa district. Perhaps Myinmu was then the centre of these “forest-dwellers” and *Mahākassapa* was their leader on account of whose venerableness they received much support from important people of the period. *Mahākassapa*’s attempt to open a branch of his monastery at the capital city of Pagan, was successful because in A.D. 1233 a forest monastery was built at Minnanthu, and another in A.D. 1236 at Pwazaw, both on the eastern side of Pagan. By A.D. 1237, *Mahākassapa*’s name was mentioned side by side with two other prominent *thera* of the city as witnesses to a dedication by *Mahāsaman*, an important minister of the time.⁴ The two *thera* were *Dhammasiri* and *Subhūticanda* who were probably away in Ceylon between 1237 and 1248. As these two *thera* undoubtedly desired the purification of the Order on Sinhalese lines, it is most probable that they were much alarmed at the appearance of *Mahākassapa* and his new school at the capital and so hastened to Ceylon for inspiration and help.⁵ An inscription dated A.D. 1242 found among the old pagodas south of Kumb in Kyaukse district contains evidence of further activities of *Mahākassapa*.⁶ It said that he established a monastery there. Perhaps he was able to extend his influence to the most prosperous area of the Pagan empire while his two rivals were away in Ceylon. In the meanwhile, he was able to enlist the support of Prince *Kākāsū*, half brother of *Nātoinmyā*. On the death of the prince his wife added a building in memory of her beloved husband to his establishment at Minanthu.⁷ According to *Puul sukri* (? General) *Sattyā*’s inscription (A.D. 1244) which records the construction of a monastery, a hollow pagoda and a sitting image of the Buddha four cubits high, the *Mahākassapa* establishment was located just outside *arhiy prāñ takhā*⁸ – the Eastern Gate of the City. In that establishment, the Most Reverend *Mahākassapa* used the monastery built by Princess *Mañ Lha*⁹ as his residence. It

1. Pl. 231a⁵

2. Pl. 268⁶

3. Pl. 123^{5, 6, 7, 12}

4. Pl. 102⁸

5. Pl. 302

6. Pl. 140a²

7. Pl. 143a^{6, 7}, Pl. 145¹⁰, Pl. 147a⁷

8. Pl. 153a^{2, 3}

9. Pl. 162²

was in that year A.D.1244 that *Mahākassapa* had a land dispute with the *Cakraw* of the Frontier Guard at *Chiptoṇi*² (?) on the north east of *Kyaukse* district). The land originally belonged to *Saṅkrammasū*, the grandfather of *Mahākassapa*. We have shown above that from A.D.1248, *Mahākassapa* began to buy thousands of *pay* of land mostly in *Shwebo* and *Chindwin* districts. His organization was new and therefore he probably must have felt that it needed the support of a landed interest although he received many gifts of land during the years A.D.1247-83 and A.D.1272.⁴ It seems that he died between A.D.1272 and A.D.1278. After 1272 the name *Mahākassapa* was used only to denote his establishment⁵ and in 1278 there was a new *thera* at his establishment although his name is not mentioned.⁶ Thus the life of *Mahākassapa* from the time when he was already a famous *thera* in the *tuik* - outlying districts of *Chindwin* in about A.D. 1225 to his growing popularity in *kharuin* - the central districts of *Kyaukse*, *Myingyan* and *Minbu* in about A.D. 1235-40 till his death between A.D. 1272-8, clearly shows us how the forest-dwellers grew in number and popularity to such dimensions as to be considered a major force almost equal in strength to the *orthodox* group who at that time fervently tried to maintain their ground with help from Ceylon. It took two more centuries to have a clear cut answer in favour of orthodoxy. Although the evidence is meagre it is possible to connect these *āraññavāsi* or forest-dwellers under *Mahākassapa* who bought land in outlying districts to strengthen their position and who accepted for themselves *yanimakā aphyaw*⁷ - a sweet liquor from palm juice, and allowed their devotees to indulge in grand feasts where liquor and meat were plentiful, with *Araññ* or *Ati* of whom the chronicles thought poorly.

We will first of all deal with the epigraphic evidence concerning *Araññ*. In an inscription dated A.D. 1213 a donor records his deeds of merit as follows:

॥sapit 100 thaññ, ruy, thmaññ thak plaññ thaññ, ruy, Araññ ā lhū e, //
ruy purhā le saññ Araññ tuiw, rhiy, khuiw ciy hū ruy piy luik e, //
riy twanī 1 khu thi e, //
kauññū e, //
kathuin pac e, //
paññakū achū 10 piy e, //
sā rahan mū e taryā ù nā e, //⁸

One hundred almsbowls filled with cooked rice full to the brim were given to the *Araññ*. A silver image of the Lord was also given to the reverend *Araññ* to worship. One well was (dug). One tank was (made). *Kathina* (robe) was given. Ten *paññakū* (robes) were also (given). My son was ordained a monk. We listened to the First Sermon (*Dhammasakku*).

This is the earliest mention of the *Araññ* in the inscriptions and unfortunately this extract gives no information as to their beliefs and practices. Another inscription mentions that two *Araññ* called *Na Cuik Saññ* and *Na Caññ Saññ* quarrelled for ownership of land in A.D.

1. Pl. 162²

2. Pl. 165³⁻¹⁰. See also *JBRSS*, XLII, i, p. 61, n. 71.

3. Pl. 163

4. Pl. 424⁵⁵

5. Pl. 203², Pl. 224¹², Pl. 277²

6. Pl. 277²

7. Pl. 233¹⁴

8. Pl. 404⁸

122v.¹ That some five *pay* of land at Myingontaing in Kyaukse district were bought with the permission of an *Araññi* who was also a judge of theft cases is recorded in an inscription dated A.D. 1273.² We also find one *Araññi* to be the father of a *Pagan* slave in an inscription dated A.D. 1273³ and that *Araññi Picañi*'s brother-in-law was a headman in Shwebo district in another inscription of A.D. 1280.⁴ This is all we know about the *Araññi*. Anyhow it supports the theory that the *Araññi* or *Araññavāsi taau kloñi*⁵ monks appeared in the early decades of the 13th century in such places as *Pagan* and *Shwebo* and *Kyaukse* districts. Burma was not alone in having these *Araññavāsi* monks during the 13th and 14th centuries. Inscriptions of *Rāma Gamhēn* (A.D. 1298) and *Vat Pā Tēn* (A.D. 1406) bear witness to the existence of *araññavāsi* monks during those centuries at *Sukhodaya* (Siam) too.⁶

According to the chronicles, the *Ari* were in existence in the 10th and 11th centuries at *Pagan* and were non-Buddhists. Various theories have been proposed as to their origin. Some connected them with *Tāntric Buddhism*⁷ on the strength of finding some wall paintings at *Abhayaratana* temple (*Myinpagan*)⁸, *Bhurāsurinchū* and *Nandamāññā* temples (*Minnanthu*) and held that "the character of all these paintings tallies exactly with oral tradition...about the *Ari* practices." Professor C. Duroiselle uses an inscription⁹ found near *Nandamāññā* temple to illustrate the above statement. The inscription is dated A.D. 1248 and it mentions that the monks were provided with fermented spirits and morning and evening meals. On this evidence alone we are more inclined to say that the *Ari* existed not in the 11th but in the 13th century. Although these *Ari* allowed certain lapses in the *Vinaya*, they were definitely not as debased as the chronicles allege. We find no evidence of anything unusual in their practices that the orthodox monks would not have done in those days except that they allowed some *drunks* at their feasts. Therefore it is very doubtful that the wall paintings mentioned above have anything to do with the *Ari* and "it seems unnecessary to search in India for the explanation of young Burman heresy."¹⁰ The derivation of the word *Ari* offers another problem. *Pagan* U Tin connected *Ari* with *ariya* and therefore is of opinion that *Ari* is the general name for all monks and C. Duroiselle adopted this view.¹¹ Dr Ba Han supported them.¹² Professor P. M. Tin contradicted them by connecting *Ari* with *araññīka* (forest-dweller).¹³ As we have noticed above, old Burmans used *ariya* in its complete form and therefore *Ari* is not the short form of *ariya*. It is more likely that it has been shortened from *araññīka*. But old Burmans were

1. PI. 54² (and duplicate PI. 371b⁵)

2. PI. 241², 4

3. PI. 250²

4. PI. 264⁹

5. PI. 465a³

6. See G. Coedès: *Recueil de Inscriptions du Siam I, (Inscriptions de Sukhodaya)*, (Bangkok, 1924) pp. 46, 131-9. Professors G. H. Luce & P. M. Tin call attention to the point that the *Vat Pā Tēn* inscription uses *Culassakkaraja* (which is the same as the Burmans used) from 705 (A.D. 1343) to 768 (A.D. 1406) and this corrects the view taken by W. A. R. Wood in *A History of Siam*, p. 127 that *Culassakkaraja* was introduced by the Burmese after the fall of *Ayuthia* in 1569 and that the legend of it being used from time of *Ramkhamheng* is unworthy of serious consideration.

7. See C. Duroiselle: "The *Ari* of Burma and *Tantric Buddhism*", *ASI*, 1915-16, pp. 79-93

8. See U Mya: "Wall Paintings of the *Abeyadana* Temple", *ASI*, 1930-4, pp. 181-4.

9. *List 277, PPA*, 250, *TN*, 114-16; see also G. E. Harvey: *Burma*, p. 60

10. G. H. Luce & P. M. Tin: "Burma Down to the Fall of *Pagan*", *JBRS*, XXIX, iii, p. 273

11. *JBRS*, X, i, pp. 28-30 & iii, pp. 158-9

12. *JBRS*, X, iii, p. 160

13. *JBRS*, IX, iii, pp. 155-6, X, ii, pp. 82-3

in favour of using *taw kloñ* than *grañ* to signify forest-dwellers. We consider that the Ari of the chronicles are the *araññavasi* or *taw kloñ* monks of the 13th century and therefore misplaced by the chroniclers in the 10th century. They were by no means depraved. We have followed the rise and spread of this new group of the Order through out the life of *Mahākassapa* who seems to have been their leader and possibly the founder. Another aspect of the Order which is quite different from the Order in modern Burma, is the presence of *bhikkhūñi*.

The Order in Burma to-day allows no woman in it and tradition says that this begun from A.D.456 but the inscriptions of our period yield some evidence on the strength of which it is possible to revise the above tradition. Female ascetics in the Order were called *bhikkhūñi* and we find the mention of *bhikkhūñi* among the lists of slaves in two inscriptions dated A.D.1236.¹ The only reason for their presence among the slaves must have been because they were born of slave parents and though their masters had been kind enough to allow them to be ordained they would become slaves again if and when they left the Order. Very often, we find monks called by their lay names. If it is a *bhikkhūñi* she would in some cases be called by her lay name with a prefix *Uiw* or its variants *Uih*, *Uin*, *Uim*, *Ui* and *I*. In an inscription dated A.D. 1196 among the names of five church dignitaries as witnesses to a dedication we find the name of the Reverend *Uiw Pāñi* – the *bhikkhūñi* which comes second.² One inscription from Pin Sekkalampa, near Yenangyaung, Magwe district, mentions that a *Sāṅghathera* *Uiw Kram San* dedicated some slaves to the pagoda in A.D. 1215.³ As an elder among the monks would be addressed *phun mlat so*⁴ – the most reverend, so we find a *bhikkhūñi* addressed as *phun mlat so Uih Tāñ San*.⁵ There was also *phun mlat so Uiw Chi Tāw*⁶ who must have been quite a popular *bhikkhūñi*. When Princess *Acaw Lat* in A.D.1261 built a hollow pagoda and enshrined relics in it eight church dignitaries were present to recite the *paritta* and *Ui*, *Chi Tāw* was among them.⁷ Perhaps it was this *Ui Chi Tāw* who was mentioned in A.D.1279 as the head of a monastery where a certain land transaction was made.⁸ Such names as *Lumiphani* and *Brahmacari* as two witnesses to a dedication in A.D.1266 also suggests that they were *bhikkhūñi*.⁹ Another interesting piece of evidence is that in an inscription dated A.D.1267, a female donor mentions certain lands as

na pha *Klacwā* māñkri na kuiw rahan mā pe so akhā nhuik pe so *lay*||9

These lands were given to me by my father the great king *Klacwā* when he (allowed me to enter) the Order.

This donor perhaps quitted the Order and got married after which she made a series of dedications including the above lands. On the reverse face of the inscription she said: "After having painted the hollow pagoda my *lan* māñsā – husband the Prince,

1. Pl.8927, Pl. 92¹⁴

2. Pl. 576a⁷

3. Pl. 119a²⁻³

4. Pl. 559a¹⁴

5. Pl. 297, 19-19. See *JBRs*, XXV, iii, pp.151-2

6. Pl. 200¹⁴

7. Pl. 268¹⁶. The phrase *ui*, *chi* *tāw kloñ* here can be interpreted either as *Ui Chi Tāw*'s monastery or *Ui Chi*'s forest monastery. Whatever the interpretation it seems that the monastery was under *bhikkhūñi* head.

8. Pl. 214b⁹

9. Pl. 220⁹

dedicated the following slaves."¹ This strongly suggests that the donor was a daughter of King Klacwā who was once a bhikkhuni. Thus although the tradition says that there were no bhikkhuni since A.D. 456, we have evidences of their presence even in the latter half of the 13th century. It is a pity that modern Burmans are not as liberal minded as their ancestors of Pagan.² The last important personality among the monks of our period is Syan Disāprāmuk who went to China on a peace mission in A.D. 1275.

When we discussed the Mongol invasion of the 13th century, we mentioned that Disāprāmuk rendered his king and country important service by going over to Peking as an ambassador from Tarukpily and successfully persuading the Great Khan to withdraw his forces from Burma. In token of gratitude the king gave him eight hundred pay of land (four hundred at Hanlōn and another four hundred at Kramti) together with slaves and cattle. All these lands, slaves and cattle, Disāprāmuk dedicated to Panpat rap ceti—the pagoda at the Turner's Quarter (Mingalizedi). Then he built a great archway to the shrine. He also built a cāseautuik-school building, which was left unfinished, probably due to the growing political troubles of the time. But the good monk was optimistic. He said that his relatives might be able to finish it with the timber he had got from the queen and other miscellaneous gifts from various donors. As regards his mission to China, it is the first known instance of a Buddhist monk in Burma taking a serious interest in politics. The general attitude was to remain aloof from the political sphere. But as his intervention was in the name of peace, to avert unnecessary bloodshed, and to put a stop to a war, it is possible that his colleagues did not have any serious objection to his "meddling" in politics, which was not the business of a monk. His mission was a diplomatic success although short-lived, as further negotiations with China broke down on the assassination of Tarukpily. Later kings of Burma often sent monks on peace missions, but we must remember that Disāprāmuk was one of the very first in this field.

In conclusion, we have seen that the Order in our period was divided into two camps, and that they existed side by side in peace. There were also bhikkhuni right down to the end of the empire. Of the aforesaid two camps the first was for orthodoxy and wanted the purification of the Order on Sinhalese lines, the second was that of the araññavasi who allowed certain lapses in the Vinaya. In spite of the first group's endeavour to counteract the growing popularity of the latter, by sending missions and study groups to Ceylon, and bringing back Sinhalese thera and monks to Pagan, we find that the araññavasi had a great deal of popular support. Perhaps it was so because they represented indigenous thought appealing direct to Burmese nationalism or perhaps their tenets were easier to follow.

1. Pl. 221²⁷

2. See Ādiccavāraṇa: Bhikkhunisāscnopadesa (A Treatise on Why the Order of Bhikkhuni should be Revived.) The author was excommunicated for advocating the cause of the bhikkhuni in 1935.

CHAPTER IX

RELIGIOUS BUILDINGS

THE OLD BURMANS were zealous supporters of the Religion who spent lavishly on the construction and maintenance of various types of religious edifices. When these buildings were completed money, land, cattle and slaves were given for their support. Many interesting accounts of Pagan architecture have been written¹, so our primary concern here is to give the story of these constructions.

A suitable site was selected and the first measure was to put up *tantuin*—an enclosure wall. A donor in A.D. 1192 selected a site just beside a reservoir at Amana and enclosed it with *ut ti plu so tantuin*²—a wall entirely of bricks, for the construction of a big and pleasant monastery. Another donor spent 10,000 ticals of silver on building a monastery, a hollow pagoda and a wall around them³. An inscription of A.D. 1248 mentions that the wall alone cost a total of 432⁴ ticals of silver.⁴ It must have been a fairly large enclosure wall as the establishment contained two monasteries, a library and a hollow-pagoda with four entrances. Some of the enclosure walls were circular⁵ but usually they were rectangular or square as they are referred to as *tantuin 4 myaknha*⁶—four sided walls, complete with *tanakhā muk* doors and gateways.⁷ These enclosures were necessary not only to distinguish the holy place from its surroundings but also to protect the buildings from fire. A donor in A.D. 1262 called his enclosure *tantuin mikā*⁸—a fire-proof wall. Perhaps this was because he saw the whole city of Pagan burnt to ashes in A.D. 1225.⁹ Therefore when he founded an establishment he felt that it ought to have adequate protection from fire. Some donors built *tantuin nhac thap*¹⁰—double enclosures. The inner one was for shrines and the outer one was usually for monasteries. In one case as much as twenty houses were built for students.¹¹ Sometimes a bauyan tree grown from a seed imported from Bodh Gaya would also be enclosed by a magnificent wall.¹² There were also walls made of stone.¹³

1. A few of them are: G. H. Luce: "The Greater Temples of Rangoon", *BRSFAP*, II, 169-78; "The Smaller Temples of Pagan", *BRSFAP*, II, 179-90; W. B. Sinclair: "Monasteries of Pagan", *BRSFAP*, II, 505-16.

2. Pl. 12⁵, Pl. 737, Pl. 194⁷, Pl. 220⁸, Pl. 232³, Pl. 234⁴, Pl. 247⁴, Pl. 249¹¹, Pl. 390⁹

3. Pl. 181⁵

4. Pl. 164⁴²-45

5. Pl. 69⁷

6. Pl. 390⁹, Pl. 423⁹

7. Pl. 205²

8. Pl. 122a²

9. Pl. 734, Pl. 152⁵, Pl. 194⁴, Pl. 283⁶, Pl. 390¹⁴-15

10. Pl. 152⁵

11. Pl. 232³

12. Pl. 390⁹

Within the wall *caṇkrāṇī* - a platform, was made. Most often it was the foundation of a hollow - or solid-pagoda although there were exceptions when it was merely a promenade adjoining a monastery. Walking seems to be the only form of physical exercise befitting a gentle monk². In A.D. 1236 when *Asawat*'s wife made a platform adjoining her monastery she enumerated the cost as follows: bricks from two kilns of 60 ticals of silver, cartage 22 ticals, bringing in the timber, probably for the roofing, 6 ticals.³ We have seven instances⁴ where it is mentioned that the platform of the hollow-pagoda was made in the shape of a *kalāsa* pot. Perhaps this refers to the plinth at the base of the platform.

A *kū* was built on such a platform. The word *kū* is clearly from Pali *guha*-a *cave* and therefore it is a hollow-pagoda made in imitation of a natural cave. Some *kū* had four gateways and thus acquired the name of *kū a myaknhdā*⁵. Inside a four sided *kū* there were always four images of the *Lords*⁶ placed back to back in the centre, representing the four Buddhas of this present *kappa*. The centre block around which the images were placed was the *relic* chamber where *saṇīradhātu*⁷ - the bodily relics, were enshrined. The walls of the *kū* would be painted either with *khlyu pan*⁸ - floral designs or *charipu*⁹ - pictures of the Lord. In one case as many as 14619 were painted.¹⁰ Some had scenes from the *Jātaka*.¹¹ A *kū* thus painted would be known as *kū prok*¹² - variegated cave. *Athwat* - the spires of these *kū*, were usually made of copper¹³ weighing from about forty viss¹⁴ to one hundred and thirty¹⁵ and were gilded.¹⁶ Above the *athwat* there was the *thi* - umbrella, sometimes made of gold and studded with precious gems.¹⁷

Ceti is another type of pagoda but unlike the *kū* it is solid in structure. To build a *Ceti* firstly a platform had to be made in much the same manner as for erecting a *kū*. One had the plinth in the form of a *kalasa* pot.¹⁸ The following extract from an inscription dated A.D. 1227 gives us a rough idea of what sort of relics were enshrined in a *Ceti*.

1. Pl. 73⁸, etc.
2. Pl. 972², Pl. 102⁸, Pl. 126b⁴, Pl. 152⁵
3. Pl. 972²3
4. Pl. 73⁵, Pl. 80⁷, Pl. 194⁷, Pl. 220⁶, Pl. 234⁸, Pl. 247⁸, Pl. 249¹⁶. See also Daw Mya Mu: "The Kalasa Pot", *JBR*, XXII, ii, pp. 97-8
5. Pl. 50⁷, 14
6. Pl. 275²⁰, Pl. 423⁸, 29, 49
7. Pl. 17⁶, Pl. 196²,⁵ Pl. 73⁸, Pl. 78b⁷, Pl. 30¹⁰,¹² Pl. 191b¹¹, Pl. 194⁸, Pl. 249¹⁷, Pl. 265²⁰, Pl. 279¹,⁶,⁷ Pl. 308²¹, Pl. 381¹⁷,¹⁸,²⁹, Pl. 390¹⁰
8. Pl. 221²⁶
9. Pl. 73¹⁵, Pl. 80¹⁵, Pl. 194¹¹,¹², Pl. 238⁸, Pl. 364¹⁶
10. Pl. 105a⁷
11. Pl. 194¹⁵, Pl. 248¹⁷
12. Pl. 218a¹¹
13. Pl. 80¹⁷, Pl. 97¹², etc.
14. Pl. 73¹⁸, Pl. 80¹⁷
15. Pl. 194¹⁵
16. Pl. 105a¹⁰, Pl. 194¹³, Pl. 249²¹, etc.
17. Pl. 73¹²
18. Pl. 80⁸

||jeti dhāpanā so akhā kā //|| Sakarac 589 khu Māgha samiawacchuir // Plasuiw la chan 14 ryak Puttahū niy, ā // purhā skhiñ sarīradhat̄ taw // ūn̄ taw akhak nhañ plu so purhā // rhuy rāñ swan so purhā // ūuy rāñ swan so purhā // phan plu so purhā // chan̄ cway amrutiy plu so purhā // tāncikū plu so purhā // iy mhyā so dhat̄ tāw // chan̄pū taw khapsim so kuiw // rhuy camakhan ūuy camakhan le khāñ luik e, // rhuy thiñ ūuy thiñ le choñ luik e, // rhuy pok 2 ūuy pok 2 // rhuy tanchoñ ūuy tanchoñ tuiw phlañ le pucaw luik e, // ūy siuw so ratanā phlañ dhamanā ruy ut nhañ phway e, // phway pri so kā añkatiy nhañ rup nat athū¹ 2 saphlañ achan akray plue e, //.

On Wednesday 22 Dec. 1227, (the following) are enshrined in the *cetiya*: the bodily relics of the Lord; the image of the Lord made from the branch of the sacred banyan tree; the image of the Lord cast in silver; the image of the Lord made of crystal; the image of the Lord made of ivory bezoar; and the image of the Lord made of sandal-wood. (Underneath) all these relics and images are spread gold cushions and silver cushions and images are topped with gold umbrellas and silver umbrellas. Perched rice of gold, parched rice of silver, gold chandeliers and silver chandeliers are also offered. When these gems are enshrined, the (relic chamber) is closed with bricks. After this wonderful and magnificent figures of *deva* and various beings are made with stucco.

Another form of pagoda is *puthuiw*.² From such information as we have from the inscriptions, it is very difficult to state the difference in shape or style between *ceti* and *puthuiw*. It was also a solid pagoda with the same form of spire as *kū*. The term *puthuiw* is also used for miniature pagodas for enshrinement, made of gold, silver, ivory, sandalwood, etc.³ We also find mention of *puthuiw* ⁿⁱ⁴ – the red pagoda and *puthuiw* *prok*⁵ – the variegated pagoda. These names imply that these pagodas were painted either in one colour or in many colours. They were not entirely white or gold as a modern pagoda.

The houses for the monks were called *kloñ* and if it was built of brick it was known as *kulā kloñ*⁶ – the Indian monastery. Most of the monasteries however were built of wood with *sac* *ñay* *muw*⁷ – thatch roof or *mwan* *khoñ* *ta cwan*⁸ – high and grand roof. In some cases the monastery would be profusely decorated and painted so that it would be known by the name of *kloñ prok*⁹ – the variegated monastery or *panpu* *kloñ*¹⁰ – monastery with wood

1. Pl. 80⁹–17

2. Pl. 8b⁴, Pl. 9¹¹, Pl. 19a²¹, etc.

3. Pl. 30⁸–9

4. Pl. 389a⁵

5. Pl. 377b⁴

6. Pl. 64⁸, Pl. 972²²,²⁵,²⁶, Pl. 132b¹⁴,¹⁵, Pl. 164⁸,⁴¹,⁴⁵, Pl. 187², Pl. 194¹⁶, Pl. 197⁴,⁷, Pl. 198⁶, Pl. 205⁵, Pl. 212²,¹⁴, Pl. 222a¹⁰, Pl. 234⁸,¹⁶, Pl. 247¹⁰, Pl. 248¹⁵, Pl. 256², Pl. 265¹⁷,³⁸, Pl. 266b⁵,¹⁴, Pl. 277¹⁰, Pl. 283⁶, Pl. 288⁵, Pl. 380¹⁸, Pl. 382⁵, Pl. 389c⁵, Pl. 395¹⁹, Pl. 428², Pl. 563a⁸, Pl. 581b⁷. For ground plans of these brick monasteries see W.B. Sinclair: "Monasteries of Pagan", BRSFAP, II, 505–16.

7. Pl. 428²

8. Pl. 390¹². See also Pl. 205⁵, Pl. 285⁵

9. Pl. 60b²

17 U.P. Q. 144-1000-23-8.78.

carvings. The *kulā kloñ* were usually adorned with such decorations and extension as *calac1* – “flame pediments” over doorways and windows, *prasat2* – multiple roofs, *chat wah3* – “elephant entrance” i.e. porch, *uchak4* – front extension, *tulik5* (Old Mon: *dirlec*, *dirlac*) –? assembly hall and *pwat tuiñ6* – polished pillars. Buildings such as *sim (sīma)* – the ordination hall, *pīlaka tuiñ* – library, *dhammasā* – preaching hall, *tanchoñ* – rest house, *carap* – alms house, *kappiyakuñi* – store house, etc. were built near the monasteries.

For the details of such constructions it would not be superfluous to give a contemporary account. The establishment described below was founded by the great minister *Anantasūra* and his wife and was completed on 17 Dec. 1223.

jjiy Āmanā mañ so kān arāp nhuik-kājjmyā cwā so than pañ ti lhyāñ kloñ arāp cuik lat ruy, // ut-ti plu so tantuin le nhac thap rani lat ruy, // tantuin twañ nhuik kā kalasā uiw ayon nhañ, tū so tañ, tay cwā so cañkrami thak kā le tañ e, // kū dhamanā so ukhā nhuik-kājjsarirradhat-tāw thañ, so tancikū kryacjjthuiw apa kā phan plu so krwac // thuiw apa kā tancikū nī plu so krwac // thuiw apa kā nuy plu so // thuiw apa kā rhuy mu ruy, ratanā ti amyak khat so // thuiw apa kā chañ cway plu so // thuiw apa kā kriy nī plu so // thuiw apa kā klok plu so puthuiw // thuiw twañ thañ pā so // rhuy camakhan // nuy camakhan // rhuy pok 2 // nuy pok 2 // rhuy tanchoñ // nuy tanchoñ tuiw, phlan, pujāñ ruy, thañ, luik e, // klok puthuiw kuiw kā chiy riy ruy, kriy khrañ nhañ, khak e, // athwat kā rhuy thwat plu e, // athwat thak-kā rhuy thi chok e, // rhuy thi kuiw kā pulay santā chway e, // athwat ok rhuy, kā puchuiw 7 thap lhwani e, // puchuiw thak-kā rhuy kyaktañuy khat e, // rhuy 30 swan so rhuy purhā 1 khu // nuy 50 swan so nuy purhā 1 khu // klok phlū plu ruy, rhuy rāñ riy so purhā 1 khu // rhuy thi nuy thi tuiw, le choñ e, // thuiw suiw, so athu thū sa phlañ, plu ruy, dhamanā e, // kū twañ kā purhā skhiñ chañpu liyymyakenhā plu ruy, ratanā ti tok pa chan kray ciy e, // kū aram twañ nhuik-kā myā cwā so purhā chañpu le plu e, // jāt nā ryā le atāñ, atay riy e, // kū thwat tanchā panthyan lak twañ khin piy ruy, khut so kriy kā 47 bisā 8 buñ 4 klyap // khut so yut so kriy kā 7 bisā 9 klyap // apri khani so kriy kā bisā 40 // 7 buñ 5 klyap // rhuy sā wañ so 39 klyap 3 mat // pratā rañ kā 159 klyap wañ e, // iñ suiw, so ratanā phlañ, kū thwat kuiw tok pa ciy e, // piñkat sumi pum so tryā apum le plu e, // tryā nā am, so parisat takā cañ wañ cim, so nñā klok ut ti phway, sa sāyā cwā so dhammasā le plue e, // tryā haw rā rhuy panlañ le plu e, // panlañ thak-kā rhuy thi le chok e, // athak phlañ, kā pitāñ le chañ e, // miraban kuiw luiw so sutāñ takā tuiw, chumha khami cim, so nñā skhiñ therā niy rā sāyā cwā so kloñ kri le plu e, // tantuin tac thap so opz wankyañ kā sāsanā kuiw khyat ruy, stañ kyañ, so skhiñ ariyā tuiw, niy cim, so nñā myā cwā so kloñ le acan plu e // skhiñ ariyā tuiw riy khyanisā cim, so nñā ut-ti phway, so riy twañ le tū e, // ut-ti phway, so 4 thoñ, kan le tū e // arhiy, plāñ, kā kan kri le 2 chañ, tū e, riy wañ cim, so nñā plwan nhañ, talā le atāñ, atay plu e, // riy kān apā wankyañ kā uyan le cuik e, // thuiw kloñ apa kā liyymyakenhā lā lā so sutuaw takā // niy so //

1. Pl. 64⁶, Pl. 153a⁴, Pl. 164^{5, 6}, Pl. 205³, Pl. 234^{10, 16}, Pl. 246³, Pl. 283⁶, Pl. 285³, Pl. 288⁴, Pl. 307c^{5, 4}, Pl. 428⁵

2. Pl. 85², Pl. 165b⁵, Pl. 234¹⁶, Pl. 282¹², Pl. 283^{6, 16}, Pl. 285 9, 10, Pl. 288⁴, Pl. 291⁷, Pl. 313a⁵, Pl. 382²

3. Pl. 64⁵, Pl. 246⁵

4. Pl. 164^{5, 13}, Pl. 234¹⁶ (*uthwak*), Pl. 283⁶ (*uthwak*)

5. Pl. 323⁶

6. Pl. 147a¹¹

tp so // ryap so // aluiw ra cim, so nhā // tañ, tay cwā so tantuiñ twañ rup athu thū sa phlañ, chan kray tha lyak so sāyā cwā so tanchoñ kri le plu e, // thuiw anok phlañ, kā alhū piy luiw so sutaw tuiw, alhū piy cim, so nhā // mray mrami cwā so ut carap le plu e, // iy ñā kloñ. nhuik hiy, so // purhā tryā sañghā tuiw, khyamīsa cim, so nhā // prañ aca nhuik kā // ut nhañ, mray mrami cwā phway, so kappiyakuñy le plu e, // alup aklwañ le myā cwā thā piy e, // liymyakñā lā lā so sū tuiw, riy aluiw ra cim, so nhā // ut nhañ, mray mrami cwā phway, so riy twañ le tū e, // iy nhya so anhac moñ nham plu so koñmu khapsim sa kā // sāsanā anhac 500 mlok oñ tañ rac cim, so nhā // aci aryññ myā cwā plu sate // = // iy anhac moñ nham plu so koñmu khapsim so kuiw // anhac kuiw cā akha mlañ, mlay plu phā rac cim, so nhā // tanlañ lhāñ cim, so nhā // purhā tryā nhuik samput // chimī // kwayñ pan // ma prat tañ rac cim, so nhā // sañ khami so skhīn ariyā tuiw, kuiw chwāñ pan lup klwañ rāc cim, so nhā // anhac moñ nham lhū so // ...¹

At this place (around) the tank called Āmanā (Minanthu), (we) planted many toddy palms in a monastery compound. (We) then enclosed it within two walls made of brick and within (these) walls upon a fine platform (the plinth of which) is in the shape of a *kalasā* pot, (we) constructed a hollow-pagoda. When enshrining (that) hollow-pagoda, (we) encased the relics of the Holy Body in a sandalwood casket and put it within a crystal casket, (then) a red sandalwood casket, a gold (casket), a silver (casket), a gilt and jewelled (casket), an ivory (casket), a red copper (casket) and (lastly) within a stone (miniature) pagoda. (Moreover, we) offered reverently and set therein cushions of gold, cushions of silver, parched rice of gold, parched rice of silver, gold chandeliers and silver chandeliers. As for the stone (miniature) pagoda, it was painted and criss-crossed with copper wire. The spire was made of gold. Above the spire (we) set up a gold umbrella, hung with pearls and coral. (We) wrapped (the whole miniature pagoda) up to the spire with seven folds of cloth and on the cloth was stamped the gold seal of *Kyaktañuy*. There was a gold image of the Lord cast of thirty (ticals) of gold, a silver image of the Lord cast of fifty (ticals) of silver and a gilt image of the Lord made of marble. Over these also (we) spread gold and silver umbrellas. (We) enshrined all these various things. In the (chamber) of the hollow - pagoda, (we) made four images of the Lord placed back to back and thus each facing a cardinal point and (also) made them shine wondrously with gems. Many (more) images were placed (around) the walls. (On the walls) were beautifully painted the (scenes from) five hundred *jātaka*.² (For adorning) the spire of the hollow - pagoda with an ornament (we) weighed and cut off into the hands of the coppersmith forty-seven viss, eight buih³ and four ticals of copper; seven viss and nine ticals were lost in (the course

1. Pl. 736-31. See also *JBRS*, XXVI, i, pp. 55-6.

2. Later donors in their zeal white washed the walls so the paintings are now no more.

3. To-day there is no intermediary measure between tical and viss. The meaning of the word *buih* or *buiy* is unknown. According to this inscription 10 ticals made 1 *buih* and probably 10 *buih* made 1 viss or 100 ticals made 1 viss. Perhaps the word comes from *pala*. According to R.C. Temple: "Notes on the Development of Currency in the Far East" *IA*, XXVIII, 102-10, 5 ticals made 1 *böh*.

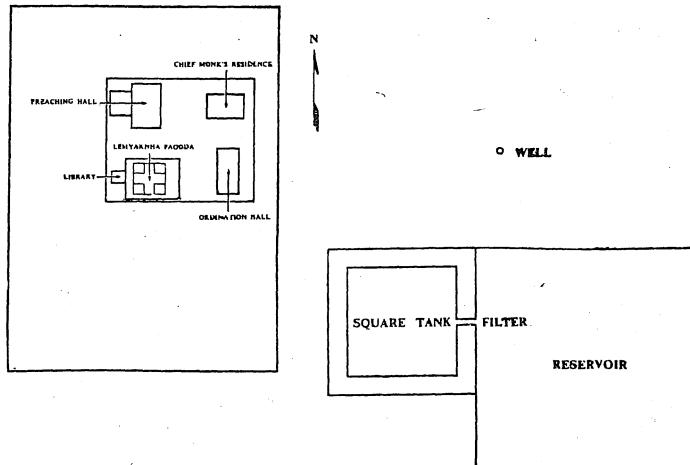
of the work) and the net (weight of the spire) was forty viss, seven *buiy* and five ticals. The amount of sterling gold included was thirty nine ticals and three quarters and of liquid quick silver one hundred and fifty nine ticals. With these precious things (we) caused the spire of the hollow - pagoda to shine. (We) also made (a copy) of the Three *Pitakā* - the accumulation of the Law. Where the congregation of those who would listen to the Law might assemble, (we) made a pleasant hall of the Law built of stone bricks. At the place for preaching the Law, (we) made a gold throne. Above the throne, (we) set up a gold umbrella and above it also (we) made a canopy. A large and pleasant monastery - the residence of our Lord the Elder also was made, where all good people desiring *nirvana* might receive instruction. In the surrounding place outside the inner wall (we) also made a row of monasteries where our Lords practising piety out of love for the Religion might abide. That our noble Lords might be at ease for water, a well also was dug and built of bricks. A square tank built of bricks was also (made). To the east a large tank also was (made) with two levels. That the water might enter, pipes and troughs also were beautifully made. All around the tank, a garden was created. Outside the monastery within a fine enclosure (we) made a large and pleasant *tanchoi* - rest house, magnificently (decorated) with all sorts of figures, where all good people coming from the four quarters might be at liberty to stay, to sleep or to stand. West of it (we) also made a permanent *carap* - alms house, of brick where good people wishing to give alms might give their alms. On the outskirts of the city (we) also made a store house built solidly of brick. For the comfort of the Lord, the Law and the Order who are in this monastery (we) have left there many attendants. In order that all the people coming from the four quarters might fulfil their wants, (we) also dug a well solidly built of brick. In order that all these good deeds made by (us) - the loving couple, may last through out the 5000 years of the Religion, (we) made many arrangements. In order that repairs be continuously done on our behalf, that (the premises) may be cleansed, that regular offerings of food, oil-lights, betel and flowers be always made to the Lord and the Law and the rice alms be given to the patient noble Lords, (we) - the loving couple, dedicated the following (slaves).

The establishment as seen to-day looks like the plan¹ shown on the next page.

Princess *Acawkwan*, daughter of King *Uccanā* and Queen *Suriūla* founded an establishment in A.D. 1248 at Minnanthu, Pagan, and left an interesting account of the expenditure on that work. The establishment consisted of a hollow - pagoda with four images of the Lord, a library with a complete set of the *pitaka*, a preaching hall, a big monastery with multiple roofs, a big brick monastery with front extension and an enclosure wall all around them. The expenditure was as follows:

// *apoñ krī kū phway, so kla so nuy kā 1747 pay 3 lum* // *apoñ krī khwak kā 74*
pisā // *apoñ krī puchuiw kā 113 thañ* // *apoñ krī kū thwat lin so rhuy 23 klyap* //
apoñ krī pratā 92 klyap // *apoñ krī capā 1867½* // *apoñ krī kwarisi 2 kadūn*

1. The author is indebted to U Swe and his team of the Burma Historical Commission for this plan.

PLAN OF THE RELIGIOUS ESTABLISHMENT AT ĀMANĀ,
PAGAN, BY ANANDASURA AND HIS WIFE IN (A. D. 1223)

nhañ, 1160 lum//apoñ kri ñrut $\frac{1}{8} \frac{1}{16} \frac{1}{32}$ //apoñ kri chā 7½ //apoñ kri kū thwat khut
 so kriy kā 66 bisā // 0 // piṭakat plu so kla so ñuy kā apoñ kri 2027 //apoñ kri
 chan 504 $\frac{1}{2}$ $\frac{1}{16}$ //apoñ kri capa 2309 $\frac{1}{2}$ //apoñ kri chā 110 $\frac{1}{2}$ $\frac{1}{16}$ //apoñ kri ñrut $\frac{1}{8} \frac{1}{16} \frac{1}{32}$ //
 apoñ kri kwamisi 10 kađuñ nhañ, 4870 //apoñ kri calac kloñ hoñ plu so kla so ñuy
 kā 758 $\frac{1}{2}$ 4 lum //apoñ kri khwak 8 bisā //apoñ kri puchuiw 68 thañ //apoñ
 kri capā 504 tañ apoñ kri kwamisi 2200 //apoñ kri catuik plu so kla so ñuy kā
 215 klyap // 0 //apoñ kri Kulā kloñ kri üchak plu so kla so khwak kā 306 bisā //
 ñuy kā 392 $\frac{1}{2}$ $\frac{1}{4}$ //puchuiw kā 45 thañ // 0 //apoñ kri tantuiñ plu so kla so ñuy
 kā 32 $\frac{1}{2}$ $\frac{1}{4}$ //khwak kā apoñ kri bisā 20 //apoñ kri lhañ kha knwak 53 pisā //apoñ
 kri puchuiw 12 thañ //apoñ kri capā 182 tañ //0//apon kri Culamani plu so kla so
 ñuy kā 44 $\frac{1}{2}$ $\frac{1}{4}$ //rhuy 3 lum khra //apoñ kri khwak 13 bisā kriy 30 //0//apoñ kri
 Tanmhwam Kulā kloñ plu so kla so ñuy kā 215 klyap //apoñ kri khwak kā 9
 bisā //¹

On the construction of the hollow – pagoda :

Grand total of silver	1747 (ticals) 3 pay
Grand total of khwak	74 viss
Grand total of loincloths	113 pieces
Grand total of gold (for the spire of the hollow-pagoda)	23 ticals
Grand total of quick silver	92 ticals
Grand total of paddy	1867½ (baskets)

1. Pl. 164³⁴⁻⁴⁶. See also *JBRs*, XXVI, i. p. 57 and *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 369-70, n. 105.

Grand total of areca nuts	2 <i>kaduri</i> + 1160
Grand total of black pepper	$\frac{7}{32}$ (?viss)
Grand total of salt	7½(?viss)
Grand total of copper (for the spire of the hollow-pagoda)	66 viss

On the (copying) of the *Pitaka*:

Grand total of silver	2037 (ticals).
Grand total of paddy	504 $\frac{9}{16}$ (baskets)
Grand total of salt	110 (viss)
Grand total of black pepper	$\frac{23}{32}$ (viss)
Grand total of areca nuts	10 <i>kaduri</i> + 4870

On the repairing of the old monastery with "flame pediments"

Grand total of silver	758½ ticals 4 <i>lumi</i>
Grand total of <i>khwak</i>	8 viss
Grand total of loincloths	68 pieces
Grand total of paddy	504 baskets
Grand total of areca nuts	2200

On the building of the library:

Grand total of silver	215 ticals
-----------------------	------------

On the building of the big brick monastery with front extension:

Grand total of <i>khwak</i>	306 viss
of silver	392½ (ticals)
of loincloths	45 pieces

On the erection of an enclosure wall:

Grand total of silver	432½ (ticals)
Grand total of <i>khwak</i>	20 viss
Grand total of <i>khwak</i> on cart hire	53 viss
Grand total of loincloths	12 pieces
Grand total of paddy	182 baskets

On the construction of the *Culāmani* (pagoda):

Grand total of silver	44½ (ticals)
of gold	3 <i>lumi khra</i>
Grand total of <i>khwak</i>	13 viss
of copper	30 viss

On the building of the *Tanmhwam* brick monastery:

Grand total of silver 215 ticals

Grand total of *khwak* 9 viss

One cannot help noticing that making a copy of the *Pitaka* was more costly than erecting a hollow-pagoda. In fact for less than one and a half the cost of the *Pitaka* a big monastery with "flame pediments" could be built. The enclosure walls cost nearly as much as the monastery itself. As rice, salt, pepper, areca nuts and loincloths are mentioned in the cost, it seems that workers were given free food and clothing during the construction of the establishment. Another inscription (A.D. 1236) gives a detailed account of wages and expenses.

|| *panphay* *piy* *sa* *le* 4 *klyap* || *kū* *riy* *so* *pankhī* *piy* *so* *le* 7 || *kloñ* *riy* *so* *pankhī* *piy* *so* *le* 120 || *ranāy* *way* *so* 7 *klyap* || *panpu* *piy* *ra* *so* 30 *purhāsamā* *piy* *so* 20 *tuik* *ram* *lin* *so* 2 *klyap* || *nan* *riy* *so* *rhuy* 2 *klyap* || *kanāprañ* *sac* *phuiw* 10 || *ta* *tuñ* *klok* *aphuiw* *kā* 3 *klap* *khway* || *kū* *kloñ* *tamkhā* *muk* *cum*, *anñatiy* *phuiw* *kā* || *khwak* 3 *klyap* *so* *kā* *ñuy* 13 *nwā*, 5 *khu* *so* *ñuy* 20 || *añak* *way* *so* 5 *klyap* *lañpan* *so* *ñuy* 5 *klyap* || *pyā* 62 *tanak* *so* *kā* *pyā* *phuiw* *ñuy* 71 *klyap* || *nwā* *niuv*, *kā* 248 *tanak* || *nwā* *niuv*, *aphuiw* *kā* 25 *klyap* || *sarwat* *phuiw* *kā* *capā* 320 || *klok* *ut* 300 *so* *e*, *rikhā* *capā* 30 *anñatiy* *thoñ* *kha* *pisañ* *piy* *so* *capā* 120 || *purān* *rikhā* *capā* 140 || *pankhī* *rikhā* *capā* 54 *tañ* || *tacañsañ* *panpu* *rikhā* *capā* 60 || *capā* *aphuiw* *kā* 4 *tañ* *so* 1 *klyap* *swāñ* *sakā* *ñuy* *hū* *mu* *kā* 38 *klyap* *hi* *e*, || *kū* *thwat* *kriy* *pisa* *khway* *so* *ñuy* 3 *klyap* || *rhuy* 1½ *so* *ñuy* 12 *klyap* || *prata* 3 *klyap* *so* *le* *ñuy* 2 *klyap* || *kū* *thwat* *lakkha* *piy* *so* *le* *ñuy* 10 || *samī* *phuiw* *ñuy* 10 || *kloñ* *ranāy* *thup* *lyok* *way* *so* *ñuy* 20 || *sac* *ñāñ* *so* *lhañ* *kha* *piy* *so* *ñuy* 10 || *chiy*, *than* *hañsapatā* *chun* *mliyphlū* *kyaktañuiy* *khrit* *karñkut* *khapani* *so* *e*, *aphuiw* *kā* *ñuy* 50 || *purhā* *ryap* *chay* *chū* *so* *le* *purhāsamā* *piy* *so* *le* *ñuy* 10 *pankhī* *piy* *so* *le* *ñuy* 20 || *pratā* *sañ* *piy* *sa* *le* *pukhrañ* *phyañ* 1 *thañ* *khachī* 1 *thañ* || *purhāsamā* *piy* *so* *phyañ* *mañ* *klyaw* 1 *thañ* *khachī* 1 *thañ* || *pankhī* *piy* *so* *pukhrañ* *phyañ* 1 *thañ* *khachī* 1 *thañ* || *laksamā* 3 *kip* *so* *le* *pukhrañ* *khachī* 30 || *purān* 4 *yok* *so* *piy* *sa* *le* *phyañ* 4 *thañ* *khachī* 4 *thañ* || *purhāsamā* *mrañ* 1 *cī* || *purān* *laksama* *mrañ* 1 *cī* || *pukhrañ* *phyañ* 2 *thañ* *khachī* 2 *thañ* || *cañkrami* *Kulā* *kloñ* *phway*, *so* *ut* *kā* 2 *phuiw* || *ut* *e*, *aphuiw* *kā* *ñuy* 60 || *lhañ* *kha* *kā* 22 *klyap* || *cañkrami* *sac* *ñāñ* *so* *lhañ* *kha* *ñuy* 6 *klyap* || *tacañ* *sañ* *piy* *so* *lakkha* *kā* *ñuy* 10 || *Kulā* *kloñ* *tamkhā* *plu* *so* *ñuy* 1 *klyap* || *tamkhā* *khum* *klok* 1 *chū* *so* *ñuy* 1½ || *Kulā* *kloñ* *phway*, *so* *purān* *lakkha* 3½ || *lhañ* *kha* *khwak* 1 *khlap* *so* *ñuy* 2 *klyap* || *kwamñi* 1350 *so* *ñuy* 2 *klyap* || *capā* 4 *tañ* *so* *ñuy* 1 *klyap* *phyañ* *phlū* 1 *thañ* *so* *ñuy* 1 *klyap* || *tamkhā* *khum* *klok* . . . *so* *le* *ñuy* . . . *klyap* ||

Given to the blacksmiths 4 ticals (of silver)

Given to the painters who painted the *kū* 7 (ticals of silver)

Gives to the painters who painted the *kloñ* 120 (ticals of silver)

For the purchase of rafters 7 ticals (of silver)

Given to the wood-carvers	30	(ticals of silver)
Given to the image-makers	20	(ticals of silver)
For painting the walls	2	ticals (of silver)
For painting the ? shrine	2	ticals of gold
Cost of wood for the ? out-house	10	(ticals of silver)
Cost of a monolith	3½	ticals (of silver)
Cost of plasters for doors and archways of the kū and the klon is 3 cups of khwak at	13	(ticals) of silver
For 5 cattle	20	(ticals) of silver
For the purchase of powder	5	ticals (of silver)
For trays	5	ticals of silver
Cost of 22 tanak of honey	77	ticals (of silver)
Cost of 248 tanak of milk	25	ticals (of silver)
Cost of mortar	320	(baskets) of paddy
For 300 stone bricks	30	(baskets) of ? store - paddy
Given to the pounders for crushing the plaster	120	(baskets) of ? store - paddy
For the masons	140	(baskets) of ? store - paddy
For the painters	54	(baskets) of ? store - paddy
For the ? adzers and wood-carvers	20	(baskets) of ? store - paddy
Cost of paddy - 4 baskets at	1	tical (of silver)
For bringing in the...	38	ticals (of silver)
For the spire of the kū copper 1½ viss at 1½ (ticals) of gold	3	ticals (of silver)
3 ticals of quick silver	12	ticals of silver
Wages for the spire of the ku	2	ticals of silver
Cost of iron	10	(ticals) of silver
For the purchase of rafters, crossbeams and eaves-boards for the klon	20	(ticals) of silver
Cart hire for dragging timber	10	(ticals) of silver
Cost of orpiment, vermillion, mlnium chalk, kyaktauuiy, gum-lac and plumbago altogether	50	(ticals) of silver
Given to the image-makers for 10 standing Buddhas	10	(ticals) of silver
Given to the painters	20	(ticals) of silver
Given to the workers in quick silver	1	lower garment
	1	waist band
Given to the image-makers	1	fine black cloth
	1	waist band

Given to the painters	1 lower garment 1 waist band
For thirty carpenters	(30) lower garments 30 waist bands
Given to 4 mansons	4 pieces of cloth 4 waist bands
To the image-makers	1 horse
To the mason-carpenter	1 horse 2 lower garments 2 waist bands
Bricks from 2 kilns to construct the promenade of the <i>Kulā klon</i>	60 (ticals) of silver
Cart hire	22 ticals (of silver)
Cart hire for dragging timber for the promenade	6 ticals of siver 10 (ticals) of silver
Wages given to the 2 adzers	10 (ticals) of silver
For making the doors of the <i>Kulā klon</i>	1 tical of silver
For a block of stone for the door threshold	1½ (tical) of silver
Wages of the masons who constructed the <i>Kulā klon</i>	3½ (ticals) of silver
Cart hire - <i>khlap</i> of <i>khwak</i> at	2 ticals of silver
For 1350 areca nuts	2 ticals of silver
For 4 baskets of paddy	1 tical of silver
For 1 piece of white cloth	1 tical of silver
For . . . stones for the door-threshold

The painters, carvers and image-makers who decorated the finished building were equally as important as the masons, carpenters and blacksmiths who built it. It would be interesting to know why the master mason and image-maker were given horses. As we have seen, the workers seem to enjoy free food and clothing during their work on the establishment. Inscriptions of the later period also show that the workers enjoyed free food, etc. and that the master architects were given oxen, horses and elephants. For the sake of comparison a rough rendering into English of the relevant portion of an inscription (lines 27-49) dated A.D. 1520 of Nigyawda village near Tada-U is given below:

On Saturday 17 August 1504 just after midnight the plan of the building was laid and the foundation area was dug up. The building was to be

41½ feet wide

44 feet long

44½ feet high and

7½ feet thick.

In the morning some gold and silver bricks were laid to mark the auspicious beginning of the establishment to be known as *Nigroda* (The Banyan Grove) Monastery. The following were given as the price of various building materials and as the wages of workers, etc.

For bricks	9	<i>naraka</i> horses
	4	oxen
	1	silver tray
	1	silver bowl
	10	viss of silver
	39	bronze trays
	1	bolt of cotton
	10	pieces of cloth
	47	turbans
	18	bundles of tea
Firewood	650	viss of copper
Another consignment of bricks	120	viss of copper
The doorsteps	11	viss of copper
To masons	480	baskets of paddy
The site of the Monastery	200	viss of copper
	800	basket of paddy
Varnish	150	viss of copper
Molasses and buffalo hide	50	viss of copper
To masons who made the <i>maraphari</i> and top decorations	80	baskets of paddy
Makers of plaster	10	ticals of silver
For other wages	370	ticals of silver
The total expenditure for construction	7740	ticals of silver
	5060	baskets of paddy

On Sunday 23 July 1509 the planing of wood began. On Monday 28 August 1509 the wooden portion of the building began.

1 cross beam	10½ ft. long
1 wall plate	27 ft. long
4 Central posts	45 ft. long each

These six were put under a white umbrella and were raised in place simultaneously to the accompaniment of drums, horns and bugles.

For timber	2	<i>naraka</i> elephants
	14	horses

Various wages	8	oxen
To hewers of stone	28	pieces of cloth
Carvers of stone	197	pieces of loin cloth
Enclosure wall	130	bundles of tea
<i>Māraphāni</i> partition	2784	baskets of paddy
Canopy	4	silver trays
<i>Noñnai, pran</i>	2	silver bowls
Painters	27	copper trays
Sawyers	1000	viss of copper
Wood-carvers	1466 $\frac{3}{5}$	ticals of silver
	17½	viss of copper
	43	pieces loin cloth
	4321	baskets of paddy
	1420	ticals of silver
	385	ticals of silver
	40	viss of copper
	70	ticals of silver
	90	ticals of silver
	350	ticals of silver
	10	ticals of silver
	2	elephants
	23	horses
	12	oxen
	5	silver trays
	3	silver bowls
	66	copper trays
	38	pieces of cloth
	278	turbans
	148	bundles of tea

The total cost of the main building and its top extension were paid in both silver and copper but in terms of silver it was 13644 ticals of silver. The provisions given amounted to 90381 baskets of paddy.

To gild the top extension	715	ticals of gold
Painting the main building	300	ticals of silver
Copying a set of <i>tipiṭaka</i> in 130 works	3333	ticals of silver
	3333	baskets of paddy

Now we find that the cost of a fairly big brick building with wooden decorations in the early 16th century was 13,644 ticals of silver and the cost of gilding and painting was 715 ticals of gold and 300 ticals of silver. It took nearly five years to complete the building. The copying of a set of *pitaka* was 3333 ticals of silver and 3333 baskets of paddy. We have mentioned above that in the middle of the 13th century, a big monastery could be built with one third of the price of the *pitaka*. In the 16th century the monastery cost nearly five times the price of the *pitaka*. Perhaps it was because scribe's fee had been reduced greatly as more people know the art of writing than in the Pagan period. It is a pity that that we do not know the length of time taken to complete these establishments. But from the evidence in the Shwegu inscription¹ we know that a fairly big hollow-pagoda could be completed within seven months. The building of Shwegu started on Sunday 17 May 1131 and everything was completed on Thursday 17 Dec. 1131. Another donor gave an interesting list of dates as follows.

// Sakarāc 598 khu Kratuik nhac // Plasuiw la chut 3 ryak // Tannhañlā niy, tak 9 phlwā khway puthuiw kū thāpanā e, // 28 ryak. lhyān pri e, // kū thāpanā so niy, lhyān riy twāñ tū e, // Tapuiwthway la chut 13 ryak Sokrā niy lhyān tantuiñ tañ e, // Tapoñ la plāñ tantuiñ pri e, // kū rhuy thwat kā Tapoñ la chut 7 ryak Tannhañlā niy tak 9 phlwā khway tañ e, // kū chiy riy sa kā Tankhū la chan 10 ryak Sukra niy kū purhā 14619 yok // jāt 550 // 12 ryak Tannhañlā niy pri e, // klon le pri e, // dhammasā pri e, // tryā panlañ pri e, // khoñloñ kriy apisā 106 pisā khway e, swan e, // kū thwat kā kriy 55 pisā khway kū thwat lin so rhuy 46 klyap hiy e, // purhā liymyaknā so lin so rhuy 20 // cāsañ 5 khu plu e, // mlac ok kū nay le chiy riy e, klon twāñ puthuiw purhā chuiw plu e, // ūñiñ 3 pāñ cuik e, // riy īm 3 pāñ plu e, // samaruiw le chok e, pitakat le pri e, // Nariyun la chan 7 ryak Tannhañlā niy kā pan e, // Nattaw la chut 9 ryak Sukrā niy kā lhawat e, kū kā Plasuiw la chut 3 ryak Tannhañlā niy thāmanā e, // 0 // Sakarac 599 khu Myakkasuih nhac Kuchun la chut 4 ryak Tannhañlā niy mañ mat Nānapicañ kū lhawat e, lhawat so lhū so purhā kywan... 2

When the rising sun cast nine and a half foot-steps (of shadow) on Monday 16 Dec. 1236, the hollow-pagoda was enshrined. It was finished after (the lapse of) twenty eight days (i.e. on 13 Jan. 1237). On the day the hollow-pagoda was enshrined a well was dug. On Friday, 25 Jan. (1237), the enclosure wall was built. It was completed on 10 Feb. (1237). The golden spire of the hollow-pagoda was set up when the rising sun cast nine and a half footsteps (of shadow) on Monday 17 Feb. (1237). (On the walls of) the hollow-pagoda were painted 14,619 Buddhas and scenes from 550 *Jātaka*. The painting was started on Friday, 7 March (1237) and completed on Monday, (24 March 1237). The monastery

1. Pl. 1 and 2

2. Pl. 105a¹⁻²⁰. See also *JBRS*, XXXVI, i, pp. 56-7.

was also finished. The Hall of the Law was finished. The throne of the Law was finished. A bell was cast of 106½ viss of copper. The spire of the hollow-pagoda (weighed) 55½ viss of copper and was coated with 46 ticals of gold. The gold for coating four images of the Lord placed back to back was 20 (ticals). Five hostels for the students were constructed. The small hollow-pagoda on the north was also painted. A ruined solid-pagoda within (the enclosure of) the monastery was repaired. Three banyan trees were planted. Three water closets were made. A *samaruiw*¹ was also built. The *Pitaka* was also finished. An application (?) to the king was made on Monday 13 April (1236). The dedication was made on Friday 25 Nov. (1236). The hollow-pagoda was enshrined on Monday 16 Dec. (1236). On Monday 14 May 1237, the minister *Nañapaccaya* dedicated slaves ...

The donor who was a minister, probably had to apply to the king for a grant of land for his intended religious establishment. It was a little over a year from the date of the application to the date when he gave land and slaves to the finished establishment.

Thus from the illustrations given above we find that a fairly big religious establishment enclosed by a brick wall and consisting of a pagoda, many monasteries and other religious buildings could be completed in a year under normal conditions. Abnormal times however delayed buildings. We find that a building started on the eve of the Mongol invasion was left unfinished for fifteen years.² Usually the enclosure wall was constructed first. Sometimes double enclosures were made—the inner compound was reserved for the Lord and the Law and the outer area for the Order. The donors took great care to transform such enclosed areas into delightful gardens with reservoirs and palm trees. Then within the inner wall, not necessarily in the centre, they built the pagoda either solid or hollow in structure. Hollow-pagodas seemed to be more popular as they provided four walls on which the scenes from the *Jātaka* could be painted as decorations. Moreover, the paintings were the most striking and effective means of convincing the common folk of the merit of giving alms and of meditation. Right in the centre of the hollow-pagoda, was the relic chamber. The relics were encased and four images of the Lord were placed back to back around that encasement so that pilgrims coming to the shrine from four directions might find a semblance of the Lord who showed them the way to nirvana. Mostly the images were gilt, thus glimmering in the poor light of the oil-lamps against the background of the dark cave-like construction of the shrine. In the vicinity of the shrine a depository for the Law written on palm leaves was built. A preaching hall and an ordination hall would also be added to the premises. The chief monk of the establishment would probably get a separate building within the inner wall. In the outer compound were the buildings for the monks, the lay devotees, store houses and accommodations for the slaves of the establishment. In fact many of these establishments served as educational institutes and as such they have remained until the present day in Burma.

1. Professor Pe Maung Tin connects this word with ဝေး။ which Halliday's *Mon-English Dictionary*, p. 444 gives as "putridity" and therefore it would mean "lavatory." See *JBR*, XXVI, i, p. 56. Professor G. H. Luce suggests a "staircase." See *BRSFAP*, II, p. 370, n. 110. But Pl. 310b inscription mentions that 36 posts of *samaruiw* are given to the monastery. This nullifies both lavatory and staircase. See also Pl. 18³, Pl. 105a⁴, Pl. 163⁷, Pl. 271¹⁰.

2. Pl. 277¹.

Some Important Pagedas of Pagan (Map III)

I. Nyaung-u East Circle

1. Sudaungbye
2. Paungdaw-u
3. Chaukpahla
4. Shwethabeik
5. Thetkyamuni
6. Kyaukgu Onhmin
7. Yatsauk
8. Hnasingu
9. Thamihwet Onhmin
10. Hmyathat Onhmin
11. Hngetpyittaung
12. Gawdama
13. Gawdama Zedi
14. Paungle Onhmin
15. Shweminwun

II. Nyaung-u West Circle

1. Shwezigon
2. Shinbinyanza
3. Thahtaygu
4. Shwe Zedi
5. Ngamethna
6. Nyaung-u Theinmazi
7. Myatheindan
8. Theinmathu
9. Lawkhamhang
10. Shitmyethna
11. Shinmathi
12. Shinbinnan
13. Shwegu
14. Letpyagu
15. Chedawya

III. Wetkyi-in Circle

1. Payani
2. Mohnyinshwekyau
3. Oktanagyaw Okkyau
4. Bidagat
5. Kyanzittha Onhmin
6. Tazaungkyau
7. Gubyaukgyi
8. Khemawaya

IV. Taungthilaya Circle

1. Shwekungya
2. Shwethabeik

3. Myazigón
4. Upalithein
5. Htilominlo
6. Einyagyaung
7. Eindapyitsaya
8. Shwekyau
9. Kyin
10. Bidagat Taik
11. Minhmyawaza
12. Min-o-chantha
13. Hnakyekhitsu
14. Ledatkyau
15. Ananda

V. Pagan Myoma Circle

1. Bu
2. Sawhlawun
3. Bawdhi
4. Atwingsigón
5. Gydawpalin
6. Pasittök
7. Shwegugyi
8. Thabyinnyu
9. Sithuparto
10. Pahtothamya
11. Nwabyagu
12. Sinbyagu
13. Shwesandaw
14. Ni Ama
15. Ni Nyima
16. Gubyaukgyi
17. Theinmazi
18. Pénatha
19. Mingala Zedi
20. Gubyaukngé
21. Myazedi
22. Aggade
23. Manawhayaza
24. Nan
25. Abeyadana
26. Mèdawayat
27. Kyazin
28. Nagayón
29. Somingyi
30. Scinnyet Nyi-ama
31. Sawlugón
32. Lawkananda

VI. Nanthu Circle

1. Maungyóngu
2. Izzagawna
3. Winido
4. Asawlat
5. Hnasingu
6. Nandamayinnya
7. Dayinpahto
8. Thambula
9. Minwaing
10. Tatkale
11. Tayókpye
12. Amana
13. Lebathmauk
14. Malabyit
15. Malónbyit
16. Letputkan
17. Sulamani
18. Damayangyi
19. Sinbyushin
20. Sawhlawun
21. Sabwéhmauk
22. Lemyathna
23. Anaukhlégu
24. Myaukhlégu
25. Anaukzanthi
26. Ashezanthi

VII. Pwazaw Circle

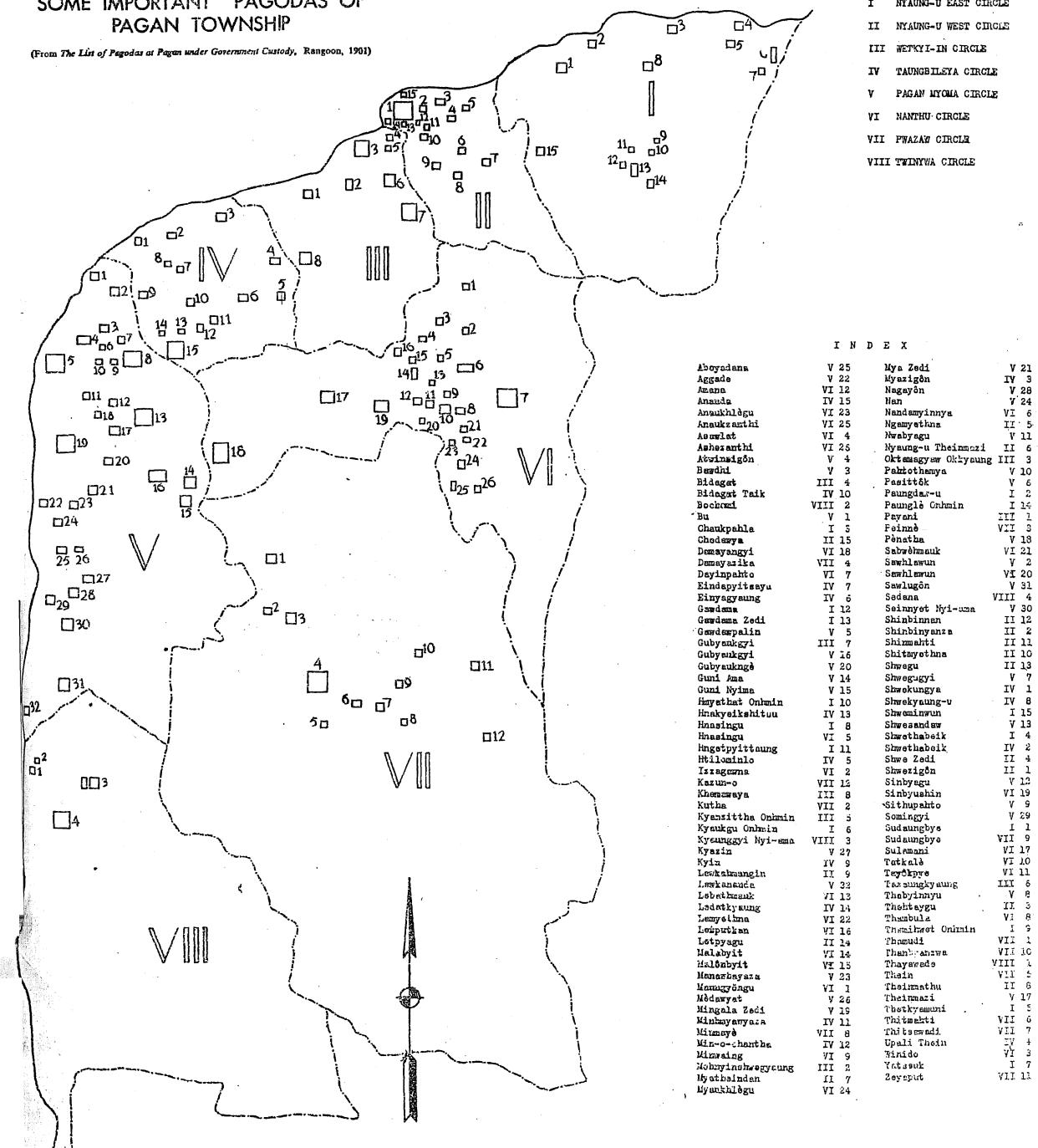
1. Thamuti
2. Kutha
3. Peinné
4. Damayazika
5. Thein
6. Thitmahti
7. Thitsawadi
8. Minmayè
9. Sudaungbyè
10. Thanbyaazw
11. Zeyaput
12. Kazun-o

VIII. Twinywa Circle

1. Thayawade
2. Bochomi
3. Kyaunggyi Nyi-ama
4. Sedana

MAP III
SOME IMPORTANT PAGODAS OF
PAGAN TOWNSHIP

(From *The List of Pagodas at Pagan under Government Custody*, Rangoon, 1901)



CHAPTER X

THE SLAVES OF MEDIEVAL BURMA

A careful study of the position of slaves gleaned from contemporary inscriptions reveals to us the astounding fact that there was no obvious difference in the social life of a slave from other common people. He was always attached to a piece of land. Most of them were agriculturalists but there were others with vocations such as blacksmith, carpenters, musicians, dancers, etc. As these slaves were of different races we have reference to Mon slaves, Indian slaves and so on. Sometimes they were even classified as widows, family-heads, literates, sucklings, etc. Thus from a close study of the slaves we derive a fairly good picture of the social life of the Pagan period.

Kywan is the Burmese word for slave. From the evidence of the medieval Burmese inscriptions, we know that Buddhism exercised a great deal of influence on the Burmese way of life and thought. The average person understood that life is full of miseries and that everybody is enslaved by greed, anger and bewilderment i.e. *lobha*, *dosa* and *moha* until the time when he is able to free himself from such bondage and attain *nirvana*. Thus in a sense everybody is a slave and will always remain so until *nirvana* is reached. Therefore *Singhasāra* a minister of King *Cañsū* II, in A.D. 1190 made a dedication in the belief that would help towards his salvation and said:

ramimak kywan aphlac mha teñ taw lhan luw rakāl

which Professor G.H. Luce translates: "I want to rebel against this world of slavery to appetite."² Although the word "rebel" is used here, what the minister had in mind was a spiritual revolution which involves a series of self-denials of worldly pleasure. Anyway, for the time being he recognized himself as a slave of all enjoyments.

It would not be improper here to point out that although the word "kywan" is generally translated as "slave" and implies menial service by a person to another, a Burman of the medieval times understood it not in the same way as it is now commonly understood when the mention of slavery recalls to the mind the American plantations. If slavery to him was what the early 19th century humanitarians understood and did their utmost to abolish as being one of the most undesirable institutions of mankind, he would not have voluntarily turned himself into a slave as the following illustration³ will show:

*// sañkri Ray Kheñ mliy sañkri Nā Cway Sañ sā / sañkri Satyā tū // sañkri
Ābhīnantasū // amāñ kā Nā Krī kuiw le lhū e, // sañkri Pāñ Rōñ sā sañlyāñ sami
mī ya kuiw le lhū e, / samī krī kuiw le lhū e, samī nāy moñma kuiw le lhū e, // kuiw
mīyā sā nhac yok apoñ 4 yok pur-hā lhū ruy e, //3*

1. Pl. 10a²⁸

2. *JBRs*, XXVI, iii, p. 135

3. Pl. 6^{10.15}

I, *Nā Kri*, (also) known as *Saṅkṛī Abhīnandasū*, son of *Saṅkṛī Nā Cway Sañ*, nephew of *Saṅkṛī Satyā* and grandson of *Saṅkṛī Ray Kheñ* dedicate myself. My wife, the daughter of *Saṅkyāñ* the son of *Saṅkṛī Pān Rāñ*, (I) dedicate. My elder daughter and my younger daughter the *moñma* are also dedicated. Thus after dedicating (as slaves) to the pagoda myself, my wife and my two children, altogether four, I write this inscription.

A minister of *Tarukpliy* called *Gaṅgābijañ* made images of the Lord in silver, bronze and marble, mainature stupas of gold, silver, sandalwood, ivory, etc. and enshrined them in a hollow-pagoda. He gave twenty six works on *piṭaka* and built two big monasteries and three sheds for the monks. He also performed the *kathina* ceremony. To these meritorious deeds ~~he~~ added :

// *sā yokkyā sā miyma 2 yok kuiw le skhīn lak e, 3 phan thū tumi e*, //1

I gave three times into the hands of the Lord my two (children)—son and daughter.

Another illustration of this type is found in an inscription dated A.D. 1248. Princess *Aew Krwam Skhīñ* daughter of King *Uccanā* and Queen *Sumlūla* said after dedicating 3,779 ~~pay~~ of land and 1,250 slaves :

...*ayañ tuiw, mruiw, nā le rutanā 3 pā so, kywān te //...// iy myha so ratanā sum pā kā nā asak hiy sa yhuy kā nā lup klwañ sate nā kanthā pyāk kha ruy asak achum nhuik te rok kha mū kā // iy nā lup // klwañ e, suiw nā sā nhac yok klwañ ciy sate //2*

...Besides these (slaves), I also am the slave of the three gems (i.e. the Lord, the Law, the Order)...As regards these three gems, as long as I live I serve. At the end of my life when this body of mine is destroyed, may my two children serve them as I have served.

Another donor *Nā Krami Lhok Sañ* dedicated in A.D. 1244 two slaves and thirty toddy palms to the pagoda and said :

// *i than 30 sa kā nā asak hi sa yhuy nā klwañ sate // nā te atāñ may mu kā // i nū miyā nhañ sā 2 yok // nā kuiw cā purhā nhañ kloñ ā klwañ rac ciy sate//3*

With these thirty toddy palm trees, I feed while I am alive. After my death, may my wife and two children carry on serving the pagoda and the monastery on my behalf.

1. Pl. 308²⁹

2. Pl. 164⁵², 47.⁹

3. Pl. 207⁵⁻⁴

King *Cañsū II* once dedicated as slaves his three children by Queen *Uiw Chok Pan* to the pagoda built by his teacher *Mahāthera Dhammavilāsa* but later he redeemed them by dedicating thirty *pay* of land in their stead.¹ Another king *Putasin Mai* whom unfortunately we cannot identify sent men and money from Burma to effect repairs of the religious buildings at *Budh Gaya* in India and left an inscription in Burmese recording that the repairs were finished on Sunday, 13 October 1298 and that "two children as one's own off-spring" were dedicated as slaves there.² If a king could turn his children or children whom he regarded as his own into slaves, it evidently means that becoming a pagoda slave in those days was not a degradation in the social status. Apart from this evidence of king's children dedicated as slaves, we have had three examples—firstly an executive officer and a minister, secondly a princess and thirdly a commoner who dedicated themselves and their families as pagoda slaves which prove that slavery to those old Burmans did not mean the cruel thing we know. It savoured neither of the slave raids in Africa nor the licentiousness of an organised slave trade where well trained slaves were sold as luxury goods nor the degradation in social status of modern Burmese pagoda slave who in almost the same way as the untouchables of India are considered social outcasts. Broadly speaking, there are five causes for slavery—firstly, birth i.e. hereditary; secondly, sale of children by their free parents and insolvent debtors; thirdly, captives of war; fourthly, piracy and kidnapping; and fifthly, commerce, i.e. systematic slave trade. Now in the light of the above evidence we have just discussed, we should add another cause—voluntary.

For hereditary slaves we have ample evidence. In almost every inscription where the list of slaves appears, we have the mention of family groups. Sometimes a phrase like *lai miyā sā cum*³—husband, wife and children is used to denote that the whole family has been turned into slaves and such phrases as *sā can mlīy can*⁴ or *sā chak mlīy chak*⁵—meaning from son to grandson in a line or a chain, is added to make it clear that their descendants will also be considered slaves. Sometimes a list of names is ended with this phrase *i y kā achuy kywān te*⁶ to signify that the persons mentioned above are all related to each other. Some other phrases that occur frequently in the inscriptions to denote that the whole group belongs to a slave family and indirectly that their descendants will also be counted as slaves are *apha sā 1 up*⁷ (father and children one group), *amisā ta up*⁸ (mother and children one group) *amisā*⁹ (mother and child), *sā apha 2*¹⁰ (child and father together two), *sā ami 2*¹¹ (child and mother together two) and *im thon*¹² (the family group). Sometimes *im thon*¹³ simply means domestic servants but mostly when this phrase occurs it means the whole family of slaves. For example,

1. Pl. 34¹⁰
2. Pl. 299¹⁴
3. Pl. 417¹⁰
4. & 5. Pl. 1645¹⁻³²
6. Pl. 149⁵
7. Pl. 18¹¹
8. Pl. 153b¹¹
9. Pl. 153a²⁵, Pl. 1642⁸
10. Pl. 277⁷
11. Pl. 227¹¹
12. Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 190a (*passim*), Pl. 200^{4, 25, 28}, Pl. 256⁴, Pl. 376⁵, Pl. 557b⁵, Pl. 598b (*passim*)
13. Pl. 181^{5, 7, 10}

// kū kri nhuik lhū so kywan kā īm thoñ Nā Nantā 1 miya kri Pi Lhū 1 smi Khyatsanā 1 smi Mani mithuy Bini 1 pima Thani 1 mayā nay Pa Lhū sā Nā Nattaw 1 nhama Mitti 1 // īm thoñ Paw 1 miyā Jottā 1 smi Kawari 1 smi Ui, Kroñ 1 uri Hatā 1 // Rwasā 1 sā Nā Phlu 1 // Sunū 1 smi Manki 1 smi Ratani 1 nīma Cani 1 // apōn yokya miyma cum 21 //1

As for the slaves dedicated to the big hollow-pagoda they are the family of Nā Nantā, senior wife Pi Lhū, daughter Khyatsana, daughter Mani, mother's younger sister Bini, younger sister Thani, junior wife Pa Lhū, son Nā Nathaw, sister Mitti; the family of Paw, wife Jottā, daughter Kawari, daughter Ui, Kroñ, mother's elder brother Hatā, Rwasā and son Nā Phlu; Sunū and daughter Manki, daughter Ratani, younger sister Cani. The total of male and female slaves is 21.

Thus a slave community appeared and every new child born into that community was considered a slave. Perhaps they used the word *sapok*² for a person born of slave parents. Eventually slave villages came into existence as *kyon rwā lum*³ – the whole village of slaves in an inscription dated A.D. 1223; *klon kywan rwā*⁴ – the village of monastery slaves in an inscription dated A.D. 1235, *Nhak Pluiyaw Tuiñ kywan rwā akun*⁵ – the whole slave village of *Nhak Pluiyaw Tuiñ* in an inscription dated A.D. 1242; simply *kywan rwā*⁶ – the slave village in a dedication of Lord *Kaikastū*'s wife in A.D. 1242; *wat khlak rwā*⁷ – the rice cooking village meaning that the villagers were all slaves to the nearby monastery and that they served it as cooks. This appears in the dedication of one of the queens of *Tarukpliy* made in A.D. 1266 and lastly the famous *Gubyaukgyi*⁸ inscription of Prince *Rājakumār* mentioned the three slave villages of *Sakmunalon*, *Rapay* and *Henbuiw*.

Naturally owners considered slaves as part of their estates that could be handed down from father to son, or could be bought or sold or used in settling of debts⁹ which often led to disputes and law suits for ownership.¹⁰ Perhaps to avoid disputes at a later date, judges were called upon to witness the transfer of ownership¹¹ which was duly registered, signed and sealed.¹² *Amuy kywan*¹³ – the inherited slaves is the term used by Nā U Lyon to describe eleven slaves whom he inherited from his aunt *Yaptaw sañ Khyat Ma*, the concubine of King Cañsu I. When Prince *Gangāsūra* the son of King Cañsu I by Queen *Vatamisikā* or

1. Pl. 190a^{5,8}

2. Pl. 182a²¹, Pl. 19322-5, Pl. 543a⁵⁰, Pl. 597c^{5,11}

3. Pl. 51⁸

4. Pl. 127a^{5,4}

5. Pl. 140b⁹

6. Pl. 145⁸

7. Pl. 215b⁸

8. The *Rājakumār* Inscription. Pl. 362^{50,2}

9. Pl. 393¹⁵ (*Samā Nay* handed over four slaves to the donor in settlement of a debt.)

10. Pl. 74^{8,20}, Pl. 78b, Pl. 79ab

11. Pl. 56b⁸⁻⁹

12. Pl. 77^{8,10}

13. Pl. 75a⁵, Pl. 392²⁶

Uchokpan died, perhaps without any children to inherit his property, his elder brother Prince Rājasūra took a portion of his estate, undoubtedly leaving the major portion in the hands of the widow, the daughter of Nōn Ram Kri. The widow, recorded in A.D. 1242 that

//atuw skhin man Kankasū pyam tau mū pri so amuy hu skhin non man Rājasū yū liy so Mrañ ki kywan...10 kip//¹

When our lord Prince Gangāsūra died, by inheritance, our lord, the senior brother Prince Rājasūra took ... 10 slaves of Mrañki.²

We have quite a number of cases where the inheritance is in the descending order. For example, we have the following descriptive phrases about the slaves: ami mha lā so kywan kā³—as for the slaves from mother; apha mha lā so kywan kā⁴—as for the slaves from father; aphuiw kā la so kywan⁵—slaves from grandfather; nā mi nā ā cori ma kywan hū piy so⁶—slaves given by my mother to help me; ari nā ā piy so⁷—slaves given by my father's sister and nā mi nā pha ka lā so kywan⁸—slaves from my mother and my father. But we have also records where the persons concerned were very anxious to make known to the outside world that the slaves in their possession were not inherited. It will not be uninteresting at this point to consider a few examples where explicit mention is made that the slaves in question were not part of the inherited property but that the owner had earned them by sheer hard work.

A lady called Ui Plañ Cumi San making a dedication in AD. 1233 said:

iy kywan 7 yok sā kā ami lā so kywān le ma hut apha lā so kywan le ma hut nā lañ Nā Koñ San nhan nā tī si mu ruy ra so kywān te⁹

These seven slaves are not the slaves from mother nor from father. My husband Nā Koñ San and I got them as the fruit of (our work).

Nā Mani San and wife said in A.D. 1238:

//iy kywan kā ami apha amuy mahut cwamī // lañ myā (dharani) mū ruy, ra so kywan te//¹⁰

These slaves are not inherited from our parents. We, the husband and wife got them by bring them up.

In A.D. 1242, a rich man Nā Mlhok San said:

// nā phuw ka nā phiy ka lā so nā mi nā pha ka lā so kywen le ma hut nā chuw nray to si mū ruy, ra so//kywen te¹¹

These slaves are not from my great grandfather, my grandfather, my mother or my father. I underwent hardships to get them.

1. Pl. 1441⁷⁻¹⁸

2. This exercise of the right of inheritance by an elder brother would not be welcomed in Burma to-day, for when a Burman Buddhist dies without children, the widow inherits the whole estate. This incidence of an elder brother inheriting some of the slaves of his younger should be regarded as an exceptional case.

3. 212⁵, 8

4. Pl. 212⁸, 12 Pl. 1504

5. Pl. 884

6. Pl. 120a2, 5

7. Pl. 120a⁵

8. Pl. 1502

9. Pl. 706, 8

10. Pl. 1297, 9

11. Pl. 141b5, 7

A rich lady *Ui*, *Krami Khyan San* and husband dedicated eleven slaves to the image at the hollow-pagoda that they built in A.D. 1231 and said :

// i anhac lan miyā n i ruy, lhū so kywan kā nā tuiw ami apha amuy kywan le ma hut // nā tuiw amlyuiw 7 chak mha lā so amuy kywan le ma hut anhac lan miyā chuiw nray lup ruy, ra so kywan nhañ.nhañ te //¹

These slaves that we-the loving couple, have agreed to dedicate are not the inheritance begotten from our parents nor from our ancestors of seven generations. They are entirely the produce of our labour.

Slaves of another loving couple are described as :

mon nhani nhac yok chuiw nray pan mū ruy ra so kywan²

Slaves begotten through hardship and toil by the loving husband and wife.

Another rich lady in A.D. 1248 said about her slaves :

// ami apha mha lā so kywan le ma hut // nā chuiw nray lum la mū ruy ra so kywan te //³

(These) slaves are not from mother or father. I got them through hardship and endeavour.

Different from the above mentioned examples is the man who received four slaves on his father's death but was made answerable for his father's debts. So he declared :

// iy 4 yok so kywan sañ-kā apha kywan hū ruy akhlañ ni lhyāñ piy sa ma hut // apha mri khapay lhyāñ chap ruy ra sate //⁴

As for these four slaves, they are not given over to me for nothing just because they are my father's slaves. I got them after repaying all my father's debts.

A gentleman went even to the extent of claiming that he got his slaves by virtue of his merit by saying nā wira lum, la satañ sum ruiy, e, ra so kywan te.⁵ Except for monks and religious establishments who receive their slaves as donations, slaves owned were either part of their inherited property, or acquisitions through buying or settling a debt or from success in a law suit. If buying slaves was possible, there must have been same form of a recognised slave trade, which we will discuss later.

As for the insolvent debtor who has to give himself up as a slave to his creditor, we have the following illustration. There was a *piysmā* (palmleaf maker) called *Nā Tañ, San* (Mr. Upright). Perhaps he was a master palmleaf maker with many assistants and slaves. As fate would have it, he went bankrupt in A.D. 1227. In order to appease his many creditors he went to *Anantasūra*, one of the ministers of King *Nātonīmyā* (1211-31) with the following terms :

1. Pl. 157^{16.18}

2. Pl. 160^{63.5}

3. Pl. 161^{b10.12}

4. Pl. 204^{a8.9}

5. Pl. 572^{a24.5}

|| atuiw kywan pyak ci chan nray kha e, || iy miyā nā smi 2 yok nā skhiñ kywan so phlac ciy khlyān || ... || atuiw, kywan pyak ci chan nray kha ruy, || pliy phan kha so kywan tuiw, le hi e, sū mri yū ruy, mri sañ mri nhañ, ma tan ray, rup liy so kywan tuiw, le hi e, ty mhyā so kywan khapan kā nā skhiñ myā lhyān piy sate // su lak twāñ hi so mhyā le that ciy khlyān e, || su ytcā tuiw, chap ryā sa le chap ciy khlyān e,¹

(My Lord!) We, your slaves, are ruined and (made) miserable. These, (my) wife and my two daughters, (I) want them to become your slaves, My Lord ... As your slave is ruined and made miserable, there are many slaves who have fled and who hesitate (i.e. they will also flee sooner or later). Some are already given up to settle debts but there are not enough to settle all debts. I give you and your wife the remaining slaves. (It is my) request that you redeem those who are now in others' possession and settle all our debts.

Thus the bankrupt master palmleaf maker made his family and his slaves the slaves of the minister Anantāsūra.

We have no direct evidence for war captive slaves nor for slave raids. But we have three examples which we may connect slavery with war. In the Great Shwezigon inscription in old Mon, we find that the enemies of Pagan who were presumably the Mon of lower Burma took some of its citizens downstream as captive. But they were later freed and restored to Pagan through the might of Thiluin Mañ probably just before he took the Pagan throne in A.D. 1084.² In another instance we find that Asañkhyā, a minister of King Nātonīmyā, described some of his slaves in A.D. 1216 as:

|| iy kywon (13 sa kā) mañ Sinkhāpicañ phlac so Pyamkhi sā place pā ruy Taway lyac so || Pukam rok khyla(ji hū ruy ra) so Calāñ kywon te // Phun Sañ Asañkhyā mañ pan rakā Pyamkhi sā le Pukam rok e, || Pukam rok (so) Phun Sañ Asañkhyā Pyamkhi sā kywon ra sate //³

As for these thirteen slaves they are Calāñ slaves of the son of (Prince) Pyamkhi who joined in the sin (i.e. rebellion) of Prince Sinkhāpicañ and (?fled) to Taway. (As he) wanted to return to Pukam the honourable Asañkhyā asked pardon from the king. Pyamkhi's son therefore came back to Pukam. On reaching Pukam the slaves of Pyamkhi's son were handed over to the honourable Asañkhyā.

With this information it is possible to reconstruct the scene as follows. Nātonīmyā the son and successor of Cañsū II was born of a lesser queen. Therefore he would have had less claim to the throne than his half brothers born of royal mothers. Perhaps Cañsū II made him his successor because of some outstanding ability superseding other sons of more princely blood. This probably caused a great deal of resentment because soon after Nātonīmyā's accession many rebellions broke out which he suppressed with the aid of his five ministers

1. Pl. 79a¹⁻¹⁵, Pl. 79b⁵²

2. *Ep. Birm.*, I, ii, 1B 25-6, pp. 116-17

3. Pl. 42¹⁵⁻¹⁶

one of whom was Asankhyā. When peace was restored Nātonmyā rewarded his ministers handsomely for their services. As his share Asankhyā received the estates of Pyankhī's son who was implicated in Sinckhapicāñ's rebellion and had fled to Taway. Owing to Asankhyā's intervention the King pardoned him and allowed him to return to Pagan. But his estate was confiscated and as we have said bestowed on Asankhyā.

We have a similar story¹ when King Klacwā (1235-? 49) succeeded his brother to the throne. Perhaps his nephews (the late king's sons) disputed the succession. Two brothers Sinhapikrami and Sirivadhanā rebelled and were defeated but they escaped. On Sunday, 8 June 1236, when King Klacwā was giving an audience at Kwan Prok Nay - the Small Variegated Hall, Sinhapikrami's wife requested the king to forgive her husband and allow him to return to Pagan. The king forgave the prince but confiscated his "slaves, fields and gardens" and gave them to Queen Caw², very possibly the queen of his predecessor and brother King Narasingha-Uccanā (?1231-5).

From the above we gather that the king confiscated slaves of rebels and gave them away to whomsoever he pleased and therefore these slaves cannot be classed as war captives turned into slaves, but they may safely be termed spoils of war.

There are a few direct evidences of the slave trade in our period. The donors making dedication of slaves to religious establishments very often mentioned the prices they paid for the slaves. Nā Khyat San Myak Mañ bought eleven slaves in A.D. 1214 and gave the details as

... kywan yokā krī 7 yok // yokyā nay 4 yok apon kywan 11 yok aphuiw nuy 330 khin piy e, // ³

(For the price of) seven adult male slaves (and) four young male slaves altogether 11 slaves three hundred and thirty of silver are weighed and given.

This gives us an average price of thirty ticals of silver for a male slave. In A.D. 1223 the same gentleman bought another four slaves at the price of 120 ticals of silver ⁴, and one at 35 ticals of silver.⁵ Then he made a real bargain when he bought seven slaves for 140 ticals. It was recorded as :

Toṇplun hi so panthyan, nī sā ta up so kuiw aphuiw nuy 140 piy so ⁶

the whole group of brothers and sons of the goldsmith living at Toṇplun at the price of 140 silver.

In exchange for his boat Kramū⁷ he received from the Sukhamin, the Saikri of Sacchim the slave Nā Khyamī.⁸ Lastly he bought nineteen slaves at 570, i.e. 30 ticals each.⁹

1. Pl. 23431.4

2. Mother of King Uccanā and grandmothers of King Tarukpliy

3. Pl. 75a⁴⁻⁶

4. Pl. 75a²²⁻³

5. Pl. 75a⁵⁰

6. Pl. 75a⁴⁰⁻¹

7. Kramū—areca palm (see BRSFAP, II, p. 352 n. 64)

8. Pl. 75a⁴⁵⁻⁶

9. Pl. 75a⁵⁷⁻⁸

Paddy and copper were also used as mediums of exchange in addition to silver in those days. Thus when in A.D. 1226 Anantasū's wife bought twenty slaves she said:

kywan 20 so aphuiw nuy khin piy so nuy kā na krañ kriy phlū 300 nuy pyān 200 // apoñ 500 khin piy e, //

(For the) price of twenty slaves 300 of na krañ white copper and 200 of pure silver, together 500 are weighed and give.

In A.D. 1301 Queen Caw bought a potter Nā Oñ and a gardener Nā Koñ at thirty ticals of silver and twenty viss of copper respectively.¹ As kappikā - personal attendant, to the most reverend Mlat Kri Nhakpactoñ she bought Na Kumikay paying twenty baskets of paddy and three viss of copper for him.² We also find that sometimes slaves were given away in exchange of elephants and horses. In A.D. 1164 a gentleman Krañ Caiñ gave sixty six Indian slaves in exchange for an elephant and forty for a horse.³ It must have been an exceptionally good horse to have cost forty slaves. In A.D. 1230, the wife of Supharac gave fifty domestic slaves for an elephant.⁴ In A.D. 1249, minister Jeyyapikrami recorded that he exchanged areca palm trees for some slaves at the rate of ten palms per slave.⁵ A concubine from Marhak once (AD. 1243) dedicated her slaves to a pagoda and after reflection she dedicated one hundred ticals of pure silver to the pagoda as the price of a slave woman whom she had already dedicated and then wanted to set free.⁶ But we cannot say that one hundred ticals of silver is the standard rate of redemption. The pious lady was buying the slave from the pagoda and it is almost certain that she was being very generous and charitable. When the slave Nā Oñ Caiñ who was fortunate enough to save money and redeemed himself, he paid his master Nā Mumì Sañ five viss of copper and became a free man in A.D. 1253.⁷ As it is not unusual even to-day in Burma a donor Rammanā Sañ in his zeal to amass merit spent beyond his means and found himself unable to pay the wages of the sculptor who made the image of Buddha. Thus he had to sell one of his slave women in A.D. 1272. It went on record as:

Iw Lat kuiw purhā plu so purhā samā kuiw lakkha acā asok nā roñ ruy pty sate⁸

I sell Iw Lat in order to give food and drink and wages to this image maker.

So a slave would cost approximately from twenty to thirty five ticals in silver or five to twenty viss in copper or twenty baskets of paddy plus three viss of copper, while fifty to sixty six slaves are exchanged with an elephant, forty with a horse and one with a boat. A slave could redeem himself for a little as five viss of copper but the price for redeeming a

1. Pl. 774-5

2. Pl. 3924-12

3. Pl. 39250

4. Pl. 94b¹⁵, 14

5. Pl. 156³⁻⁴

6. Pl. 175¹⁶, 17

7. Pl. 151¹⁸

8. Pl. 182a⁸⁻¹⁹

9. Pl. 238¹⁹

pagoda slave varied enormously. It depended upon the generosity of the redeemer. Though there is no direct evidence of large scale sale of slaves there must have been such instances because we find certain donors dedicating as many as 500 Burmese slaves, 500 Indian slaves, 116 Indian weavers, 850 Mani Sak slaves, etc.!

We have some instances of runaway slaves. Na Khyat Sañ whom we have mentioned above, said in one place that he originally intended a dozen slaves for the pagoda but unfortunately one escaped and therefore only eleven were left.² But when his dedication was put on record he stated the grand total dedicated to the pagoda as twelve. Perhaps he was hopeful of recapturing the slave or may be he thought that his intention of dedicating the slave amounted to a fact. In A.D. 1222, when Anantastūra and wife dedicated their garden at the port (sānphawchip) of Yanpuiw together with Indian slaves to the pagoda, they summed up thus.

*apón ဦုān hi so Kulā kri nāy cumi 28 pliy so 2 // apón 30 hi e, //*³

All Indian slaves both old and young at the garden numbered 28, two (had) escaped. Total 30.

The fact that runaway slaves were recorded in the total of slaves dedicated would suggest that whenever and wherever they were found out they would have to be returned to the establishment to which they belonged.

The lot of slaves does not seem to have been too hard and coupled with it was their probable reluctance to move away from their localities. Slaves were never taken away from their native places and were allowed to follow their own trade or profession. We have no evidence of transferring slaves from place to place. Usually they were attached to the land in their locality⁴ or in the case of professionals, people of the same vocations were grouped together.⁵ Cowherds remained with their cows in their usual pastures⁶. It was only ownership that changed. Towards the end of the dynasty, in A.D. 1266 a whole group of Indian slaves at Yanpuiw was recorded as having escaped.⁷ Yanpuiw was a port and therefore perhaps was within easy reach of the sea. This proximity to the sea may have tempted them to escape and an uneasy political situation at that time must also have been an added cause. We find mention of two more slaves escaping and in both cases, strange to say the runaways were widows.⁸ A mother also escaped with three daughters.⁹

Merciful owners is one of the outstanding feature of Pagan slavery. When a donor¹⁰ in A.D. 1198 dedicated 567½ pay of land and 228 slaves to the pagoda the majority of these

1. See Pl. 19b⁸, Pl. 164²¹, etc.

2. Pl. 75b⁵⁸

3. Pl. 76¹⁰

4. Pl. 216 (*passim*)

5. Pl. 1442a, 23

6. Pl. 1381⁵, 20

7. Pl. 216³³

8. Pl. 376¹⁹, 81

9. Pl. 1483¹⁹

10. Pl. 19b⁸⁻¹¹

worked on the lands and served the pagoda with the produce of the said land, but there were also slaves who were skilled artists. They were the leader of the group who was the general supervisor, the firewood cutter, the granary keeper, the dancer or singer and the drummer who in their own skilled ways served the pagoda. To prevent them from going hungry and probably to keep them from the ill usage of the majority, the donor made special provisions for them. Out of the $567\frac{1}{2}$ pay of land dedicated ten were for the supervisors, five for the granary keeper, five for the singer and three for the drummer.

In A.D. 1241 Queen *Caw* mother of *Singhapati* and *Tryāphyā* dedicated 260 pay of land, two gardens and 178 slaves to the pagoda.¹ She left detailed instructions regarding the food supply for slaves who were not connected with the land - the four night-watchmen of the hollow-pagoda and some musicians. They were provided with 135 baskets of paddy annually and thus each got roughly three quarters of a basket except for an old *cañsan* (drummer) and an old *pantyā* (? nauch) who got two baskets each. This shows the donor's kindness and care for details.

The wife of Prince *Gaigasura*, making a dedication of $511\frac{1}{2}$ pay of land in A.D. 1242 mentioned that 15 pay were for the slaves.² Another Queen *Caw*, mother of Prince *Rājasura* dedicated slaves to the monastery in A.D. 1291 and said:

|| cā chwam nhuik lup kluv so kywan tuiw le phyā nā uiw mañ kha so kā skhiñ aryā
tiuw si mrāñ ciy sate ||³

When any slave who cooks the daily food for the monks become sick or ill or (feeble with) old age, the monks must know and see (i.e. give proper treatment.)

This is the best security a man could desire against his old age and inability and the Pagan slaves had that security.

There is another piece of evidence showing the liberal mindedness of the slave owners of our period. Very often we find *rahan*⁴ (monk), *pancañ*⁵ (? a person who is proficient in the five requisite qualifications) and *bhikkhūñ*⁶ (a female ascetic) mentioned among lists of slaves. The only explanation we can think of with regard to their presence in the lists of slaves is that they were born of slave parents. The Buddhist Order recognized no class distinction and therefore they could not be slaves as well as members of the Order at the same time. They must have had the permission of their masters first before joining the Order perhaps with the understanding that if and when they left the Order they become slaves again. May be that is why their names were included in the slave lists so that in case they left the Order, they would not be able to deny their birth. Minister *Gaigābijāñ* allowed two adults and twenty children of his slaves to become monks and novices and set free ten debtor slaves.⁷

1. Pl. 13850.⁸

2. Pl. 147b²¹

3. Pl. 27528.⁹

4. Pl. 7⁸, Pl. 1745⁵, Pl. 2002²², Pl. 211⁵, Pl. 256⁷, Pl. 3085⁵, Pl. 376 (*passim*), etc.

5. Pl. 146⁵, Pl. 226¹⁵, Pl. 232^{8, 8, 9}

6. Pl. 8927, Pl. 9214

7. Pl. 30851.³

There were also equally broadminded slave owners who set their slaves free out of sheer kindness. In A.D. 1258 a rich man Nā Tuñ Pan Sañ dedicated nine slaves to the pagoda first and then said:

Tawli 1 yok // Sarabhi 1 yok // Ya Krwac iy kywan 3 yok kā alwat lhyan nā lhway kha sate // 1

I release from all bonds these three slaves (viz.) *Tawli*, *Sarabhi* and *Ya Krwa* (Miss Casket).

Princess *Acaw Lat*, daughter of King *Narasinha-Uccanā* and wife of minister *Jeyyasaddhi* built a hollow-pagoda in A.D. 1261 and dedicated sixty eight slaves to it. But she also gave another list of fifteen slaves and said:

...iy myha sa kywan kā phurhā tryā sañkhā tuiw kuiw le ma lhū lañ sā achuy amlyuiw tuiw kuiw le ma piy nā asak hi sa rhuy kā lup ciy so nā ma hi mu kā mrak nu riy krañ hi rā tā ciy sate // ... // i nā lhway so kywan tuiw kuiw le lai 1000 piy e //²

These slaves—I do not dedicate them to the Lord, the Law and the Order. Nor do (I) give them to (my) husband, children, relatives and friends. May they serve me while I am alive. After my death, they are allowed to go where there is tender grass and clear water³ ... To these slaves whom I had given liberty, I give one thousand pay of land.

One cannot help feeling that the princess was exceptionally kind and considerate as she not only freed her slaves but also provided for them. In A.D. 1238, *Nā Puik Sañ* and wife in the presence of notables of the village poured the water of libation and allowed a person 'to seek tender grass and clear water'.⁴ *Tryā Mwan*'s wife in A.D. 1267 used the same phrase, and set free 190 slaves.⁵ A donor after dedicating eight slaves to a pagoda in A.D. 1294 said to the slaves :

noñ khyam sā nuiw ka niy ma khyam sā nuiw ka mrak nu riy krañ, hi ra rā lā⁶

(After a while) if you still hope of comfort by remaining like this (i.e. as pagoda slaves), stay. If you lose hope of comfort seek tender grass and clear water.

So saying he left the matter entirely in the hands of the slaves. They could seek freedom whenever they wished. With ample funds provided by the rich donor and only an image

1. Pl. 191a^{15,16}

2. Pl. 201a^{9,11, 14}

3. The use of the phrase *mrak nu riy krañ*—meaning to seek places where there is tender grass and clear water suggests rather vaguely that the phrase was a relic of the nomadic past.

4. Pl. 210a⁵⁻⁴

5. Pl. 217a^{9,10, 28}, Pl. 218a¹

6. Pl. 280a⁹⁻¹¹

to look after, they decided, perhaps, to remain slaves for ever. That way of life was comparatively easy.¹ Another interesting point that we have noticed in this connection is in an inscription found at the Kyaukgu Onhmin and dated A.D. 1188 in which we read :

// Uttamapharac nhan man miya Uin Nay Cwan kuiw khwaw ruy mlay tan kup
lhyāñ thuy taw khla e man̄kri min e klok cā twari amañ hiy so purhā kywan kā sā
mliy acin khañ lwat ciy sate //2

Uttamapharac and *Uin Nay Cwan* the concubines, are summoned (into the royal presence) at *mlay tankup*- the earth pavilion, and the royal order is passed. The great king said " Pagoda slaves mentioned by name in the stone inscription and their children, grandchildren and posterity, are all released."

This is a royal order to set free pagoda slaves dedicated by others³.

From the above evidence we are under the impression that the lives of pagoda slaves were not unbearable but it is necessary to study their duties before coming to a definite conclusion. Therefore let us now turn our attention to the duties of slaves who were dedicated to pagodas or monasteries. In A.D. 1197, *Jeyyasethiy* dedicated 141 slaves to a pagoda and a monastery, in order that *samput wat* // *chimt wat* *ma prat cim*, so *nhā*⁴ - rice food and oil lamps be served without intermission. Slaves whose special duty was to cook rice or food at the monasteries were known as *samput khyak kywan*⁵ or *wat khyak kywan*.⁶ In A.D. 1223 minister *Anantasūra* and his wife made a religious establishment and desired that it should remain for all the five thousand years of the Religion. Therefore slaves were dedicated that

// *anhac* *kuiwāc* *akha* *mlai*, *mlay* *plu* *phā* *rac* *cim*, *so* *nhā* // *tanlai* *lhāñ* *cim* *so* *nhā* //
purhā *tryā* *nhui* *samput* // *chimt* *kywan* *pan* // *ma* *prat* *tan* *rac* *cim*, *so* *nhā* // *sāñ*
kham *so* *skhin* *ariyā* *tuiw*, *kuiw* *chwāñ* *pan* *lup* *khvāñ* *rac* *cim* *so* *nhā* // 7

they may go on forever doing the necessary repairs (at the establishment); to sweep the compound; to go on serving the Lord and the Law without intermission with rice food, oil lamps, betel and flowers; to go on serving the patient reverend monks with the flowers of rice food on behalf of the loving couple.

As seen in the above quotation when slaves were dedicated to the pagoda, the donors expressed the desire that they serve the Lord on their behalf by using the phrase *nhā kuiw cā* or *mimi kuiw cā*⁸. Minister *Mahāsman* in A.D. 1255 defined the duties of the slaves of a monastery as:

1. There are many pagoda slaves especially of the Pagan area, who not without reason believed themselves to be the descendants of the pagoda slaves from the period under discussion and elected to remain so when the British came and brought with them the abolition of slavery.
2. Pl. 228b^{14.15}
3. Incidentally, one of the first measures taken by the President of the Union of the Republic of Burma in 1948 immediately after independence was to declare all pagoda slaves free. See "Address by His Excellency Sao Shwe Thaik, President of the Union of Burma, to the Members of the Burma Parliament on 4 January 1948", *Burma Independence Celebrations*, Department of Information and Broadcasting, Government of the Union of Burma, 1948, pp. 15-17.
4. Pl. 16^{4.5}
5. Pl. 50²²
6. Pl. 186²⁰, Pl. 229²¹, Pl. 239⁸, Pl. 417⁹
7. Pl. 735^{0.5}. See also Pl. 802^{1.2}, Pl. 164^{0.8}, Pl. 197⁷, Pl. 235^{7.9}
8. Pl. 99^{0.10}, Pl. 152⁸, Pl. 164², Pl. 236^{0.10}, Pl. 238^{8.9}, Pl. 243¹¹

|| *iy mya sa kywan kā aryā saṅghā tuiw kuiw khriy (chiy riy) lak chiy riy khlii, riy (sok) riy khapsim so nhā wat khyak cim so taminiyak khlii klumi cim so nhā lhā sate1*

These slaves are to fetch water for the monks to wash their feet, hands and bodies and water to drink. They are (also) to cook the rice food, and to sweep and remove the refuse.

In A.D. 1262, a donor dedicated a *laksamā*² – carpenter and another a *panphay*³ – blacksmith, to repair a ruined monastery. Another donor dedicated eleven slaves in the same year so that they may be useful when repairs were needed at his religious establishment.⁴ The duties might vary slightly in detail between the slaves who were attached to the pagoda⁵, the Law⁶, the Order⁷, and the *śramaṇa*⁸. Some of the slaves were personal attendants to the head of the monastery.⁹

Apart from the slaves of the religious establishments, we also find the mention of domestic helps who were variously termed as *im kyawan*¹⁰, *im thoñ kyawan*¹¹ and *im niy*¹². Slaves of the royal household are called either *kywan taw*¹³ or *mañ im kri sañ*.¹⁴ The mention of a slave wife is very rare and we find it only twice as *kuiw lup*¹⁵ and *kuiw lup kywan miyama*.¹⁶

Another interesting thing about the slaves in the inscriptions is the terms used to describe them. When giving a list of slaves, whenever it is necessary short descriptions appear such as *im thoñ* for the head of the family, *karnay*¹⁷ for a widow, *Ya*¹⁸ as prefix for woman of Mon extraction, *pucu*¹⁹ for young people, *nuiw*, *cuiw*,²⁰ for sucklings, *cātāt*²¹ for literates and *sami apluiw* *ñay*²² for a young unmarried daughter. There are some terms used as prefixes to the names of both sexes and unfortunately we are still unable to give the right interpretation. They are *mhura*²³, *mrakra*²⁴, *phui*²⁵, and *uiw*, *phukhi*.²⁶ Tentatively, we consider them as overseers or foremen of working groups as *mhura* and *mrakra* suggest that they were employed for some work.

1. Pl. 186²⁷⁻⁸

2. Pl. 261⁷⁻⁸

3. Pl. 261²⁴, Pl. 262²⁵

4. Pl. 225⁶⁻⁷

5. Pl. 9⁵, Pl. 22^{18, 21}, Pl. 50⁷⁻¹⁴, Pl. 61^{8, 20}, Pl. 114a⁷⁻⁹, Pl. 130⁵⁻⁵, Pl. 131b⁹, Pl. 139⁶⁻⁸, etc.

6. Pl. 422⁸, Pl. 190a⁸, Pl. 229¹⁹

7. Pl. 114a⁷⁻⁹, Pl. 127a⁵, Pl. 164¹⁵, Pl. 190a⁹⁻¹¹, Pl. 20222, Pl. 212^{17-19, 20}, Pl. 214b¹, etc.

8. Pl. 212¹⁵⁻¹⁶

9. Pl. 229²⁰

10. Pl. 156^{5, 4}

11. Pl. 181^{5, 7, 10}

12. Pl. 228b⁹

13. Pl. 228b^{5, 6, 7}

14. Pl. 421a², Pl. 421b^{15, 17}

15. Pl. 140b¹⁴

16. Pl. 140b^{14, 15}

17. Pl. 4^{7, 25}, Pl. 73⁴²⁻⁴⁵, Pl. 200^{25, 26}, Pl. 256^{8, 15, 15}, Pl. 375^{15, 17}, etc.

18. Pl. 4^{7, 15}, etc.

19. Pl. 7⁹, Pl. 73⁵⁻⁶, 148a²¹, Pl. 255^{5, 14, 15}, Pl. 391⁷

20. Pl. 22⁹, Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 74^{2, 7}, Pl. 148a⁸, Pl. 181 (*passim*) Pl. 194 (*passim*), etc.

21. Pl. 78⁹, Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 148a²¹, Pl. 181 (*passim*), Pl. 201a^{1, 2, 4, 6}, Pl. 236^{6, 10, 15}, etc.

22. Pl. 270¹¹

23. Pl. 73^{1, 52, 55, 56}, Pl. 148a²¹, Pl. 201a^{1, 6, 7}, Pl. 256^{9, 14}, Pl. 376 (*passim*)

24. Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 75 (*passim*), etc.

25. Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 74 (*passim*), Pl. 200 (*passim*), etc.

26. Pl. 73 (*passim*), Pl. 201a⁵, Pl. 256^{7, 10, 12, 15}, Pl. 375⁵⁴, Pl. 376 (*passim*), etc.

Regarding literacy among slaves, let us take three inscriptions dated A.D. 1227,¹ 1235² and 1240³ where the mention of cātāt (literates) appears more frequently than in any other inscriptions. In the first inscription we find 78 slaves among whom 9 were literate (five boys and four girls). In the second, there were 116 slaves of whom 8 were literate (only boys). In the third, there were 140 slave of whom 17 were literate (13 boys and 4 girls). Therefore very roughly we should say that 9 per cent of the slaves were literate in those days. It is interesting to note that there were girls among the literates of which they formed a quarter. It is likely that the percentage of literacy increased towards the fall of the Pagan empire.

Slaves were of various nationalities. Naturally most of the slave population consisted of Burmans⁴. Sometimes slaves mentioned as of other nationalities had Burmese names. Next to the Burmans comes the Indian slaves.⁵ A donor in A.D. 1198 dedicated to the pagoda as many as five hundred Indian slaves. A slave called Kulāphū⁶ - white Indian, appears once. One hundred and twenty eight Kamīram⁷ slaves were dedicated in A.D. 1223. But Kamīram here may not possibly be the name of a people. Thus we are not certain that kamīram here has been used in the ethnic sense. In a list of slaves recorded in an inscription of A.D. 1242 there were thirty one Cakray⁸ slaves from Caku. Perhaps they were the ancestors of modern Sagaw Karens. There were also Sak people who still survive in Akyab district. A whole village of Sak called Munalon was dedicated in A.D. 1113 according to the Rājakumār inscription⁹ and eight hundred and fifty Sak slaves were mentioned in an inscription of A.D. 1248.¹⁰ Thirty Cin¹¹ slaves are dedicated to a pagoda in A.D. 1266 and perhaps there is a link between this Cin and the Chinese. Slaves called Nā Ton Sū¹² (Mr. Hillman) appear frequently but Ton Sū¹³ slaves are only mentioned twice. Nā Rakhui¹⁴ (Mr. Arakanese) is a popular name among the slaves. A Syam¹⁵ slave is mentioned in an inscription dated A.D. 1301. Pyu appears often but we find only one instance of a Pyu woodcutter¹⁶ as slave in an inscription. Kantu¹⁷ is also popular as a personal name mostly among woman slaves but it does not appear in its ethnic sense. Ya is a Mon prefix denoting a Mon woman's name and there are some names beginning with Ya. They seem to be Mon slaves. The last in our list are the Krwam¹⁸ - thought to be Cambodians. It mostly appears as a personal name

1. Pl. 73

2. Pl. 181

3. Pl. 376

4. Pl. 19b⁹, Pl. 65b², Pl. 89¹, Pl. 147b¹¹, Pl. 1642¹, Pl. 368b⁵, etc.

5. Pl. 101⁹, 20, Pl. 15¹², Pl. 19b⁶, Pl. 50¹², Pl. 65b², 5, 14, Pl. 68b²², Pl. 76⁴, 10, Pl. 81¹, 12, etc.

6. Pl. 431²

7. Pl. 94a⁵; see Luce: "Peoples of Burma", *JBRs*, XLII, i, 73.

8. Pl. 147b¹⁵; see Luce: "Introduction to the Comparative Study of Karen Languages", *JBRs*, XLII, i, 1 & 11.

9. Pl. 362a⁵⁰

10. Pl. 1642¹

11. Pl. 216⁵

12. Pl. 41⁶, Pl. 21¹⁶, Pl. 77¹⁴, Pl. 130¹⁴, Pl. 252¹², Pl. 378b⁴

13. Pl. 392¹⁷, Pl. 393¹⁵

14. Pl. 152⁷, Pl. 42¹⁰, Pl. 43⁸, Pl. 117a⁶, Pl. 231b¹⁴

15. Pl. 392²⁶

16. Pl. 393⁵

17. Pl. 29⁴, Pl. 144¹³, Pl. 148b⁸, Pl. 392¹⁰, 28, 51

18. Pl. 10a²⁴, Pl. 29¹⁰, Pl. 55a⁷, Pl. 216^{55, 56}

except in inscriptions dated A.D. 1241¹ and A.D. 1266.² Thus the slave population of our period had Burmese, ? Cambodian, ? Chinese, Indian, Kadu, Kanyan, Karen, Mon, Pyu, Shan, Taungthu and Thet but the Burmese and Indian slaves formed the majority.

The survey of the slaves of medieval Burma will not be complete without a study of their vocations. Undoubtedly land, cattle and slaves³ went together. For example King *Tarukpīly* gave *mliy 1000 // kywan 1000 // nwā 1000*⁴ – one thousand (*pay* of) land, one thousand slaves and one thousand cattle to his wet nurse *Ui Pōi Saī* soon after his accession to the throne. The vast majority of the slaves would be employed on *san lay* – wet cultivation fields, *muryān lay* – dry cultivation fields, *ryā* – hill-side cultivations, *kuiñ* – kitchen gardens and *uyan* – gardens. But there were also slaves with vocations and these throw some light on the social life of the period. Their professions roughly fall into five categories. Firstly, there are agriculturalists – cultivators, cowherds, etc.; secondly, food suppliers such as cooks; thirdly, craftsmen; fourthly, musicians; and finally, miscellaneous.

In the first category of agriculturalists, *lay sañ*⁵ or *lay su*⁶ – cultivators, tops the list. Then there are *lay uyan coñ*, *kywan*⁷ – slaves watching fields and gardens, *capā cuik kywan*⁸ – slaves to plant paddy and *uyan sañ*⁹ – gardeners. Next comes slaves who look after cattle and poultry and for convenience sake we include here herders of other animals as well. They are *nwā thin*,¹⁰ *klway thin*,¹¹ *chit thin*,¹² *chan thin*,¹³ and *wamipay thin*.¹⁴ Queen *Caw* in A.D. 1299 proudly mentioned that among the slaves dedicated to the pagoda was a *nwā klon cwan*¹⁵ – expert cowherd, called *Nā Lyon*. The mention of *nwā klon* taken in conjunction with other references to *thawpiy*, *thawpat*, *thawpat kī*, *nwā nuiw sañ*, *nuiw ñhat nwā mā*, *nuiw sac* and *nuiw thanim*¹⁷ would strongly suggest that dairy farming was a fairly important industry of the day.

In the second category, there were food suppliers such as cooks, butchers, milkmen, etc. Old Burmans used separate people for cooking rice and for cooking curry and thus they had

1. Pl. 138¹⁹

2. Pl. 216⁵⁶

3. Pl. 20a^{1,5,6,7,8,10}, Pl. 34⁴, Pl. 83⁶⁻⁷, Pl. 91¹⁴, Pl. 104⁷, Pl. 110⁵⁻⁶, Pl. 115⁸, Pl. 123⁵, etc.

4. Pl. 218a^{4,7}, Pl. 219b^{4,7}

5. Pl. 193²⁶

6. Pl. 110⁷

7. Pl. 75a⁵³

8. Pl. 75a⁵⁵, Pl. 175², Pl. 200^{21,27}

9. Pl. 76^{2,10}, Pl. 181²⁰, Pl. 235^{1,4}, Pl. 392¹¹

11. Pl. 138^{15,20}, Pl. 144¹¹, Pl. 152²², Pl. 203¹⁰, Pl. 388a¹², Pl. 423⁵⁹

12. Pl. 73⁴⁷

13. Pl. 153a¹⁸, Pl. 153b⁸, Pl. 394⁴, Pl. 582b⁵

14. Pl. 76^{23,24,28}, Pl. 217²⁴, Pl. 257²¹

15. Pl. 183a¹²

16. Pl. 390⁵⁵

17. Pl. 36¹⁸, Pl. 94a⁵⁵, Pl. 134a⁴, Pl. 235⁹, Pl. 376⁵⁴, etc.

thamañ sañ¹ – rice cooks and *hañ sañ²* – curry cooks. Perhaps, these slaves were attached to big monastic establishments so that cooking rice alone required an army of slaves. For the domestic cook they had *im thamañ khyak*.³ To supply meat they had *amay sañ⁴* or *may sañ⁵* – butchers, *sacuiw⁶* – keepers of game and *muchuiw⁷* – hunters. *Puik sañ⁸* or *kwan sañ⁹* – net men supplied fish. For sweetmeats, there were *nwā nuiw, sañ¹⁰* – the milkmen and *yana, pyasañ¹¹* – the honey men. Chewing betel was a regular practice and perhaps demanded specialized service.¹² They had *kwam sañ¹³*, *kwam tau sañ¹⁴*, *kwam si tañ¹⁵* and *kwam mwan taw sañ¹⁶* as servers of *kwam yā¹⁷* – betel quids.

The third category included craftsmen who were builders and decorators of the beautiful Pagan architecture. They were *laksmā¹⁸* – carpenters, *racañ sañ¹⁹* – plane men *puran²⁰* – masons, as builders; *panpu²¹* – woodcarvers, *pankhī²²* – painters, *panpwat²³* – wood-turners, *tankyat sañ²⁴* – ? canopy makers as decorators; *ut sañ²⁵* – brickmakers to supply bricks; *panphay²⁶* – blacksmiths to supply things made of iron and *athu sañ²⁷* or *purhā sañ²⁸* – image makers to supply the images of the Lord. *Thi sañ²⁹* – umbrella makers manufactured golden umbrellers to spread over the images, etc. These builders, suppliers of building

1. Pl. 36¹⁸, Pl. 391^{51,52}, Pl. 417¹²

2. Pl. 36¹⁸, Pl. 391^{50,51}

3. Pl. 110⁶

4. Pl. 391^{55,55}

5. Pl. 153a²², Pl. 153b¹⁰

6. Pl. 36¹⁹

7. Pl. 71⁷, Pl. 148a¹⁴

8. Pl. 7⁹

9. Pl. 267⁴

10. Pl. 36¹⁸

11. Pl. 36¹⁸

12. See *BRSEFAP*, II, p. 352, n. 64.

13. Pl. 391^{55,54}

14. Pl. 476¹⁵

15. Pl. 229¹⁸

16. Pl. 74²⁸

17. Pl. 139¹¹

18. Pl. 81¹², Pl. 261⁷

19. Pl. 102¹⁴, Pl. 391⁵⁵, Pl. 392²⁴

20. Pl. 68²², Pl. 81⁵², Pl. 144⁵, 147b¹⁹

21. Pl. 68²², Pl. 81⁴, Pl. 144⁵

22. Pl. 68²², Pl. 144⁵

23. Pl. 144¹², Pl. 392¹⁹, Pl. 575^{2,11}

24. Pl. 194²⁷

25. Pl. 594¹⁵

26. Pl. 68²², Pl. 78a⁷, Pl. 102¹⁴, Pl. 153a¹¹, Pl. 261²⁵, Pl. 413^{10,11}

27. Pl. 392¹¹

28. Pl. 391⁵

29. Pl. 148b^{5,8,9}

materials and decorators must have been very busy as the period under survey is sometimes called the period of temple-builders. There were also *panthin*¹ – goldsmiths to make jewellery as well as the spires of temples and pagodas where precious metals and stones were used.

Some artisans made articles of daily use. For pots and pans, there were *uiw thin*² – potters, *kara sañ*³ – jug makers and *lanpānsañ*⁴ – tray makers. For making clothes, there were *khrā sañ*⁵ and *khrañ ñay sañ*⁶ – spinners, *pukhrañ sañ*⁷ – loinloth makers, and *yansañ*⁸ weavers. They wove such as *kawthā*, *khainhī*, *khruykhāñ*, *takyat*, *tanñi prok*, *tuyan*, *pukhrañ*, *puchuiw*, *sakkham*, *sajkan*, *sañpuñ*, etc.⁹ There were also *sānāphway*¹⁰ which Professor G. H. Luce suggests were chairmakers. Chairs being not in popular use until European influences were felt in Burma, perhaps it meant cushion makers.

In the third category of musicians, which included players of various musical instruments, the drummers seems to be the most common. Singing and dancing to the drum could have been the most popular musical entertainment that the old Burmans resorted to because there were more slaves employed as *cañ sañ*¹¹ – drummers and *pantyā*¹² – nautches (singers or dancers or both) than any other musician. For singing alone, they had *sikhran sañ*¹³ – the singers and for dancing alone, they had *kakhriy sañ*¹⁴ – the dancers. Other musicians were *kharā sañ*¹⁵ – trumpeters, *khwakkhwāñ sañ*¹⁶ – cymbal players, *candra sañ*¹⁷ – ? dulcimer players, *coñ sañ*¹⁸ – harpists, *ñhañ sañ*¹⁹ – another group of trumpeters together with those who blew *tapuiw*²⁰ – horns and *narañ crā*²¹ – some sort of wind instruments, *noñnan sañ*²² – bell players, *pasā sañ*²³ – side drummers and *saro sañ*²⁴ – ? violinists.

1. Pl. 322, Pl. 75a⁴⁰, Pl. 144¹², Pl. 387a⁹, Pl. 393⁵

2. Pl. 392¹¹

3. Pl. 216⁵⁰

4. Pl. 164^{25,29}

5. Pl. 391⁵⁶

6. Pl. 391⁵⁴, Pl. 393²⁹

7. Pl. 392⁵⁰

8. Pl. 148b^{5,6}, Pl. 1642¹, Pl. 1944⁹, Pl. 216⁵³, Pl. 217^{19,25}, Pl. 250¹, Pl. 3902⁴, Pl. 391^{15,22}, Pl. 393^{6,28}

9. Pl. 28a¹⁷, Pl. 28b²⁰, Pl. 36²⁵, Pl. 73¹⁵, Pl. 79o^{22,51}, Pl. 97^{18,19,20,22}, Pl. 138^{13,14}, Pl. 212¹⁴, Pl. 309⁴, Pl. 372¹, Pl. 393^{19,28}

10. Pl. 105a²⁴. See *JBRS*, XLII, i, p. 72

11. Pl. 9⁸, Pl. 10a^{7,20,22}, P. 15¹¹, etc.

12. Pl. 5^{8,10,15}, Pl. 9⁸, Pl. 10a^{19,21}, etc.

13. Pl. 31⁶, Pl. 85⁹, Pl. 421b⁴

14. Pl. 15¹², Pl. 31⁴, Pl. 391⁴

15. Pl. 68²²

16. Pl. 10a¹⁹, Pl. 17¹⁸, Pl. 138^{10,58}, etc.

17. Pl. 85⁹. See U Po Lat: "Union Culture: Its Sources and Contacts," *Burma*, III, i, October 1952, pp. 4-5.

18. Pl. 265⁵⁵

19. Pl. 81²¹, Pl. 396b¹⁹

20. Pl. 367a⁵

21. Pl. 138a^{31,53}

22. Pl. 171⁹, Pl. 367a⁵

23. Pl. 10a¹⁶, Pl. 172⁰, Pl. 73⁵⁸, etc.

24. Pl. 387a⁵

Lastly, there were slaves of various other vocations. They were *alay sañi*¹ - ?brokers, *uphway sañi*² - coiffeurs, *ka sañi*³ - harness makers, *kuhā sañi*⁴ - launderers, *cākhi*⁵ or *cāriy*⁶ - clerks, *ci con*⁷ - keepers of the granary, *chā sañi*⁸ - salt makers, *chañ chum sañi*⁹ - oil producers, *thañ sañi*¹⁰ - wood cutters, *nagā krañ sañi*¹¹ - ?armourers, *pi sañi*¹² - ?salted fish makers, *phattā sañi*¹³ or *bhandā sañi*¹⁴ - ?stewards, *muchit rip*¹⁵ - barbers, *mlon mliy sañi*¹⁶ - ?canal diggers, *rakan sañi*¹⁷ - ?poets, *riy sañi*¹⁸ - water carriers, *lak sañi*¹⁹ - midwives, *lak sañi thuiw*²⁰ - manicurists, *lhañ sañi*²¹ - cartmen, *lhawkañ sañi*²² - boat men, *samkok sañi*²³ - blacksmiths, and *sañyāñ sañi*²⁴ - palanquin bearers.

Slavery in medieval Burma is different from the modern concept of slavery. Slaves of those times must have found their lot tolerably comfortable. The presence of voluntary slaves explains this. In addition to these voluntary slaves, there were hereditary slaves, debtor slaves and war captive slaves. We have however, no evidence to show the presence of slave raids, piracy and kidnapping. The slave community was considerable and therefore there were slave villages with their own administrative officers as *sūkrī*²⁵ - headmen to control the village, *kumthāñi*²⁶ - to supervise cultivation and *sañkri*²⁷ and *sanlyāñi*²⁸ as village elders. Ownership of slaves often changed but generally the slaves were allowed to remain in their own locality. Perhaps this was one of the causes why runaway slaves were rare. To gain liberty a slave could redeem himself or run away. There is no mention of cruel laws in connection with runaway slaves. The slaves appear to have been quite contented with their lot and the masters were merciful. Some owners set them free and even gave them land

1. Pl. 422a(iii)⁵
2. Pl. 387a⁵
3. Pl. 79b⁸, Pl. 891⁵ (*mrañ ka samā*)
4. Pl. 81¹⁷, Pl. 144¹⁴, Pl. 148b^{5, 9, 10}, Pl. 392^{17, 51}
5. Pl. 422⁸, Pl. 892¹, Pl. 156⁶
6. Pl. 144⁶
7. Pl. 19b¹⁰, Pl. 681⁹, Pl. 140b¹ (*ki cori*), Pl. 379⁵, Pl. 391²⁰ (*ki sañi*)
8. Pl. 216⁵³
9. Pl. 370⁵¹ (*chañ sañi*), Pl. 391²⁶ (*chi sañi*), Pl. 417¹²
10. Pl. 392¹², Pl. 393⁵
11. Pl. 421b⁶
12. Pl. 79b⁸, Pl. 252¹², Pl. 253a⁵
13. Pl. 392⁹
14. Pl. 74¹⁵
15. Pl. 395⁵⁰
16. Pl. 423^{50, 51}
17. Pl. 216⁴⁵
18. Pl. 392⁵
19. Pl. 79b⁷
20. Pl. 79b⁸, Pl. 387a²
21. Pl. 392⁴
22. Pl. 376^{7, 8, 10, 15, 14, 24}
23. Pl. 138⁵²
24. Pl. 148b^{5, 8, 6}, Pl. 275¹⁹
25. Pl. 892²², Pl. 148b¹¹
26. Pl. 681⁹
27. Pl. 25⁸, Pl. 43¹⁴
28. Pl. 73⁴⁸, Pl. 74⁴, Pl. 226²³

to cultivate so that they may not be without a livelihood. Some owners even made special provisions for old or sick slaves. Slaves were allowed to become monks and nuns. The mention of a slave wife is very rare. Perhaps taking slave wife was unpopular. Slaves were also taught to read and write and very roughly we find that about nine per cent of them were literate. Various nationalities were found among slaves but Burmans and Indians were most numerous. The majority of the slaves were used for cultivation but there were also many who were employed in various other ways. There were domestic slaves, pagoda slaves and monastery slaves but this differentiation is not of status but of ownership. It is only in modern times that the pagoda slaves were considered as social outcasts.

APPENDIX I

THE LAND MEASURE

IN the inscriptions of our period, with the exception of a few cases where *namuin*¹ or *tamuin*² are used we find that *pay* is the standard land measure. We do not know the area of a *pay* in the Pagan period but we do know the area of the Konbaung pay which is mentioned in the literature of the day.³ The *Manu Kyay Dhammasat*⁴ says that a *pay* is twenty *tā* square where one *tā* is seven cubits long. Another source says that it is twentyfive *tā* square.⁵ *Kri:sai Lethap Charātoau* says that there are two kinds of *pay*, viz. *mai: pay* – the king's land measure and *chan: raisā: pay* – the poor man's land measure (also known as *pakati pay* – the normal measure) and that the first is twice the latter.⁶ King Bodawpaya left an inscription of about A.D. 1791 in Amarapura, together with two squares of masonry as a guide for land measures. They are about half a mile south east of the Araukan pagoda, Mandalay. According to Sir George Scott the *ton* – cubit engraved on the stone measures 19.05 inches.⁸ Thus the *pakati pay* which is 25 *tā* square would be 1.77 acres. It is very likely that the *pay* used in our period is the same as the *pakati pay* of Bodawpaya's time.

1. Pl. 242 (*passim*), Pl. 557b2. – Perhaps it is a spoonrised Mon word *bhan* meaning ridges in a paddy field like the Burmese *kansan*:

2. Pl. 380⁹,¹¹

3. References mentioned here are kindly furnished by the Burmese Dictionary Department, School of Oriental and African Studies for which I am deeply grateful.

4. *The Dhammathat or the Laws of Menoo*, (Moulmein 1847) English Translation by D. Richardson, pp. 153-4; *Manu Kyay*, Rangoon, Hanthawaddy Press, 1903, Part VI, Para xi, p.156

5. *Selections from the Records of the Hluttaw*, (Rangoon, 1960 Reprint) p. 257, n. 83

6. *Jinathapakdāni*, (Mandalay, 1923) pp. 398-9. See also J. C. Clancey: *Aids to Land Surveying*; Rangoon, BTS Burmese version, 1953, p. 23.

7. List 1261, B, I, pp. 1-2. See also G. Scott: *GUBSS*, I, ii, 167-8. Hmawbi Saya Thein Gyi suggests A.D. 1791 was the date of the inscription. *Pajā Rājawan* (The By-ways of Burmese History), Rangoon, 1958 Reprint, p. 286

8. G. Scott: *GUBSS*, I, ii, 168

APPENDIX II

VOTIVE TABLETS OF BURMA

Votive tablets are a prolific source of the early history of Burma and as such serve as a complement to the material gained from epigraphs. Votive tablets have been found throughout Burma from as far north as Nwatale Ywazo near the confluence of the Irrawaddy and Shweli Rivers to as far south as Mergui. But until a large number of such tablets had been collected and a description of them together with facsimile reproductions were published a historical study based on them was not possible. Thus material from the votive tablets was not available at the time of writing or revising this book. But when this book was about halfway through the press Thiripyanchi U Mya, Officer on Special Duty, Archaeological Survey of Burma, published a book - *Votive Tablets of Burma* in two parts with the aid of the Asia Foundation.¹ Part I deals with the tablets of the Pagan period (118 illustrations) covering the 11th, 12th and 13th centuries A.D. and Part II with tablets of the Pyu (90 illustrations) from about the 5th to the 11th centuries A.D. U Mya's reason for this reversal of the chronological order is that a knowledge of the Pagan tablets are necessary for the more difficult study of the Pyu ones.

Cetiya means a sepulchral monument but with its extended meaning it includes *sārīrīka* (bodily relics of the Buddha), *paribhoga cetiya* (a thing used by the Buddha), *uddissana* (a thing made sacred by dedication) and *dhamma cetiya* (a memorial in honour of the Law). *Uddissana* again is of many varieties - the images of the Buddha made in various postures as suggested by his life stories form the major kind of *uddissana* and so too are the votive tablets.

Clay tablets of the Buddha or Bodhisattva in relief made by means of moulds² are usually baked.³ These moulds were either imported from India or made locally.⁴ These tablets⁵ probably originated from the pilgrims bringing back momentos from such places as Kapilavastu,⁶ Budh Gaya,⁷ Banaras,⁸ Kusinagara⁹ or any other place associated with the life of the Buddha. These souvenirs inspired the people of Buddhist lands outside India to make votive tablets locally as a means of acquiring merit. Most donors cannot cast bronze images or carve wooden or stone statues themselves with their own hands but they could make thousands of tablets by just pressing down the stamp on lumps of potter's clay and

1. Rangoon University Press, September and December 1961

2. Some of these moulds are shown in U Mya: *Votive Tablets of Burma*, I, Figs. 114, 115, 116, 117 and 118.

3. In Thailand the tablets were not always baked. See G. Coédès. "Siamese Votive Tablets", (Tr. by W. A. Graham), *SSFACP*, I, (pp. 150-87) p. 156.

4. *ASI*, 1905-06, p. 170

5. Myepônnya and Okkhwak in Burmese and Brahma Bimb in Thai

6. The original home of the Buddha

7. The place of Enlightenment

8. The place where the first sermon was preached

9. The place of the great decease

write their names on the reverse together with the boon they craved as a result of these meritorious acts. The act of pressing clay tablets perhaps gave them a great deal of personal satisfaction because they have done something directly for the Buddha - a satisfaction which they may not have had by just building a pagoda, monastery, etc. which was done by the hands of artisans. A Burmese record of Bodawpaya's time (1781-1819) mentions that the King made as many as 512,028 tablets to be enshrined in the relic chambers of four pagodas built at the four corners of the new royal city of Amarapura.¹

Professor G. Coëdès was of the opinion that the practice of making clay votive tablets was confined only to the Buddhists.² But seals and moulds of Brahmanical deities and symbols have been found -

Mahākāli from *Nālandā* of the late Gupta period³ (6th century A.D.),

Sīvalīṅga from *Kālañjara* in Bundelkhand,⁴

Sīva in the *Bhadreśvara* aspect also from *Kālañjara*,⁵

Gaṇeśa from *Nālandā*,⁶

Garuda from *Nālandā* of the reign of *Kumāra Gupta I* (c.415-54)⁷ and

Mahisāsuramardini cast from a mould belonging to the early *Chalukya* dynasty (550-642) found at Peshwar.⁸

The above mentioned finds prove that clay tablets were also used by devotees of Hinduism. Usually these tablets have some sort of writing on them.

The writing embossed on the obverse below the Buddha's throne is mostly in a south Indian script on the 5th century A.D. or later. It is almost invariably the famous stanza uttered by *Assaji* when he told *Sāriputta* the keynote of the Buddha's teaching. It runs:

ye dhammā hetuppabuvaā tesam hetum Tathāgato āha tesā ca yo nirodho, evarivādī Mahāsamo.⁹

The conditions which arise from a cause, of these the *Tathāgata* has stated the cause, also the way of suppressing these same: this is the teaching of the Great Ascetic.¹⁰

In this stanza we have the essence of Buddhism which had the power of converting *Sāriputta* to Buddhism. Perhaps this is the reason why it is used in propagating the Religion. The style of writing the letters in this stanza varied with the times and this coupled with the style of writing on the reverse mentioning the name of the donor helps one to ascertain the date of the tablet.

The Burma votive tablets belongs from the 5th to the 15th centuries A.D. Their find spots are shown in the accompanying map. The size and shape of these tablets vary very

1. *Ame:tauphre* (*Mo:tho:i*'s Answers to the King's Queries). Māndalay, Jambū, mitchwe Piṭaka Press, 1961, p. 43

2. *SSFACP*, I, pp. 150-1

3. Jitendra Nath Banerjea: *The Development of Hindu Iconography*, University of Calcutta, 1956 Second Edition p. 187 and Pl. XI, no. 11

4. *Ibid.*, p. 183 and Pl. XI, no. 10

5. *Ibid.*, p. 184 and Pl. XI, no. 9

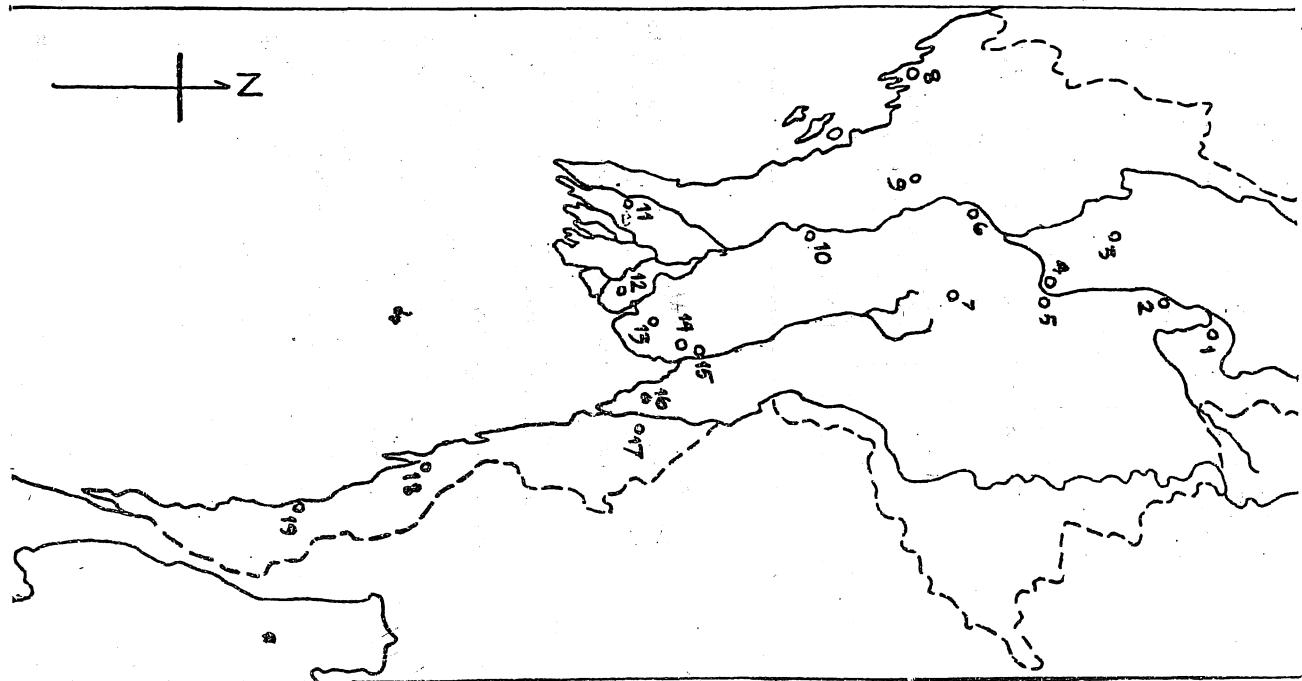
6. *Ibid.*, p. 187 and Pl. X, no. 12

7. *Ibid.*, p. 532 and Pl. XXVIII, no. 1

8. *Ibid.*, p. 500 and Pl. XLII, no. 1

9. *DPPN*, I, 224

10. *SSFACP*, I, 154



MAP IV

THE FIND SPOTS OF THE VOTIVE TABLETS: 1. Nwatale of Nga-O, 2. Tagaung, 3. Ye-U (Chantha), 4. Sagaing, 5. Mandalay, 6. Pagan, 7. Thazi (Sameitshe), 8. Akyab, 9. Salin (Phaunglin), 10. Prome (Hwawza), 11. Bassein 12. Twante (Sanywa), 13. Rangoon, 14. Pegu, 15. Wo (Kyontu), 16. Thaton, 17. Pha-an (Kawgun), 18. Tavoy, 19. Mergui

much. They range from $1\frac{1}{2}$ " in diameter to $1' 5'' \times 2' 7'' \times 6''$. There are about seventeen different shapes of which the most common is either the fig leaf (No. 3)¹ or the arched window (No. 10).² The seventeen are as follows:

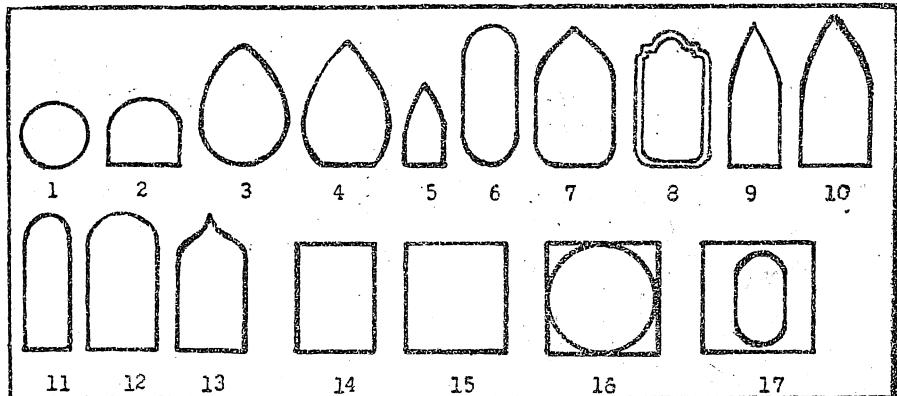


Fig. 1.

Out of 160 tablets surveyed 44 are of shape No. 3 (fig leaf) and 57 of shape No. 10 (arched window). No. 3 seems to have been very popular during Pyu times from the 5th to the 9th century and No. 10 in the Pagan period from the 10th to the 13th century. The third and fourth shapes in frequency (Nos. 1 and 2) are almost confined to the Pyu times. We find only one each from the later period. In size, Nos. 1, 2, and 3 are much smaller than No. 10 which is about three times bigger. This indicates that people of the later periods preferred larger tablets. They even had some which were $1'5'' \times 2'7'' \times 6''$ ³.

The central figure of the tablet is usually the Buddha and the earliest known one is the relief on a silver reliquary with bodhi *mandala* i.e. made in the shape of a bodhi tree standing on a circular mound, which has four sitting figures of the Buddha in the *bhūmisparśa mudrā* (earth touching attitude) and four standing monks⁴ – one Buddha between two monks. The upper rim of the reliquary has an inscription in the south Indian script of the 5th century and therefore it is taken to be of a relic of the 5th century.⁵ But the reliquary is similar to those of Kanishka and Bimaran⁶ of the 2nd century A.D. though the folds of the robe are not as clearly visible on the Buddha of the Pyu casket as in the Kanishka one. The icon on the Pyu casket has a round face with plump cheeks, short neck and a massive body with only a slight protuberance for the *ushnisha* (hairknot) and snail shells for the hair. The facial expression is quite different from those of the Pagan period.

1. $2'' \times 3\frac{1}{2}''$ *VTB*, I, 53

2. $5'' \times 7\frac{1}{2}''$ *VTB*, I, 50

3. *VTB*, I, 12ab

4. *VTB*, II, 1

5. *VTB*, I, p. 12

6. See Benjamin Rowland: *The Art and Architecture of India*. Pelican History of Art Series. 1936. Pl. 38ab

In contrast to the image of the Pyu period, a Buddha of the Pagan period¹ and the *tarñkai* (backpart of the seat) are described in detail by U Mya as follows.² The Buddha sits on a lotus seat in *dyānāsana* – crosslegged with both soles turned up and in *bhūmisparśa mudrā* – the earth touching attitude calling upon the Earth to bear witness or *bhay tarñ ñā khya* – the left arm folded with the right arm hanging down. The almond shape eyes look straight ahead. The nose is quite prominent but the stern expression of the face is softened by the smiling lips. The right arm extends downward with a slight bend at the elbow. The fingers touching earth have varying lengths as those of an ordinary man. The palm of the left hand is spread between the two heels with a pleated end of the robe falling over it. *Urñā* (the whorl of hair on the brow) is just a dot. *Ushñisha* (the protuberance on the head) tapers into a lotus bud. The protrusion however does not begin from the middle but from the back part of the head. In addition to this, the *ushñisha* is small for the body. The ear lobes do not touch the shoulders.³ The forehead is high and the neck is slender. The torso is probably of the Lion Type which is explained as “the chest is massive and corpulent, the waist slim”⁴. The *ekacika sanghāti* (the upper garment) covers only the left shoulder and the pleated end of the robe on this shoulder which usually stops just above the nipple is not shown in this figure at all. The robe is so thin that the navel is quite discernable. There are no longer any folds

in the robe as in the figures of the Pyu period.⁵ The *Padmāsana* or *krā pallan* (Lotus Throne), stands out in high relief. The halo has beads around it suggesting spreading rays. A horizontal line runs at the level of the shoulder and its ends curl up into the horns of a *makara* (sea monster). Two *harisā* (geese) sit on this line and their spreading tails merge into the beads of the halo. Beads also go round the Buddha in a beautiful curve. The *calac* (pédiment) stands on two *pwat tuin* (polished pillars) with a semi circular double rimmed top and three tiers. The *kwamñhōn* (? *sikhara* – pinnacle) is like a drum with floral decorations. It is in three layers. The *āmalaka* (emblic myrobalan) tops the drum. These are crowned with a small *cetiya* from which two streamers fly in graceful curves. The whole top which is known as the *sikhara* looks like the *Mahābodhi* stupa of Budh Gaya. (Fig. 2) On each side of the *sikhara* grow bodhi trees and two lotus buds hang from the pillars that stand on either side of the Buddha.

Fig. 2 *Sikhara* (from *VTB*, I, 1)

There is a beaded border and the whole scene depicts the Enlightenment of the Buddha. Immediately below the lotus seat are two lines of embossed *Nāgarī* letters giving the famous stanza of *ye dharmā*. The reverse has King *Aniruddha*’s name and prayer (Fig. 3) written in a cursive hand perhaps at the time when the tablet was made. It says:

1. *VTB*, I, 1

2. *VTB*, I, pp. 3-5

3. See A.B. Griswold: *Dated Buddha Images of Northern Siam*. Ascona. Artibus Asiae. 1957, p. 71, No. 5 top right.

4. *Ibid.*, p. 32

5. *VTB*, II, 12

Eso bhagavā Mahārāja Siri Aniruddhadevena kato vimuttatthām sahatthe ne vāti.

Desiring that he may be freed from *sarisāra*, the Great Prosperous King *Aniruddha* himself made this image of the Lord.

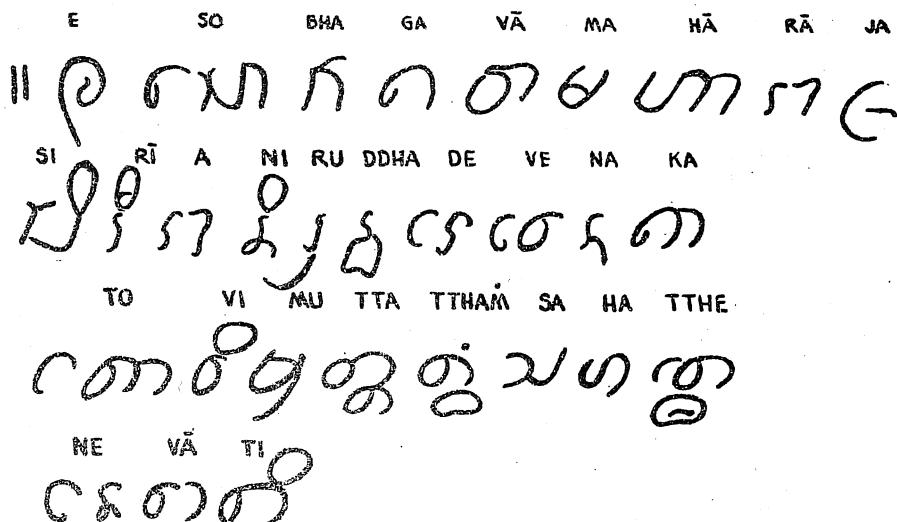


Fig. 3 The writing on the reverse of *Aniruddha*'s Tablet

In another tablet of *Aniruddha*, we have *eso lokanātho* (*VTB*, I, 3, p. 9) instead of *eso bhagavā*. This indicates Mahāyanism. But his prayer which is given below is in conformity with Hinayanism as he only wanted *nirvāṇa* when *Maitreya* becomes the Buddha.

*maya Niruddhadevena kirtam sugata sañjakam, tena Meaitreya māmvodho labhe
yan airvaratto padam.* (*VTB*, I, 5, p. 11)

He was not ambitious to become the Buddha himself like *Thiluin Mai*. (*VTB*, I, 41, p. 29) Another king who followed suit was *Vajrābharana* (? 1077-85) (*VTB*, I, 37, p. 27). Queen *Trilokavatamisakā* also prayed for *nirvāṇa*. (*VTB*, I, 42, pp. 30-1).

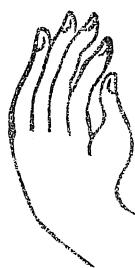
The Buddha images are made in various *mudrā* (hand positions) and *āsana* (feet positions)¹. Ten hand positions have been observed in the figures varying from the Buddha and Bodhisattva to the disciples and devotees. They are :

1. Most of the illustrations given here are from Benoytosh Bhattacharyya: *The Indian Buddhist Iconography*, Calcutta, F.K.L. Mukhopadhyay, 1958 Reprint and Antoinette K. Gordon: *The Iconography of Tibetan Lamaism*, Tokyo, 1959 Edition.

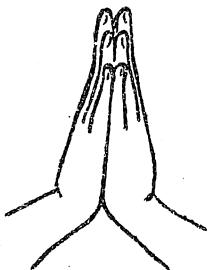
1. *Abhaya mudrā*—the attitude of protection or the blessing of fearlessness, where a slightly bent right arm is raised to the breast level with all fingers extended and the palm showing outward (Fig. 4) (VTB, I, 63; VTB, II, 54, 77)
2. *Ālīṅgana mudrā* — attitude of embrace (VTB, II, 31,32)
3. *Añjali mudrā* — salutation, with both arms stretched upward above the head. Some scholars take it to be a prayer attitude with clasped hands (Fig. 5)(VTB, II, 41)
4. *Bhūmisparśa mudrā* — witness or earthtouching attitude, which is in fact calling upon the Earth to bear witness when Māra came to attack the Buddha immediately after the Enlightenment. The right arm is pendant over the right knee with the palm turned inward and all fingers touching the *Padmāsana* (Lotus Throne). (Fig. 6)

Fig. 4 *Abhaya*Fig. 5 *Añjali*Fig. 6 *Bhūmisparśa*

5. *Dharmacakra mudrā* (*Vyākhyāna mudrā*) — preaching or turning the wheel of Law with both hands against the breast, the left covering the right hand (Fig. 7)
6. *Dhyānā mudrā* (*Samādhi mudrā*) — meditation, where both hands (right on left) lie in the lap with all fingers extended and palms up(Fig. 8) (VTB, I, 89; VTB, II, 2,8)
7. *Mahākāruṇika mudrā*—compassion, with left hand pressed against the breast (Fig. 9) (VTB, I, 63, 104)

Fig. 7
Dharmacakra (*Vyākhyāna*)Fig. 8
Dhyānā (*Samādhi*)Fig. 9
Mahākāruṇika

8. *Namaskāra mudrā* — prayer, with both hands at the breast in an attitude of prayer (Fig. 10) (VTB, I, 63,74,108; VTB, II, 19, 40)
9. *Varada mudrā (Vara mudrā)* — charity or gift bestowing, where the arm is pendant with all fingers extended downward and the palm turned outward (Fig. 11) (VTB, I, 50,51; VTB, II, 24,28)
10. *Vitarka mudrā* — argument, where the arm is bent with all fingers extended except the index finger which touches the thumb (Fig. 12) (VTB, I, 93; VTB, II, 3,49)

Fig. 10 *Namaskāra*Fig. 11 *Varada (Vara)*Fig. 12 *Vitarka*

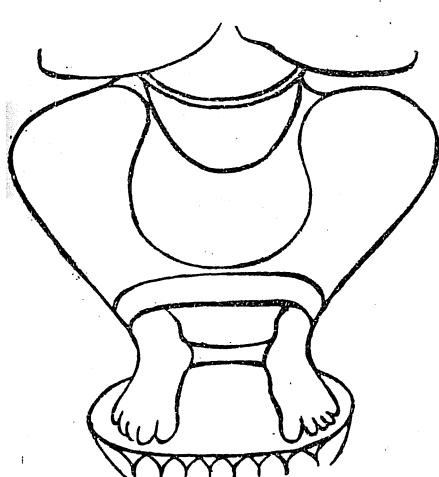
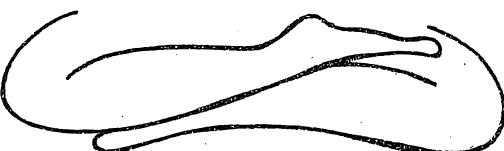
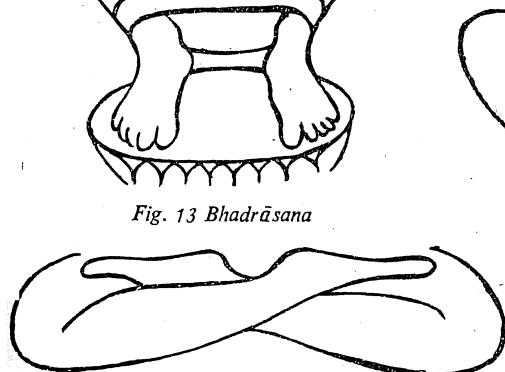
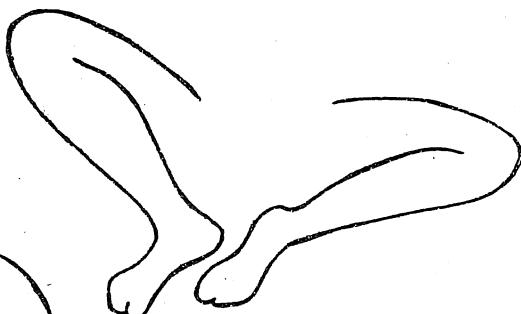
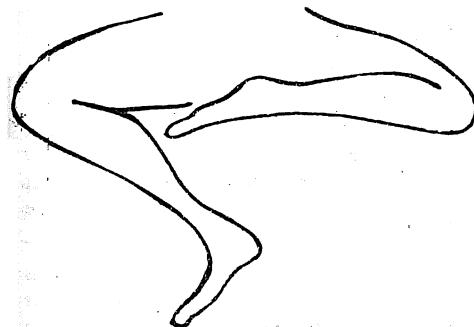
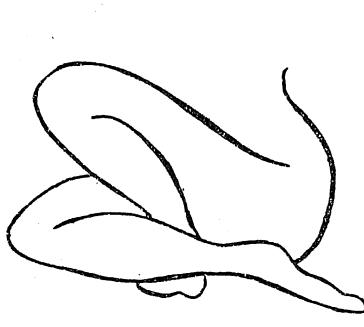
During the Pyu period a number of *mudrā* were used — *bhūmiśparśa mudrā* was the most popular, then *dharmaśakra*, *dhyānā*, *varada*, *namaskāra*, *abhaya*, *ālingana*, *añjali* and *vitarka* but none of *mahākāruṇika* and *mahāparinivāṇa*. In Pagan times the *bhūmiśparśa* was still the most popular, next comes the *dharmaśakra*, *mahāparinirvāṇa*, *varada* and *namaskāra*. There were very few of *abhaya*, *dhyānā*, *mahākāruṇika* and *vitarka*.

Regarding *āsana* (feet positions), we find eight varieties in the votive tablets of Burma. They are :

1. *Āliḍhāsana* — standing in the attitude of drawing the bow, with the left foot forward and the leg slightly bent and the right leg straight. It signifies heroism.
2. *Bhadrāsana*¹ — sitting with both legs pendant (Fig. 13) (VTB, I, 13,45; VTB, II, 8,53)
3. *Dhyānāsana* — meditative pose, with legs closely locked and soles of both feet visible. It signifies meditation and introspection (Fig 14) (VTB,I,1,4; VTB, II, 10,11)
4. *Lalitāsana* — sitting in ease, with one leg pendant, sometimes supported by a lotus flower (Fig. 15) (VTB, I, 2,6; VTB, II, 34,64)
5. *Paryānikasana* — sitting cross legged, with the left leg above the right. It signifies serenity (Fig. 16) (VTB, I, 86,105; VTB, II, 1,2)
6. *Pratyāliḍhāsana* — standing, with the left leg straight and right leg slightly forward and bent. It signifies displeasure.
7. *Rājālīlāsaria* — royal ease with the right knee raised and left leg folded loosely. (Fig. 17) (VTB, II, 16,40)

1. See Shri P. M. Lad (Ed): *The Way of the Buddha*, Bombay, Ministry of Information, 1957, p. 193, III. No. 12

8. *Virāsana*—one knee raised and the foot locked in the bend of the other. It usually goes together with the *namaskāra mudrā* where the palms of the hands are joined in the prayer attitude (Fig. 18) (VTB, II, 28,83)

Fig. 13 *Bhadrāsana*Fig. 16 *Paryāṅkasana*Fig. 14. *Dhyānāsana*Fig. 17 *Rājālilāsana*Fig. 15 *Lalitāsana*Fig. 18 *Virāsana*

Paryāṅkasana was the most popular *āsana* in the Pyu times. The next in frequency was *dhyānāsana* followed by *bhadrāsana*, *lalitāsana*, *rājālilāsana* and *virāsana*. In the Pagan period the most popular was *dhyānāsana*, then *bhadrāsana*, *lalitāsana* and lastly *paryāṅkasana*. It was quite evident that *bhadrāsana* was not as scarce in Burma as most people seemed to have

believed. Here a word of caution is necessary. The standing Buddhas are not exactly in the *ālīghāsana* (stepping left) or in the *pratyālīghāsana* (stepping right). The Buddha stands either straight or slightly bent in a graceful *tribhanga*.

The thrones are of four types, viz. *Padmāsana* (Lotus Throne) (*VTB*, I, 2, *VTB*, II, 1, 14) *Simhāsana* (Lion Throne) (*VTB*, II, 8, 75, 76), *Vajrāsana* (Diamond Throne) *VTB*, I, 67, 75, *VTB*, II, 2, 3) and a mixed one of *Padmāsana* and *Vajrāsana*. What U Mya calls *Pro-pallan* or *Khuanan*: *Khyui*: *pallan* is perhaps the *Vajrāsana* of many sides studded with precious gems and decorated with floral designs. A standing figure like *Dipanikarā* or the Buddha performing *yamakā prātihārya* (the Great Miracle at *Śrāvasti*)¹ also stands on the *Padmāsana*. As a matter of fact the Buddha or Bodhisattva is supposed to be sitting directly on the lotus or lion as shown in Figures 19 and 20 but the artists have stylized the seats so that the lotus or the lion appear only as a part of the decorative motif.

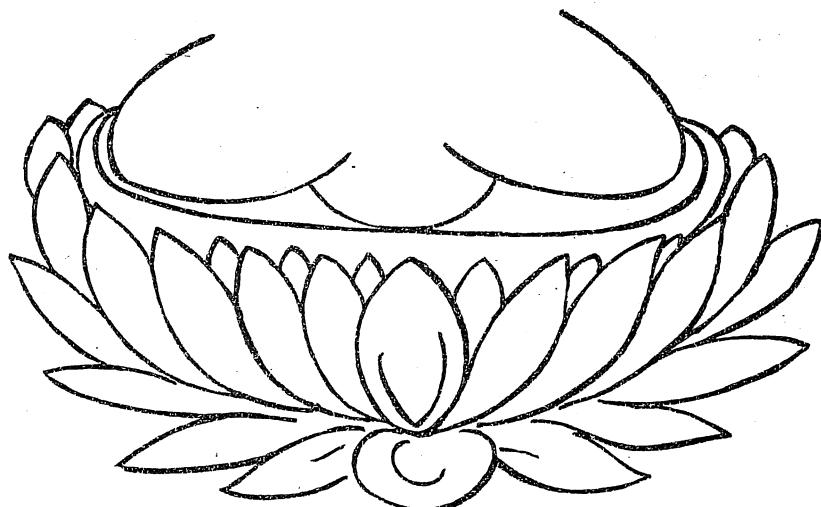
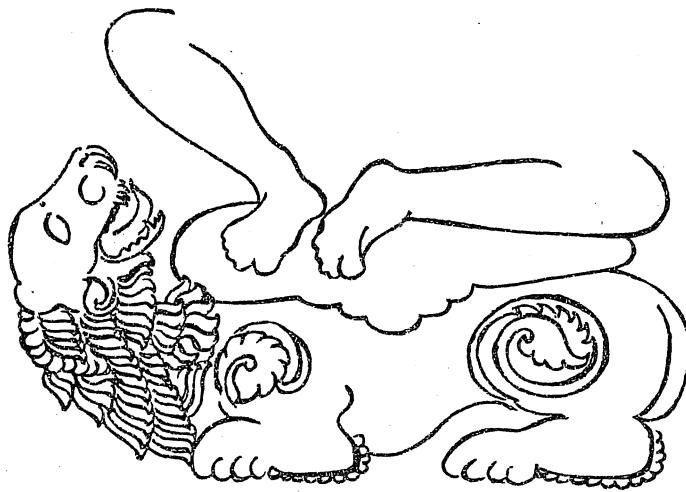


Fig. 19 *Padmāsana*

The *Padmāsana* was the most popular of the thrones in Pyu and Pagan times. But the Pagan Burman was more partial to the double throne — *Padmā-vajrāsana* (*VTB*, I, 6, II, *VTB*, II, 10, 11) than the Pyu. In Burma today, *Vajrāsana* is used almost exclusively. It will be very interesting to know when it started to gain popularity. For the periods under survey, *Padmāsana* tops the list.

Some tablets have many Buddhas sitting in the same posture. The number of figures ranges from three (*VTB*, I, 6, 42) to one hundred (*VTB*, 43, 46) and even more (*VTB*, I, 109). Tablets depicting the Great Miracle at *Śrāvasti* (where many Buddhas are shown sitting and standing in various *mudrā*) are common to the Pyu and Pagan periods while the tablets each having many sitting Buddhas belong exclusively to the latter. We find tablets with three, five, ten, twenty-eight, thirty, fifty, eighty-six (*VTB*, II, 57), one hundred and one hundred and two Buddhas.

1. See *W of B*, p. 94, Ill. No. 30.

Fig. 20 *Simhāsana*

In performing the twin miracles (*yamaka prāthārya*), the Buddha is shown repeating himself in many images reaching up to the heavens in order to confound the heretics.¹ But the Burma tablets showing this, have only three (*VTB*, II, 28, 77; *VTB*, I, 63, 88, 104) or six² (*VTB*, II, 53, 54) Buddhas on each tablet. The tablet described by U Mya as the tablet of the Palace scene (*VTB*, II, 56) probably is another tablet of the miracle. A tablet with seventeen figures of the Buddha (*VTB*, I, 113) is perhaps another tablet of this category but we will deal with it later. According to George Coédès, the Great Miracle is the most popular subject of the votive tablets of Thailand and the oldest specimen dates back to the 7th and 8th centuries A.D.³ The Great Miracle tablets in Burma seem to owe their origin to peoples living to the east of Burma. The *Cammadevīvarīsa* written in the 15th century by *Bodhiranīsi* says that as a result of the epidemic that broke out at *Haribhūja* in the 11th century some of its people took refuge at Pegu.⁴ The *Kalyāṇī* inscription⁵ says that some Cambodian war captives were given quarters at *Lakkhiyapura* (near Dala). Therefore U Mya suggests that these tablets of the great miracle were either imported from Thailand or were made locally by people who had some connection with Thailand.⁶ Thai influenced tablets have been found at Tadagale,⁷ Rangoon (*VTB*, I, 88), Pegu (*VTB*, I, 89, 93, 94, 95), Kawgun,⁸ Pha-an (*VTB*, I, 90, 91, 92), and Hmawza, Prome (*VTB*, II, 53, 54).

1. See *W of B*, p. 93, III. No. 29; p. 94, III. No. 30 and Anil de Silva-Vigier: *The Life of the Buddha*, London, 1955, Pl. 94.

2. See *SSFACP*, I, 174, Pl. II top right and R. C. Temple: *Notes on Antiquities in Rāmaññadesa*, Bomday, Education Society's Steam Press, 1894, Pl. XVI, top night.

3. *SSFACP*, I, p. 156

4. *VTB*, I, p. 62

5. *The Kalyāṇī Inscription*, Ed. by Taw Sein Ko, Rangoon, Government Printing, 1892, p. 57 (Reverse face of the first stone); Ed. by Lu Pe Win, Rangoon, Ministry of Union Culture, 1958, p. 57; *Ep. Birm.*, III, i, 196-7, and *JBRS*, XII, i, 39-45 (? Cambodian Invasion).

6. *VTB*, I, p. 62

7. See *SSFACP*, I, p. 177, Pl. Vb for a tablet of Thailand similar to the Tadagale tablet.

8. See R.C.T.: *NAR*, pp. 34-5, Pl. XV & Pl. XVI.

We find six tablets¹ giving the major scenes from the Buddha's life. All these tablets are from the 11th to 14th century. It is amazing that no such tablets have yet been found among the Pyu : perhaps the subject was not popular then. *Aññhamahāthāna* —the eight major scenes, according to the tablet of *Sri Mahā Sālini* (VTB, I, 13) who was probably a contemporary of *Aniruddha*² are :

The Great Decease	
The Subjugation of <i>Nālāgiri</i>	The Descent from <i>Tāvatimīsa</i>
The First Sermon	The Great Miracle
The Enlightenment	
The Honey Rice	The Nativity

The enlightenment scene is usually in the centre. The Buddha looking straight ahead sits in *bhūmisparśa mudrā* and *dhyānāsana* on a double throne with a smile on his lips. A *sikhara* rises above him. The whole is an exquisite piece of work. A similar tablet of *Ānandā* (VTB, I, 45) has three points of note. The craftsmanship equals that of *Sālini*'s tablet and therefore it possibly belongs to *Aniruddha*'s time. But in place of the famous stanza *yedharmā* which usually appears in old *Nāgari* is a line in the Mon-Burmese script of *Thiluīn Mañ*'s time mentioning that the donor was an officer (*kalan*) known as *Puwa*. On the reverse is another line in the script of *Cañsū* I's time (1113-?62) which says that the donor is *Mahāthera Ānandā*. A possible explanation is that *Ānandā* of *Cañsū*'s time used the mould belonging to *Puwa* of *Thiluīn Mañ*'s reign (1084-1113) who had changed the name written on the mould originally made during the time of *Aniruddha* (?1044-?77). A tablet (VTB, I, 50) of nine scenes probably from Shahtut Pagoda, west of Somingyi on the south of Myinkaba gives the following scenes :

The Great Decease	
The Descent from <i>Tāvatimīsa</i>	The Subjugation of <i>Nālāgiri</i>
The First Sermon	The Great Miracle
The Enlightenment	
The Milk Rice	The Honey Rice
The Nativity	

1. VTB, I, 12, 45, 50, 51, 77 and 113.

2. This supposition is based on the fact that the *yedharmā* stanza of this tablet and those of *Aniruddha*'s are in the same script. VTB, I, p. 17

The *yedharmā* inscription at the base is in *Nāgarī* of the 12th century script. Another tablet (*VTB*, I, 51) of eight scenes from an unspecified place in Pagan has a different arrangement. The bottom left shows *Māyā*'s dream. *Māyā* is sitting in *bhadrāsana* holding a ball-like thing in her hand while the white elephant tries to enter her womb. The nativity is at the bottom right. Between the two scenes are six lines in *Mon* (illegible except for a few words in the style of the 12th century). In the second row are the first sermon, enlightenment and great miracle scenes. Above these are the subjugation of *Nālāgiri* and the descent from *Tāvatimṣa*. On the top is the recumbent Buddha under a spreading umbrella and surrounded by a group of mourning disciples.

The Great Decease

The Subjugation of <i>Nālāgiri</i>	The Descent from <i>Tāvatimṣa</i>
The Enlightenment	
The First Sermon	The Great Miracle
The Dream of <i>Māyā</i>	The Nativity

Another tablet (*VTB*, I, 77) of eight major scenes comes from Bassein. It has an inscription in *Mon* of the 14th century script saying that the image was made by a great minister. The arrangement of scenes are similar to that of *Sālinī*'s tablet. The last one (*VTB*, I, 113) to be described in this category has seventeen Buddhas — one recumbent, four sitting *bhadrāsana*, five standing and seven sitting *dhyanāsana*. As the tablet is badly preserved we cannot see the details clearly. The top figure is the *Mahāparinirvāṇa*. Perhaps it is similar to the sandstone relief from *Sārnāth*¹ (5th century A.D.) which has:

The Great Decease

The Great Miracle One Sitting and Five Standing Buddhas	The First Sermon	The Great Miracle One Sitting and Five Standing Buddhas
	<i>Māra</i> 's Attack and The Enlightenment	
	The First Bath and The Nativity	

Another sandstone relief from *Sārnāth*² has eight sitting and six standing figures of the Buddha depicting the scene of the Great Miracle at *Śrāvastī*. U Mya says that up till now no other such tablet has ever been discovered in Burma.

1. See *W of B*, p. 28, Ill. No. 3 and *L of B*, Pl. 95

2. *W of B*, p. 94, Ill. No. 30 and *L of B*, Pl. 94

Although I have mentioned above that the Pyu did not produce tablets of eight major scenes, they did produce tablets depicting one scene alone on each tablet. But so far only tablets of the great miracle (*VTB*; II, 28, 53, 54, 56) and the turning of the wheel of Law (*VTB*, II, 55, 77) have been discovered. The Hmawza tablet of the miracle (*VTB*, II, 53) is very similar to the one which R. C. Temple reported had been discovered at Amherst¹ and to another tablet of Khao Ok Dalu, Badalung, mentioned by G. Coëdès in his paper on the votive tablets of Thailand.² U Mya therefore suggests that *Śrīkṣetra* and *Dvāravāti* must have had some intercourse in the period from the 5th to the 7th century A.D. The tablet showing the first sermon (*VTB*, II, 55) has the Buddha in the *dharma-cakra mudrā* and *dhyānāsana*. The sun and moon shines at his head level and he is flanked by five disciples on the left and five *deva* on the right. There is a wheel immediately below the *padmāsana* (Lotus Throne). The bottom row has deer and flowers. In the 5th century sculpture of Sārnāth showing the same scene,³ the Buddha sits in *dharma-cakra mudrā* and *dhyānāsana*. The halo has an elaborately curved floral design. Two flying *deva* guard the top left and right corners. A pair of *vyāla* and *makara* are seen on both sides of the Buddha. On the pedestal is carved the side view of the *dharma-cakra* which is flanked by three disciples on the right and two disciples, one lady and a child on the left. They are all in *namaskāra mudrā*. The disciples, are the *pañcavaggiya* but we do not know who the lady and child are and why they appear there. The Pyu tablet has five disciples and five *deva* and the front view of the *dharma-cakra* together with deer and flowers which the Sārnāth statue omits. The *dharma-cakra* carved on stone in the 1st century B.C. on the middle architrave, West Gate, Stupa I,⁴ Sārnāth, has 32 spokes whereas the wheel of the Pyu tablet has only the four major ones.

In about a fifth of the 160 tablets under survey, we find the figure of the Buddha or Bodhisattava flanked by *Śrāvaka* (disciples) (*VTB*, I, 49, 66, 108; *VTB*, II, 1, 58, 81) *Sakti* (consort) (*VTB*, II, 19, 28) or *dāyaka* (devotee) (*VTB*, II, 8). But in the Pagan period we find only two varieties, i.e. the Buddha flanked by *Śrāvaka* (*VTB*, I, 49, 66, 108) and by a *Bodhisattva* (*VTB*, I, 6, 10, 42, 105, 106).

Here one would certainly notice the presence of the *Mahāyāna* deities such as *Maitreya*, *Avalokiteśvara*, *Tarā* and *Saravatī*. This is undeniable proof that *Mahāyāna* and *Hinayāna* Buddhism had devotees in both the Pyu and Pagan periods and it is interesting to note that King *Aniruddha* himself and *Trilokavatamsākā* (Queen of *Thiluñi Mani*) left votive tablets of the Buddha flanked by *Avalokiteśvara* and *Maitreya* (*VTB*, I, 6, 10, 105, 106 by *Aniruddha* and 42 by *Triloka*). In passing it must be mentioned here that there are also tablets where *Avalokiteśvara* (*VTB*, II, 29, 34, 40; *VTB*, I, 2, 69) or *Tarā* (*VTB*, II, 24) appears as the central figure.⁵

As part of the decoration around the central figure of the tablet, there are stupas of various shapes. The number varies from one to fifty two (*VTB*, I, 111). It seems that this kind of

1. R.C.T. : *NAR*, Pl. XVI, top right

2. *SSACP*, I, 174, Pl. II, top right

3. *W of B*, p. 83, III. No. 10 and *L of B*, Pl. 83

4. *W of B*, p. 82, III. No. 9

5. U Mya suggests that the figure on the tablet found at Hpaunglin village, Minbu (*VTB*, I, 69, p. 52) is *Jambala* and one of the flanking figures on the tablets from a mound south of Ngashinkan at Mahtaw village near Hiranwaza, Prome (*VTB*, II, 19, p. 18) is *Hayagrīva*. See B.B. : *IBI*, pp. 237-8 and Figs. 176-9 on pp. 286-8 for *Jambala* and p. 165 and figs. 128-9 on pp. 266-7 for *Hayagrīva*.

decoration became more popular in the Pagan period. In one tablet of the 7th or 8th century (*VTB*, II, 44) we find the *kalaśa* pot (which U Mya calls *krā swat ui*: - *VTB*, I, p. 54) on each side of the Buddha and it is not unlikely that a certain type of stupa evolved from the *kalaśa* pot. (Fig. 21) As we find steatite pots used as reliquaries at Piprava in the Basti district of Uttar Pradesh, India (4th century B.C.)¹ and at Sāñchi (2nd century B.C.),² it is quite possible that the pot had been used as a model for building stupa. In another tablet of the 6th or 7th century (*VTB*, II, 14), we find a relic casket set on the upraised elephant trunk holding a lotus on each side of the Buddha. This suggests that another type of stupas evolved from the relic caskets. (Fig. 22) The Bawbawgyi pagoda at Hmawza, Prome, belongs to this casket type and it dates back to the 6th or 7th century A.D.³

The back part of the Buddha's throne is the *takai* which includes various objects as part of the decoration. Generally it looks like a beautiful pediment under which the Buddha sits sometimes alone or sometimes with two disciples or devotees. Various objects of decoration include balls, banners, bead, Bodhi trees, crowns, dancing figures, deer, elephants, floral designs, *gamūla*: (species of *Kaempferia*), halo, *harisa*, *kalasa* pot, *khyayā*: (kind of *Mimusops*), *kirttimukha*, *makara*, offerings on trays, *sikhara*, sun and moon, *swastika*, umbrellas, *utpala* (blue lotus), *vyāla* and wheels. We find that balls, dancing figures, *makara*, sun and moon, *vyāla* and wheels were used only by the Pyu. We do not find them in the Pagan period. On the other hand, things like *harisa* and *sikhara* were introduced during the Pagan period. The banners, beads, bodhi trees and umbrellas became more popular during this later period. As a matter of fact the introduction of the *sikhara* in the Pagan period changed the entire look of the tablet—leaving no room for the *vyāla* and *makara*.⁴ It is a pity that the use of such beatiful figures was discontinued. Although they

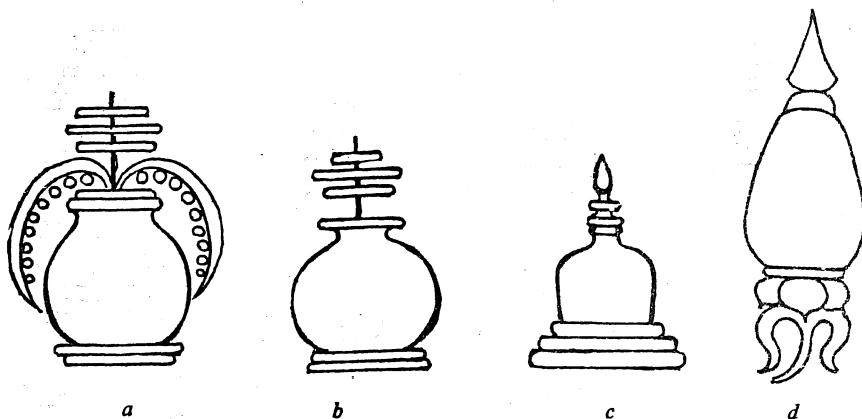


Fig. 21 Stupas evolving from the *kalaśa* pot⁵

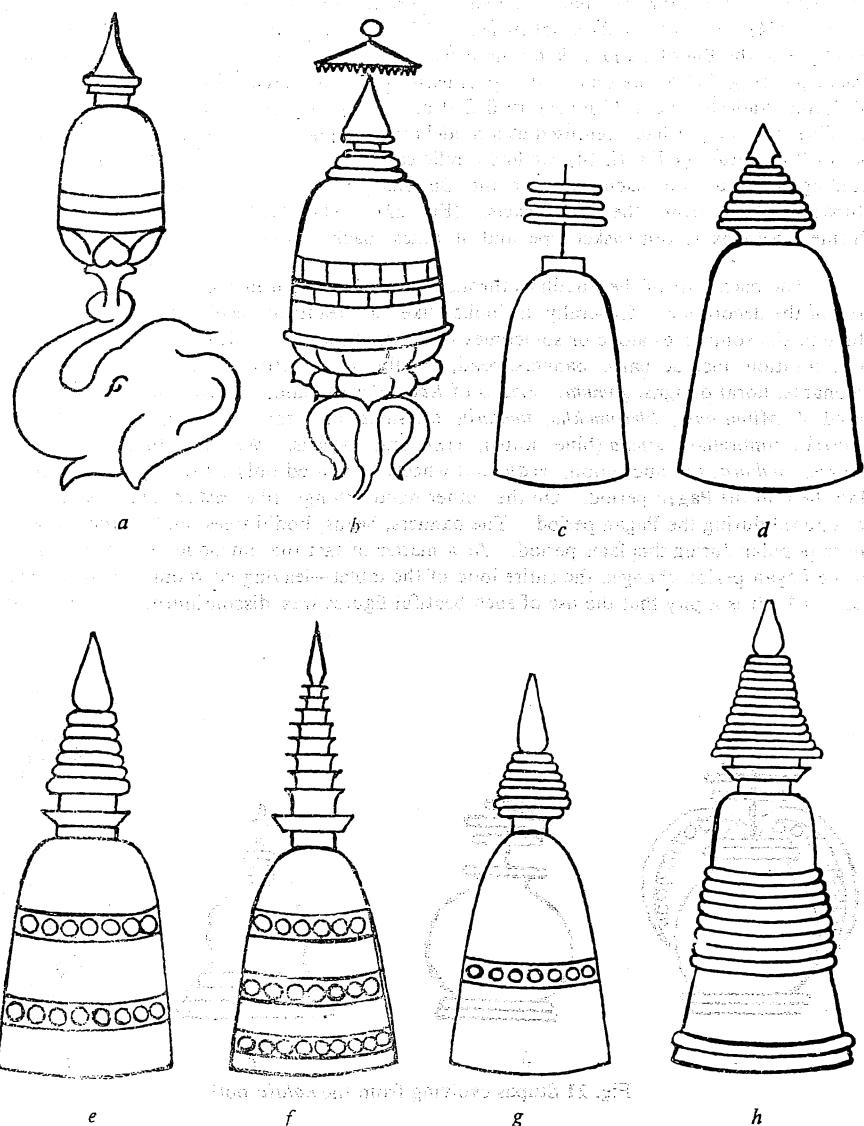
1. *W of B*, p. 127, Ill. No. 9

2. *W of B*, p. 138, Ill. No. 27

3. *VTB*, II, p. 21

4. See the stone sculpture of the Fist Sermon, Sārnāth, 5th century A.D. (*W of B*, p. 83, Ill. No. 10)

5. Fig. 21 a (*VTB*, II, 44), b (*VTB*, II, 44), c (*VTB*, I, 75, *VTB*, II, 36, 38, 51), d (*VTB*, II, 22)

Fig. 22 Stupas evolving from the relic casket¹

1. Fig. 22 a (VTB, II, 14), b (VTB, II, 47, 27, 61), c (VTB, II, 39), d (VTB, I, 12), e (VTB, I, 18), f (VTB, I, 4), g (VTB, I, 11), h (VTB, I, 65).

disappeared from the votive tablets it does not mean that the Pagan artist had lost the art of making them. They were often depicted on the walls of the religious edifices at Pagan until the fall of the empire. (Fig. 23)



Fig. 23 Animals used as part of the decoration (a. from *Sarnath*¹, 5th century A.D., b. from a Hmawza tablet², 7th-10th century A.D., c. from the Konarka Temple³, c. 1250 and d. from a wall painting at the Nandamannya pagoda⁴, Pagan, c. 1280

1. *W of B*, p. 83, Ill. No. 10

2. *VTB*, II, 12

3. *Gaja-Vidala*, Arabinda Chatterjee, *Konarka At A Glance*, Calcutta, 1959, p. 23

4. From the copies of wall paintings at the Archaeological Survey, Burma.

The donors of these tablets used to write their names either on the obverse below the Buddha's throne or on the reverse of the tablet and these names happen to be those of kings, queens, monks and common people. We now have a considerable number of these new names to be added to the early history of Burma. The urn inscriptions of Hmawza¹ have such names as *Sūriyavikrama*, *Harivikrama* and *Sīhavikrama* who were supposed to be kings of *Srīkṣetra* in the 7th century A.D. The silver reliquary² has the name of *Srī Prabhavarman* and *Srī Prabhudevi*. From another inscription on the four sides of a stone image³ we have the names of *Guhadipa*, *Jayacandravarman* and *Harivikrama*⁴ who probably were the contemporary rulers of Vishnu City (near Taungdwingyi) and *Srīkṣetra* respectively. An inscription from Hanlin mentions *Tda: ba: Vīkho Sriku* and *Mahādevi Sri Jandra* which U Mya suggests, are probably *Vishnū Sri Gupta* and *Mahādevi Sri Candra*.⁵ Thus kings having *Vikrama*, *Varmana* and *Gupta* as part of their names must have ruled in the three Pyu centres of Hmawza, Peikthanomyo and Hanlin respectively during the period from the 7th to 9th centuries. Other new names are *Bā: Carke*⁶ (Lord Carke), *Bā) Tra U*,⁷ *Sri Ba: Cho*⁸, *Bā: Sga*,⁹ *Bā: Ra*,¹⁰ *Bā Dd.*,¹⁰ and *Bā Dehi*.¹¹ On the reverse of another tablet is the name which according to U Mya might be read as *Srī Nālandāya*.¹² If that is the correct reading he suggests that it might mean some sort of link between *Nālandā* and *Srīkṣetra*.

The tablets of the Pagan period have inscriptions mentioning such names as *Aniruddha*¹³ (King? 1044-777), *Anantajayabikram*¹⁴ (*Samipyāñ*), *Ānanda*¹⁵ (*Thera*), *I Taimila*¹⁶, *Na Gon*¹⁷, *Na Chūm*,¹⁸ *Na Pay Pwam*,¹⁹ *Cipe*²⁰ (Chief Queen), *Ce Thoy No*,²¹ *Candumāh*²² (*?Samipyāñ*),

1. Pl. 354c, a, b

2. *VTB*, II, 1

3. *ASI*, 1927-8, pp. 128 & 145, Pl. LIV g, h

4. *BRSFAP*, II, 311

5. *VTB*, II, p. 9

6. *VTB*, II, 17

7. *VTB*, II, 60a

8. *VTB*, II, 60b

9. *VTB*, II, 60d

10. *VTB*, II, 61a

11. *VTB*, II, 62

12. *VTB*, II, 85b

13. *VTB*, I, 1,3,5,7,8,9,10,11,12,68,71

14. *VTB*, I, 78

15. *VTB*, I, 45c, p. 41

16. *VTB*, I, 98, p. 66

17. *VTB*, I, 70

18. *VTB*, I, 98, p. 66

19. *VTB*, I, 71

20. *VTB*, I, 32,34,35

21. *VTB*, I, 97

22. *VTB*, I, 22 (Pl. 606 t w)

Tiras,¹ *Trāyyā*² (*Samipyāñ*), *Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja*³ (King *Thiluiñ Mañ* 1084-1113). *Tribhuvanādityapavaradhammarāja*⁴ (King *Cañsū* II, 1174-1211), *Tribhuvanādityavavaradhammarāja*⁵ (King *Cañsū* I, 1113-92), *Triyā*⁶ (*Samipyāñ*), *Trilokāvatamisakāmahādevi*⁷ (Chief Queen of *Thiluiñ Mañ*), *Divācariyena*⁸ (*Thera*), *Dhammarājapāṇḍita*⁹ (*Thera*), *Pi*¹⁰ (*Kalan*), *Puwa*¹¹ (*Kalan*), *Pintū*¹² (*Samipyāñ*), *Pwoñ*¹³ (*Kalan*), *Bañā no*¹⁴ (*Samipyāñ*), *May Khray*,¹⁵ *May Pā*,¹⁶ *Muggaliputta*¹⁷ (*Thera*), *Moñ Uññ*¹⁸, *Moñ Keh Soau*¹⁹, *Moñ Khat*,²⁰ *Yassa*²¹ (*Samipyāñ*), *Yāsohddharāh*²², *Yikhī*²³, *Lāñ Yañ Len*²⁴, *Vajrābharaṇadeva*²⁵ (?King ?1077-84), *Visannarāc*²⁶ (*Samipyāñ*), *Sudhammāh*²⁷ (*Thera*), *Sumedha*²⁸ (*Thera*) and *Sri Mahā Sālinī*²⁹ (? Queen). Among these names, *Aniruddha* was King of *Arimaddanapura* in the 11th century. *Cipe* of the same period claimed to be the Chief Queen (*Mahesi*). Perhaps she was *Aniruddha*'s queen. *Sri Mahā Sālinī* probably was of the royal family of *Aniruddha* as the prefixes *Sri Mahā* to her name suggest. *Divācariyena* and *Suddhammāh* were the names of two senior monks of that time. As officers or ministers of *Aniruddha* there were *Samipyāñ Candumāh*, *Samipyāñ Bañāno*, *Samipyāñ Trāyyā*, *Samipyāñ Yassa*, *Samipyāñ Visannarāc* and *Kalan Na Gor*. The next King was *Vajrābharaṇa* (? 1077-84) followed by *Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja* who reigned as King of Pagan from 1084 to 1113. *Trilokāvatamisakā* was his Chief Queen. *Samipyāñ Anantajaya-bhikrami* and *Samipyāñ Yi Khi* were his governors for Tavoy. Junior ministers were *Kalan Puwa* and *Kalan Pwoñ*. The notable *thera* of the reign were *Muggaliputta* and *Sumedha*. *Tribhuvanādityavavaradhammarāja* ruled from 1113 to ? 1162 and *Samipyāñ Pintū* and *Samipyāñ*

1. *VTB*, I, p. 65
2. *VTB*, I, 17
3. *VTB*, I, 40,41,78 (Pl. 364a⁴)
4. *VTB*, I, 46 (Pl. 10a¹, A.D. 1190)
5. *VTB*, I, 43 (Pl. 1⁸⁻¹⁹, Pl. 24¹, Pl. 568b)
6. *VTB*, I, 44
7. *VTB*, I, 42 (Pl. 364a⁶)
8. *VTB*, I, 15b
9. *VTB*, I, 47 (Pl. 10a⁹, A.D. 1190)
10. *VTB*, I, 75
11. *VTB*, I, 45b
12. *VTB*, I, p. 33
13. *VTB*, I, p. 58
14. *VTB*, I, 30
15. *VTB*, I, 70
16. *VTB*, I, 98, p. 67
17. *VTB*, I, 48, 49 (Pl. 364a²⁵)
18. *VTB*, I, p. 70
19. *VTB*, I, 53
20. *VTB*, I, 71
21. *VTB*, I, 14ab, 20, 79b
22. *VTB*, I, 27 (Pl. 606 sx)
23. *VTB*, I, p. 60
24. *VTB*, I, 98, p. 66
25. *VTB*, I, 36,37,38,39
26. *VTB*, I, 19,23,24,25,26 (Pl. 606 abijklmnopqrsv)
27. *VTB*, I, 28
28. *VTB*, I, 61 (Pl. 365a²⁴⁻⁵)
29. *VTB*, I, p. 13

Triyā were his ministers. Ananda was the noted thera of the reign. Tribhuvanādityapavara-dhammarāja became king in 1174 and ruled until 1211. Dhammarājapāṇḍita was probably the King's Preceptor. Kalan Pi served in his reign. These are almost all the names that we can get out of the inscriptions on the tablets under survey and the names of queens and ministers of Aniruddha's time are quite new to us. Yassa, the minister of Aniruddha described himself as Dānapati Sri Rājavallabha. Yasa nāma (in the old Nāgarī script) and Sambeṇ Maṇi Yassa nāma rājavallabhena dānapati (in the old Mon-Burmese script)¹ which means that the donor is Samipyāṇ Maṇi Yassa, an intimate of the king. In addition to this, a Pali inscription written in a reverse form in the Mon-Burmese script on the obverse reads:

*Imamī Buddhabimbarī Sambeṇ Maṇi Yassa nāma rājavallabhena dānapati sabbañu-
taññā varami pathantena katamī sade vako loko jānatūti.*²

Desiring Buddhahood, the king's favourite, known by the name of Samipyāṇ Maṇi Yassa, made this image of the Buddha with the thought "May the world including the deva know this."

Here U May refers to an inscription from Saw Hla Wun (Pagan Museum Stone No. 44)³ dated A.D. 1236 where Asawat, minister of Nātonnmyā (1211-731) was mentioned by his widow as:

amacco rājavallabho ... aklwamī wan so maṇi amat te //4

The minister was an intimate of the king.

This is an important point with regard to Burmese political thought and practice. To be one of the King's intimates seem to be an attribute of a good administrative officer. Perhaps these intimates of the King became atwanī wan i.e. privy councillors in later times.

There are also many tablets in Burma which had nothing to do with the Religion. Most of them were found at Hmawza, Prome (VTB, II, 7, 31, 32, 41, 42, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71) and at Kyonto, Waw Township, Pegu District (VTB, I, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85). They were probably part of the decorative motif of the walls which surround the religious buildings and they contain many beautiful floral designs and interesting fighting or hunting scenes. Although most of the tablets discussed in U Mya's book belong to a period from the 7th to 12th century, he also includes one tablet (VTB, I, 86) found in the relic chamber of the Botataung Pagoda, Rangoon, which has an inscription in one of the Brahmi script of the Buddhaghosa Dhammapāla period (5th century A.D.),⁵ four tablets from Semeikshe (Thazi), Binji Cave (Thaton), Shwezayan (Thaton) and an unknown place (VTB, I, 72, 75, 76 and 108) which are of the 13th century, one tablet (VTB, I, 73) also from Sameikshe (Thazi) of the 14th century and two tablets from the Htupayon (Sagaing) and Akyab (Arakan) of the

1. VTB, I, p. 17 It is on the border of tablet

2. VTB, I, p. 18

3. Pl. 96; List 235a, SIP (G.H.L. & P.M.T.) 49; SIP (E.M.) 95; UB, I, 195-6

4. Pl. 962, ⁶; VTB, I, p. 18

5. A. L. Basham: The Wonder that was India, London, 1954, p. 266

15th century (*VTB*, I, 74, 96). He also includes in the illustrations, one tablet that looks like a product of some Chinese workmanship (*VTB*, I, 33) and another tablet made of iron (*VTB*, I, 106) found at Myinkaba, Pagan.

With regard to the script U Mya observes that the *Nāgarī* letters of the Pyu tablets were quite different from those written on the tablets of Pagan⁴ and that the writing on *Aniruddha*'s⁵ (*VTB*, I, 9) and *Yassa*'s tablets (*VTB*, I, 14b) were of the earliest known writings in the Mon-Burmese script.⁶ The names of fruits and vegetables written on the reverse of the tablets⁷ (*VTB*, I, 53) found at a hillock in Maung Chit Sa's field to the east of the Ananda Pagoda, Pagan give us some of the earliest examples of written Burmese. The donors of these tablets are *Ānanda Thera*, *Moṇ Keh Soau*, etc. and the tablets belong either to the reign of *Cañsū I* (1113-? 62) or *Cañsū II* (1174-1211).⁸ From these tablets U Mya gets the names of 52 kinds of fruit, etc.⁹ They are *ip mhūy*¹⁰ (? *Lagerstroemia Flos reginae*, modern *pyaīma*, *Embrella robusta*), *ūrec*¹¹ (*Aegle marmelos*), *ān wai*¹² (coconut), *oñmañiw*¹³ (*Clitoria ternatea*), *katiw*¹⁴ (? musk), *kulāpāy*¹⁵ (*Cicer arietinum*), *kampon*¹⁶ (soap acacia), *kankhyow*,¹⁷ *kleñphū-rum*¹⁸ (the white gourd-melon, *Benincasa cerifera*), *klimyāñ*,¹⁹ *klit*²⁰ (? *Coix la chrymae jobis*), *kra*²¹ (*Nymphaea*), *krakkrūn*²² (a kind of coffeewort), *kra*, *klū*²³ (? the chebula tree, *Terminalia chebula*), *kramrañ*²⁴ (sugar cane juice), *kwam si*²⁵ (areca-nuts), *khīrhāpwan*²⁶ (*Acanthus illicifolius*), *nhākpyow*²⁷ (banana), *cariw*²⁸ (a kind of medicinal herb), *cimunak*²⁹ (? *Nigella sativa*), *cimukri*³⁰ (?gingerwort), *chiphūh*³¹, *chan*³² (husked

1. *VTB*, I, p. 24 and *VTB*, II, p. 24

2. See also Pl. 568a.

3. *VTB*, I, pp. 14 and 19

4. Pl. 604, Pl. 605; *BRSPAP*, II, 352-61

5. *VTB*, I, p. 41

6. *VTB*, I, pp. 43-5; Pl. 604, Pl. 605 together give only 35 names.

7. *VTB*, I, p. 44, n. 21, Pl. 604j

8. 66, Pl. 386²⁸

9. 64, Pl. 605b

10. 13, Pl. 604p

11. 6, 45, 58, Pl. 604l

12. 25, Pl. 605l

13. 2

14. 59, 62

15. 54, Pl. 604g

16. 60

17. 50, 51

18. 1, 22, Pl. 605o

19. 37, Pl. 604e

20. 40

21. 35, Pl. 605a

22. 7, Pl. 604d

23. 56, 57, Pl. 604o

24. 14

25. 33, Pl. 604r

26. 29

27. 65, Pl. 604n

28. 68, Pl. 604k

29. 4

rice), *chapswā¹* (*Pandanus furcatus*), *ñhiwpān²*, *taleñ³* (pomegranate), *tīsi⁴* (? *Diospyros Burmanica*), *tancikū⁵* (sandalwood, *santalum album*), *tān cu lyān⁶*, *thānryak⁷* (palmyra jaggery), *ñham⁸* (sesamum), *pānpūy⁹* (*Careya arborea*), *pāy kri¹⁰* (*Dolichos lablab var. lignosus*), *pāy twam¹¹* (*Vigna Catjang*), *pyā noy¹²* (? *nwegyo*, *Thunbergia laurifolia*), *phalā¹³* (the cardamom plant), *phitkhyāñ¹⁴* (*Piper cubeba*), *bhittikiy¹⁵* (? *pirtaka*, the papaya, *Carica papaya*), *mathunsarā¹⁶* (? grape), *munñāñ¹⁷* (black mustard, *Braisia nigra*), *mūriw pwai¹⁸* (? the mudar plant), *yasakleñ¹⁹* (*Sesbania aegyptiaca*), *rañmā²⁰* (*Chickrassia tabularis*, Chittagong wood), *rāyriw²¹* (*Morinda citrifolia* or *angustifolia*), *rhokpwān²²* (citrus blossom), *lakthut²³* (? *Wrightia tomentosa*), *sāniwkūy²⁴* (*karikaw*, *Mesua* ironwood), *sikhwā²⁵* (cucumber, *Cucumis sativus*), *si, twot²⁶* (*Ficus hispida*), *siryak²⁷* (mango), *secchi²⁸* (*sacchim*, the *Terminalia bellerica* myrobalān) and *hinkiw²⁹* (asafoetida or ? the papaya as the Tavoyans call it). From other epigraphic sources we can add thirteen more, viz. *khapon* (*Strychnos*), *khen* (? ginger), *cāmkā* (*Michelia champaca*, champac), *punñak* (*Calopyllum*), *piy* (*corypha* palm), *mañkluñ* (the tamarind), *mun* (? *pinnai*, *Artocarpus integrifolia*, the Jack fruit tree), *mhānrwañ*, *sipriy* (the Rose apple tree), *siphan* (the sycamore-fig), *sitūy* (Karen potato), *sanpon* and *samparā* (the lime).³⁰ Thus we have about 65 names of fruits, flower, trees, plants, climbers, etc. belonging to the 12th century Pagan.

1. *VTB*. I, p. 44, n. 27, Pl. 605f

2. 36, Pl. 605h

3. 39, 53, Pl. 605q

4. 61

5. 10

6. 46

7. 9, Pl. 605c

8. 20, Pl. 604c

9. 11, 12, 15, Pl. 605e

10. 32, Pl. 605j

11. 31, Pl. 605k

12. 49

13. 5, 18, 38

14. 28, 43, 44

15. 63

16. 42, Pl. 604 m

17. 17, Pl. 605 i

18. 3

19. 19, 26, Pl. 605 m

20. 23, Pl. 605 d

21. 30, Pl. 604, b

22. 47, 48, Pl. 605 m

23. 8, Pl. 605 g

24. 55, Pl. 604 q

25. 24, 34, Pl. 604 f, h

26. 52, Pl. 605 r

27. 16, Pl. 604 i

28. 67

29. 41

30. See *BRSFAP*, II, 352-61

There are six kinds of prayers written on these tablets. They are:

1. A simple prayer for just the boon of nirvāṇa, prayed by *Aniruddha*,¹ *Vajrābharaṇa*,² *Trilokāvatamisakā*,³ *Dhammarājapandita*,⁴ *Ce Thoy No*,⁵ *Tiras*,⁶ and *Lāñ Yāñ Lan*.⁷
2. A prayer wishing to be freed from all miseries.⁸
3. A prayer to become the foremost person in both the worlds of man and deva before nirvāṇa is attained finally.⁹
4. A prayer by two Governors of Tavoy viz. *Anantajayabhikrāñ*¹⁰ and *Yi Khi*¹¹ who wanted to become *śrāvaka* when their lord the king (*Thiluñ Mañ*) becomes the Buddha.
5. A prayer to attain nirvāṇa when *Maitreya* becomes the Buddha, prayed by *Aniruddha*¹² and *Bañāno*.¹³
6. A prayer for Buddhahood prayed by *Yassa*,¹⁴ *Visannarāc*,¹⁵ *Yāsohddharāh*,¹⁶ *Tribhavanādityadhammarāja*,¹⁷ (*Thiluñ Mañ*), *Tribhuvanādityavaradhammarāja*,¹⁸ (*Cañsu I*), *Triyā*,¹⁹ *Puwa*,²⁰ *Ānanda*,²¹ *Sumedha*²² and *Pi*.²³

This shows that only the most ambitious prayed for Buddhahood and it is interesting to note that *Aniruddha* and *Vajrābharaṇa* are not in that group. *Aniruddha* only mentioned that he wished for nirvāṇa when he meets *Maitreya*, the next Buddha. So it seems that among the Pagan kings it was *Thiluñ Mañ* – an interloper, whose regnal title was *Tribhavanādityadhammarāja* was the first to pray for Buddhahood.

1. *VTB*, I, pp. 9, 14
2. *VTB*, I, p. 27
3. *VTB*, I, p. 31
4. *VTB*, I, p. 37
5. *VTB*, I, p. 64
6. *VTB*, I, p. 65
7. *VTB*, I, p. 67
8. *VTB*, I, p. 66
9. *VTB*, I, p. 46
10. *VTB*, I, 59
11. *VTB*, I, p. 60
12. *VTB*, I, p. 11
13. *VTB*, I, I, p. 24
14. *VTB*, I, p. 18
15. *VTB*, I, p. 20
16. *VTB*, I, p. 23
17. *VTB*, I, p. 29
18. *VTB*, I, p. 31
19. *VTB*, I, p. 33
20. *VTB*, I, p. 34
21. *VTB*, I, p. 34
22. *VTB*, I, p. 48
23. *VTB*, I, p. 55

The presence of either the Buddha or the Bodhisattva and his Sakti as central figures in some votive tablets show us that both the Mahāyāna and Hinayāna Buddhisms had devotees among both the rulers and the ruled. The use of Brāhma and Nāgari scripts, is evidence of Burma's cultural affinity with India. There may have been links between Srīkṣetra and Nālanda and China. This intercourse probably explains the presence of northern Buddhism in Burma. In workmanship the Pyu tablets are definitely finer than the Pagan ones. Tablets of the latter half of the Pagan period are of better craftsman than those of the earlier half, but they still fall short of the Pyu standard. In depicting the Buddha, the Pyu used many mudrā (hand positions) and āsana (feet positions) while the people of Pagan mostly used the bhūmisparśa mudrā and dhyānāsana. The bhadrāsana was quite popular and not as scarce as previously assumed. The padmāsana was the most common throne. A close study of the stupas used in the decorations around the Buddha on the tablets give us a fairly complete picture of how the stupas had evolved from the kalaśa pot and relic caskets. In the decorative motifs, the disappearance of the yyāla and makara is a sad thing though it is in some ways compensated by the introduction of the harmī and sikharā. We find in the list of donors kings, ministers of Aniruddha and Thiluīn Maṇi, and a queen who claims to be the chief among queens (mahesi). All this information is new to history. We have a list of fruits and flowers which give us an idea of the flora and fauna of the day.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

I Epigraphy

BURMA is richly endowed with inscriptions. In this respect it is the richest country in Southeast Asia, but "this richness applies only to number and not to age" as only a few inscriptions antedating the 11th century have been discovered. *Sriksētra* yielded a stone fragment containing an extract from *Vibhaṅga*, gold-leaf Pali manuscripts, and "five-urn-inscriptions" in Pyu, all of which could be dated to the 8th century or earlier. Seven Sanskrit inscriptions were found in Arakan and they belong to the 6th-8th century.¹ This is about all that is known the prior to period A.D. 1044-1287. In our period the earliest inscriptions yet discovered are the seals of *Aniruddha*. They are all on terra-cotta votive tablets and bear the name of *Aniruddha* in Sanskrit or Pali (*Aniruddha* in the latter case). Their find spots range from Mongmit in the north to Tenasserim in the south.² After these we have the Mon inscriptions of *Thiluñ Man* (A.D. 1084-1113) which have been edited by C.O. Blagden³ and published in the *Epigraphia Birmanica*. The Ananda Temple built by the same king has hundreds of glazed plaques depicting scenes from the *Jātaka* with Mon legends. As a matter of fact Mon language was almost exclusively used for inscriptions of the early part of our period. There are also many votive tablets⁴, bearing the names of some fruits and trees, found in Taungbi village, east of Ananda, Pagan. Judging by the script and spelling, they are considered to be the earliest writings in Burmese. Probably they belong to the early 12th century when Burmans started writing their own language. The presence of inscriptions written in Pali, Mon and even Pyu in the early 12th century suggests that the art of writing among the Burmans was still in its infancy so that scribes in other languages than the Burmese were easily procurable. But from A.D. 1174 onwards Burmese alone became the language of the inscriptions with the exception of a few lines of Pali prayer added in some cases. The Tatkale Pagoda Inscription⁵ (A.D. 1192) gives us a fairly good example of the script, spelling and style of old Burmese. The script shows some affinity with the scripts of South India and has a surprisingly close resemblance to the old *Brāhma* script in many of its characters.⁶ Some scholars are of the opinion that the Burmans got their art of writing from the Mon who borrowed it from Pallava (Conjeveram).⁷

During the latter half of the Pagan dynasty, lithic inscriptions became more numerous. In addition to these, there were also "ink inscriptions" written on the walls of the hollow-pagodas, some of which are duplicates of the stone inscriptions. We have the greatest

1. E.H. Johnston: "Some Sanskrit Inscriptions of Arakan", *BSOAS*, XI, ii, 357-85; D.C. Sircar: "Inscriptions of Chandras of Arakan", *Epi. Ind.*, XXXII, i, 103-9; *ASB*, 1919, p. 56, 1921, App. G No. 13, 1956-7, pp. 17-21, 1958-9, pp. 24-7

2. See Map IV

3. Inscriptions I to XI of *Ep. Birm.*

4. Pl. 604, Pl. 605, Pl. 606; *VTB*, I & II. See Appendix II.

5. Pl. 12

6. Tha Myat: *A History of the Mon-Burmese Alphabet* (in Burmese) Rangoon, 1955-6, pp. 8-9

7. *ASB*, 1919, pp. 19-20; Mya: *Old Burmese Alphabet - A Preliminary Study* (in Burmese) Rangoon Govt. Printing, 1961.

difficulty in deciphering those engraved on Webu (mica-schist) stones which were used more frequently in the later period. These are soft stones which cannot withstand the weathering effect of long exposure. This defect was also an asset as its very softness made it a suitable material for the engraving of floral designs with which the 13th century Burman decorated the borders of his inscriptions.

At first rubbings were taken by inking the stone itself and pressing down paper on it. Thus a negative copy of the inscription was made. Therefore the rubbing had to be read through a mirror. This method was improved later: thus a positive copy was obtained.

King Bodawpaya issued an order on 24 July 1793 to make a collection of all available lithic inscriptions because he wished to know the amount of land dedicated to the Religion.¹ He wanted to know the extent of cultivable land in his kingdom which did not yield revenue. Inscription stones were transferred to his capital where they were copied in extenso (chan,thui:) or summarised (cap thui:). But this was not done scientifically. It is fortunate that the search for stones was not thorough and thus "the stones left *in situ* far exceed in number those collected". Only the smaller stones were removed probably because of transport difficulties. The presence of many fragments at Amarapura suggests that a considerable number of stones were broken in transit. Oral history says that "accidents" during transportation destroyed some big stones because workers employed in their removal did not relish heavy loads. Nevertheless some six hundred stones reached the capital. The king commissioned a few scholars to study them. Among them Twan:san: Mahā Cañsū was the most notable. It seems that these scholars did not really attempt to read Mon, Pyu and old Burmese inscriptions correctly. Thus some errors in names and dates went into the chronicle they compiled. In about 1790 Twan:san: produced the Rājavarīśac at the king's request. Although U Kala (early 18th. century) had incorporated a few inscriptions in his Rājavarīśakri: before this Twan:san: was the first to use epigraphic material as a historical source. When King Bagyidaw appointed a committee in 1829 to compile a chronicle of the Burmese kings, the committee was aware of the desirability of using inscriptions and it occasionally mentioned discrepancies in dates or details between the old chronicles and some inscriptions

but they had not the time, the means, or (I am afraid) the courage to collect *all* the inscriptions, to perfect readings and interpretations, and then demolish the jerry-built structure of the chronicles which they had helped to set up.²

After the British annexation of Lower Burma, in 1891 Dr Emil Forchhammer was appointed Government Archaeologist and he started collecting, this time, the rubbings of inscriptions. As mentioned above, these first rubbings were in negative and therefore had to be read through a mirror. Perhaps this difficult method is accountable for many omissions and mistakes made in the transcription of these first rubbings. Another serious mistake was the modernisation of the spellings in some cases in the process of the transcription. Dr E. Forchhammer died in 1890 and Taw Sein Ko his successor published the following "six enormous volumes of the elephant size, numbering altogether 2,802 pages".

1. Kun:bhoñ chak, Mandalay, 1905, p. 662

2. JBRS, XXXII, i, 82

1. *The Inscriptions of Pagan, Pinya and Ava, (1892)*
- 2 & 3. *The Inscriptions copied from the stones collected by King Bodawpaya and placed near the Arakan Pagoda, 2 volumes, (1897)*
- 4 & 5. *The Inscriptions collected in Upper Burma, 2 volumes, (1900 & 1903)*
6. *The Original Inscriptions collected by King Bodawpaya and now placed near the Patodawgyi Pagoda, Amarapura, (1913)*

These six volume contain about half of the inscriptions hitherto discovered. A rough translation of volume one by U Tun Nyein appeared in 1899. As the inscriptions were grouped geographically in the above collection, Dr C. Duroiselle, successor to Taw Sein Ko in 1919, gave a chronological list—*A List of Inscriptions Found in Burma*, in 1921 (after Taw Sein Ko: *Index Inscriptionum Birmanicarum*, I, 1900). Old and middle Mon inscriptions were published (with facsimile, transcription, translation and notes) in the series known as *Epigraphia Birmanica* between 1919 and 1936. Except for the Ananda plaques (Volume II by C. Duroiselle) the entire work was done by Professor C.O. Blagden—“A Sherlock Holmes in Epigraphy” who also deciphered some Pyu inscriptions.

After the end of the First World War, the University of Rangoon was founded and its Department of Oriental Studies started to make an independent collection of the rubbings of inscriptions with a view to publishing collotype reproductions first and transcription with translation and notes on them later. Professors Pe Maung Tin and G.H. Luce were the leading personalities in the movement. Over a hundred new inscriptions were further discovered before the outbreak of the Second World War and their collection was said to be much better than that of the Department of the Archaeological Survey of Burma. As a result of their joint effort a transcription in Burmese of fifty four inscriptions of Pagan entitled *Selections from the Inscriptions of Pagan* appeared in 1928. The rubbings in their collection are correlated with Duroiselle's *List* wherever possible so that they could be linked with the six “elephant” volumes. They were arranged chronologically after a very severe selection so as to omit all copies (i.e. copies made from stones which are now untraceable) and the publishing of facsimiles started in 1933. Five volumes have been published so far. They are:

- Portfolio I *Inscriptions of Burma*, A.D. 1131–A.D. 1237
- Portfolio II *Inscriptions of Burma*, A.D. 1238–A.D. 1268
- Portfolio III *Inscriptions of Burma*, A.D. 1269–A.D. 1300 and undated, doubtfully dated and fragments believed to be of the period A.D. 1131–A.D. 1300
- Portfolio IV *Inscriptions of Burma*, A.D. 1301–A.D. 1340 and some more inscriptions prior to A.D. 1300 whose dates were determined only after the first three portfolios were sent to press.
- Portfolio V *Inscriptions of Burma*, A.D. 1341–A.D. 1365

There are 610 plates in these five portfolios. Some of these inscriptions belong to the post-Pagan period, and some are entirely useless as they are either too fragmentary or illegible. Therefore for the purpose of this thesis Professor G. H. Luce made me a selection of about five hundred for which I am extremely greatful. Owing to such faults as omissions,

careless readings and modernization of spelling, the use of the six "elephant" volumes is avoided as much as possible in this thesis.

The Archaeological Survey and the Burma Historical Commission (estb. 1955) are making rubbings of inscriptions and many new inscriptions were discovered by both. During the last few years some books on epigraphy were published. They are:

1. *Mon Face of the Myazedi Inscription*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Pe Maung Tin. Rangoon. Shwe Thein Press, 139, 46th Street. 1955
2. *Mon Inscription of Shwezigon*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Pe Maung Tin. Rangoon. 1956
3. *Burmese Face of the Myazedi Inscription*, Ed. with notes by U Hla Tin. Rangoon. Pyinnyananda Press. 85a, Inya Myine Road. 1956
4. *Palace Inscription of Kyauktaw in Mon*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Pe Maung Tin. Rangoon. Shwe Thein Press. 1957
5. *Shwedagon and Yadanabingyan Inscriptions in Mon*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Lu Pe Win. Rangoon. Shwe Thein Press. 1958
6. *Kalyani Inscription in Mon*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Lu Pe Win. Rangoon. Shwe Thein Press. 1958
7. *Pali Face of the Myazedi Inscription*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Tha Myat. Rangoon. Thudhammawadi Press. 1958
8. *Pyu Face of the Myazedi Inscription*, Ed. and tr. into Burmese by U Tha Myat. Rangoon. Democracy Press. 251-3, Bo Aung Gyaw Street. 1958
9. *Selections from the Inscriptions of Pagan*, by U E Maung. Rangoon. Pyinnyananda Press. 1958
10. *Myazedi Inscription in Four Languages*, Ed. by U Tha Myat. Rangoon. Government Printing. 1960
11. U Mya : *Votive Tablets of Burma*, Parts I & II (in Burmese). Rangoon. University Press. 1960

Based on epigraphic evidence some studies were made on the evolution of Burmese alphabet. As a result we now have :

1. U Tha Myat: *A History of the Mon-Burmese Alphabet* (in Burmese). Rangoon. 1955-6
2. U Mya : *Old Burmese Alphabet — A Preliminary Survey* (in Burmese). Rangoon. Government Printing. 1961

II Published Works

Ādiccavāma : *Bhikkhuniśāsanopadesa*, Rangoon, 1935

... *Bhikkhuni Are: Purī*, Rangoon, 1936

Aciṇṇa (Ed.) : *Rājāsippasattha Kyam*, Inywa Myothit, Pyilōnhmangu Press, 1929

Andersson, J.G. : *Children of the Yellow Earth, Studies in Prehistoric China*, London, 1934

Aymonier, E. : "Première étude sur les Inscriptions Tchames", *JA*, 1891, pp. 28-9

Ba Thein, U. : *Kui : kharuin Samuiñ*, Mandalay, 1956

Banerjea, Jitendra Nath : *The Development of Hindu Iconography*, Calcutta, 1956 Second Edition

Basham, A.L. : *The Wonder that was India*, London, 1954

Be, Thein and Ba Kyaw : *Susodita Mahārajawani*, 6 Volumes, Rangoon, 1922

Bell, H.C.P. : *Archaeological Report on the Kegalla District*, Ceylon Government Sessional Papers, No. XXX of 1892, pp. 73-6

Bigandet, P. : *Life or Legend of Gaudama*, Rangoon, 1858

Bhandakar, D.R. : *Asoka*, Calcutta, 1925

Bhattacharyya, Benoytosh: *The Indian Buddhist Iconography*, Calcutta, 1958 Reprint

Blagden, C.O. : "Notes on Talaing Epigraphy", *JBRS*, II, i, pp. 38-43

... "Transliteration of Old Burmese Inscriptions", *JBRS*, IV, ii, p.136

... "The Cycle of Burmese Year Names", *JBRS*, VI, ii, pp. 90-1

... "The Pyu Inscriptions", *JBRS*, VII, ii, pp. 37-44

... *Epigraphia Birmanica*, I, III & IV, Rangoon, 1919-34

Bode, Mabel Hayes: *Sāsanavamīsa* (Paññāsāmi), Pali Text Society, 1897

... *A Burmese Historian of Buddhism*, Dissertation presented to the Philosophical Faculty of the University of Berne for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy, London, 1898.

... *The Pali Literature of Burma*, London, 1909

Briggs, Lawrence Palmer : *The Ancient Khmer Empire*, Philadelphia, 1951

Burgess, James, etc. : *Epigraphia Indica*, Calcutta, 1892 — in progress

Burma Independence Celebrations, Rangoon, Department of Information, 1948

Burney, Lt. Col. H. : "Notice of Pugan, the Ancient Capital of the Burmese Empire", *JAS (Bengal)*, 1835, IV, pp. 400-4

Chalmers, Robert : *Further Dialogues of the Buddha*, Sacred Books of the Buddhist, V, 1926

Childers, Robert Caesar : *A Dictionary of the Pali Language*, London, 1875

Clancey, J. C. : *Aids to Land Surveying*, Rangoon, BTS Burmese Version, 1953

Chatterjee, Arabinda : *Koṇārka At A Glance*, Calcutta, 1959

Clifford, Hugh : *Further India, being the story of Exploration from the Earliest Times in Burma, Malaya, Siam and Indo-China*, London, 1905

Coedès, G. : "Etudes Cambodgiennes, XIV, Une Nouvelle Inscription du Phimānakāś", *BEFEO*, XVIII, ix, pp. 9-12

... *Tablettes votives Bouddhiques du Siam*, Hanoi, 1923-4

... *Inscriptions de Sukhodaya, (Recueil des Inscriptions du Siam, I)*, Bangkok, 1924

... "Documents sur l'Histoire Politique et Religieuse du Laos Occidental, Appendix IV, Inscription Mone de Lopburi", *BEFEO*, XXV, pp. 186-8

... *Inscriptions du Cambodge*, 6 Volumes, Hanoi and Paris, 1937-52

... *Pour mieux comprendre Angkor*, Paris, 1947

... *Les États Hindouisés d'Indochine et d'Indonésie*, Paris, 1948

... "Siamese Votive Tablets", (Tr. by W. A. Graham), *SSFACP*, I, pp. 150-87

Collis, M.: *Marco Polo*, London, 1950

Coomaraswamy, Ananda K.: *History of Indian and Indonesian Art*, Leipzig, 1927

Cordier, H. : *Ser Marco Polo*, London, 1920

de Silva, Thos. P. "Burmese Astronomy", *JBRS*, IV, i, pp. 23-44; ii, pp. 107-118; iii, pp. 171-208

... "Twelve Year Cycle of Burmese Year Names", *JBRS*, VII, iii, p. 263

de Silva-Vigier, Anil : *The Life of the Buddha*, London, 1955

de Visdelou, Claude: "Mémoires très intéressantes sur le Royaume de Mien", *REO*, II, 1883, pp. 72-88

Dhaninivat, Prince : *A History of Buddhism in Siam*, Bangkok, 1960

Dickson, J. F. : "Upasampadā Kammavāsā", *JRAS*, VII, 1875, pp. 1-16

Duroiselle, C. : "Literal Transliteration of the Burmese Alphabet", *JBRS*, VI, ii, pp. 81-90

... "Extract from the Burmese Face of the Myazedi Inscription", *JBRS*, VI, iii, pp. 230-1

... "Pictorial Representations of Jātakas in Burma", *ASI*, 1912-13, pp. 87-119

... "Notes on Pictorial Representation of Jātakas in Burma", *JBRS*, VI, iii, pp. 230-1

... "The Nat Hlaung Kyaung, Pagan", *ASI*, 1912-13; pp. 136-9

... "The Stone Sculptures in the Ananda Temple at Pagan", *ASI*, 1913-14, pp. 63-97

... "Notes on the Stone Sculptures in the Ananda Temple at Pagan", *JBRS*, VII, ii, pp. 194-5

Duroiselle, C. : "The Ari of Burma and Tantric Buddhism", *ASI*, 1915-16, pp. 79-93

... *A List of Inscriptions found in Burma*, Rangoon, 1921

... *Amended List of Ancient Monuments in Burma*, Rangoon, 1921 (Old List, 1916)

... *Epigraphia Birmanica*, II, Rangoon, 1921

... "Wathundaye, the Earth Goddess of Burma", *ASI*, 1921-2, pp. 144-6

... "Mongol Frescoes at Pagan", *ASI*, 1921-2, pp. 146-8

... *Guide to the Palace at Mandalay*, Rangoon, 1925

... "Excavations at Pagan", *ASI*, 1926-7, pp. 162-3

... "Short Survey of the Religious Aspect of the History of Burma prior to the 11th. Century A.D.", *ASI*, 1936-7, pp. 156-66

... *The Ananda Temple at Pagan*, Archaeological Survey of India, Memoir No. 56, 1937

Enriquez, C. M. : "Pagan", *JBRS*, XI, i, pp. 10-14

Fausboll, V. : *The Jātakas*, 7 Volumes, London, 1877-97

Feer, M. Léon : *Samyutta Nikāya*, 6 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1884-1904

Fergusson, James : *History of Indian and Eastern Architecture*, London, 1899

Finot, L. : "Notes d'Epigraphic", *BEFEO*, III, p. 633

... "Un Nouveau Document sur le Bouddhisme Birman", *JA*, 1912, p. 130

Forchhammer, E. : *King Wagaru's Manu Dhammasattham*, Rangoon, 1892

... *The Sources and Development of Burmese Law* (The Jardine Prize Essay), Rangoon, 1885

... *The Kyaukku Temple*, Rangoon, 1891

Furnivall, J.S. : "The Burmese Calendar", *JBRS*, I, i, pp. 96-7

... "The Foundation of Pagan", *JBRS*, I, ii, pp. 6-9

... "The Cycle of Burmese Year Names", *JBRS*, XII, ii, pp. 80-95

... "Manu in Burma : Some Burmese Dhammathats", *JBRS*, XXX, ii, pp. 351-70

Geiger, Wilhelm : *Cūlāvamīsa*, 2 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1929-30

... *Mahāvamīsa*, Colombo, 1950

Gerini, Col. G.E. : *Researches on Ptolemy's Geography of Eastern Asia*, London, 1909

Gordon, A.K. : *The Iconography of Tibetan Lamaism*, Tokyo, 1959 Edition

Gray, James : *Jinālankāra* (Buddharakkhita), London, 1894

Griswold, A.B. : *Dated Buddha Images of Northern Siam*, Ascona, Artibus Asiae, 1957

Hall, D.G.E. : "Burmese Religious Belief and Practices", *Religions*, XL, July 1942, Society for the Study of Religions, London, pp. 13-20

... *A History of South-East Asia*, London, 1955

Halliday, R. : *A Mon-English Dictionary*, Bangkok, 1922

... "Les Inscriptions Môn du Siam", *BEFEO*, XXX, 1930, pp. 81-105

... "The Mon Inscriptions of Siam", *JBRS*, XXII, ii, pp. 107-119

Harvey, G.E. : "The Writing of Burmese History", *JBRS*, IX, ii, pp. 63-82

... *History of Burma*, London, 1925

... *Burma Under the British Rule*, London, 1946

Hla, Maung : "The Twelve Year Cycle of Burmese Year Names", *JBRS*, VIII, iii, pp. 270-4

Hmannan : See *Hmannan: Mahā Rājawayhtaukri*

Hörner, I.B. : *Women Under the Primitive Buddhism*, London, 1930

... *The Book of Discipline*, 5 Volumes, Sacred Books of the Buddhists, 1940-52

Huber, E. : "La fin de la Dynastie de Pagan", *BEFEO*, IX, pp. 633-80

Hundley, H.G. and Chit Ko Ko : *List of Trees, Shrubs, Herbs and Principal Climbers, etc., recorded from Burma with vernacular names*, Rangoon, 1961

Irwin, A.M.B. : *The Burmese and Arakanese Calendars*, Rangoon, 1909

... "The Elements of the Burmese Calendar from A.D. 638 to A.D. 1752", *IA*, XXXIX, pp. 289-315 (Supplementary to the above book)

Johnston, E.H. : "Some Sanskrit Inscriptions of Arakan", *BSOAS*, XI, ii, pp. 357-85

Judson, Adoniram : *Burmese-English Dictionary*, (Revised and Enlarged by Robert C. Stevenson), Rangoon, Centenary Edition 1953

Kennedy, J. and Gehman, H.S. : *The Minor Anthologies of the Pali Canon*, London, 1942

Ketu, ဦ : *Anekajā Tikā*, Rangoon, Zabu-meik-shwe Press, 1932

Khan, M. Siddiq : "Muslim Intercourse with Burma from the Earliest Times to the British Conquest", *Islamic Culture*, X, iii, pp. 409-27

Konow, Sten : "Epigraphy", *ASI*, 1905-6, p. 170

Kyaw Tun, U. : *Mranmācā Nwan, poñ: Kyam;*, 4 Volumes, Rangoon, 1921, 1927, 1929 and 1931

Kyithe Ledat Sayadaw : *Jinatthapakāsani*, Mandalay, 1923

... *Mahāwāṇi*, Rangoon, Thudhamawadi Press, 1953

Lace, J. H. : *List of Trees, Shrubs and Principal Climbers, etc. recorded from Burma with vernacular names*, Rangoon, 1922

Lad, Shri P.M. (Ed.) : *The Way of the Buddha*, Bombay, Ministry of Information, 1957

Lahiri, Sisir Chandra : *Principles of Modern Burmese Buddhist Law*, Rangoon, 1930

Law, Bimala Churn : *Women in Buddhist Literature*, Ceylon, 1927

... *The History of Buddha's Religion* (Tr. of Paññāsāmi : *Sāsana-vamisa*), London, 1952

le May, Reginald : *The Culture of South-East Asia*, London, 1954

Leo Htin Si : "A Note on the Word *Tancikā*", *JBRS*, XXII, ii, pp. 128-31

Luce, G.H. : "The Greater Temples of Pagan", *JBRS*, VIII, iii, pp. 189-98; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 169-78

... "The Smaller Temples of Pagan", *JBRS*, X, ii, pp. 41-8; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 78-90

... "The Shwegu Pagoda Inscription", English translation in blank verse, *JBRS*, X, ii, pp. 67-74; *BBHC*, I, i, pp. 1-28

... "A Cambodian? Invasion of Lower Burma", *JBRS*, XII, i, pp. 39-45

... "Fu-kan-tu-lu", *JBRS*, XIV, ii, pp. 88-99; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 191-200

... "The Peoples of Burma, 12th-13th Century A.D.", *Census of India*, 1931, XI, i, Appendix F, pp. 296-306; *JBRS*, XLII, i, pp. 52-74

... "Names of the Pyu", *JBRS*, XXII, ii, pp. 90-102

... "Burma's Debt to Pagan", *JBRS*, XXII, iii, pp. 120-7

... "Prayers of Ancient Burma", *JBRS*, XXVI, iii, pp. 131-8

... "The Ancient Pyu", *JBRS*, XXVII, iii, pp. 239-53; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 307-22

... "Economic Life of the early Burman", *JBRS*, XXX, i, pp. 283-335; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 323-76

... "A Century of Progress in Burmese History and Archaeology", *JBRS*, XXXII, i, pp. 79-94

... "Mons of the Pagan Dynasty", *JBRS*, XXXVI, i, pp. 1-20

... "Introduction to the Comparative Study of Karen Languages", *JBRS*, XLII, i, pp. 1-18

... "Chin Hills—Linguistic Tour (Dec. 1954)—University Project", *JBRS*, XLII, i, pp. 19-31

Luce, H.G. : "Geography of Burma Under the Pagan Dynasty", *JBRS*, XLII, i, pp. 32-51

... "Old Kyaukse and the Coming of the Burmans; Supplementary Note on Kyanzitha's Possible Connection with Kyaukse", *JBRS*, XLII, i, 75-112

... "The Early *Syām* in Burma's History", *JSS*, XLIV, ii, 123-214; XLVII, i, 59-101

... "The 550 Jātakas in Old Burma", *Artibus Asiae*, XIX, 1956, pp. 291-307

... *Man Shu* (Book of the Southern Barbarians), English translation, New York, 1961.

Luce, G.H. and Pe Maung Tin : *The Glass Palace Chronicle*, (Tr. of sections 102-47 of the *Hmannan*) Oxford, 1923, Reprinted 1960

... *Selections from the Inscriptions of Pagan*, 1928

... *Inscriptions of Burma*, 5 Portfolios, Oxford, 1933-57

... "Burma Down to the Fall of Pagan", *JBRS*, XXIX, iii, pp. 264-82; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 385-404

Lun, Saya : *Hmannan: Rājawaiśac*, Rangoon, 1922

Mackenzie, J.C. : "Climate in Burmese History", *JBRS*, III, i, pp. 40-6

Majumdar, R.C. : *Champa*, Lahore, 1927

Manu Kyay, Rangoon, Hanthawaddy Press, 1903

Malalasekera, G.P. : *Dictionary of Pali Proper Names*, 2 Volumes, Indian Texts Series, London, 1937-8, Reprinted 1960

Marshall, J.H. : "Exploration and Research", *ASI*, 1906-7, pp. 38-9

Maspero, M. Georges : *Le Royaume de Champa*, Paris, 1928

Maung Daung Sayadaw : *Ame.toauphre Kyam*: Mandalay, Zabumeitswe Press, 1961

Maung Maung Tin : *Kun:bhōn Chak Mahārajaṇakri*: Mandalay, 1905

May Oung, U : "The Burmese Era", *JBRS*, II, ii, pp. 197-203

... "Some Mon Place Names", *JBRS*, VII, ii, pp. 143-6

Mhannan : *Mahā Rājawaiśaṇakri* : 3 Volumes, Meiktila, 1936, 1941, Mandalay 1955

Mine Khine Myosa : *Piṭaka Samuīh*: (The History of Law), Rangoon, 1905, Reprinted 1959

Monier-Williams, M. : *Sanskrit Dictionary*, Oxford, 1951

Mootham, O.H. : *Burmese Buddhist Law*, Oxford, 1939

Morris, R. and Hardy E. : *Ānguttara Nikāya*, 6 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1885-1910

Mudaliyar, Rasanayagan: "Vijaya Bāhu's Inscription at Polannaruwa", *J (Ceylon) RAS*, XXIX, 1924, p. 274

Muller, E. : *Dhammasaṅgani*, Pali Text Society, 1885

Mus, Paul : *La Lumière sur les Six Voies*, Paris, 1939

Mya, U : "The Monasteries of Pagan", *JBRs*, X, ii, pp. 155

... "Wall Paintings of the Abeyadana Temple", *ASI*, 1930-1, pp. 181-4

... "A Note on the Buddha's Foot-Prints in Burma", *ASI*, 1930-1, Part II, pp. 320-31

... "A Note on the Nanpaya Temple and Images of Brahma carved on the pillars inside it, Myinpagan", *ASI*, 1934-5, pp. 101-6

... *Votive Tablets of Burma*, in two parts, (in Burmese), Rangoon, University Press, 1961

... *Old Burmese Alphabet—A Preliminary Survey* (in Burmese), Rangoon, 1961

Mya Mu, Daw : "The Kalasā Pot", *JBRs*, XXII, ii, pp. 95-7

Mya Than, Daw : "Some of The Earlier Kings of Pagan Dynasty", *JBRs*, XXII, ii, pp. 98-102

O'Connor, V.C. Scott : *Mandalay and Other Cities of Burma*, London, 1907

Oldenberg, Hermann : *Dīpavamīsa*, London, 1879

... *Vinaya*, 5 Volumes, London, 1879-83

Parker, Edward Harper : *Burma with Special Reference to Her Relations with China*, Rangoon, 1893

... *List of Places, etc. mostly in the neighbourhood of the Burmo-Chinese Frontier*, Rangoon, 1893

Paranavitana, S. : "Devanagala Rock-Inscription of Parākramabāhu I", *Ep. Zey.*, III, vi, pp. 312-25

Parmentier, Henri : *L'Art Architectural Hindou dans l'Inde et en Extrême-Orient*, Paris, 1948

Pavie, Auguste : *Recherches sur l'Histoire du Cambodge du Laos et du Siam (Mission Pavie Indo-Chine, 1879-1895, Études Diverses II)*, Paris, 1898

Pe Maung Tin : "The Shwegu Pagoda Inscription", *JBRs*, X, ii, pp. 67-74

... "The Saka Era in Pagan", *JBRs*, XXII, iii, p. 151

... "Women in the Inscriptions of Pagan", *JBRs*, XXV, iii, pp. 149-59; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 411-22

... "Buddhism in the Inscriptions of Pagan", *JBRs*, XXVI, i, pp. 52-70; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 423-42

... "A Mon Inscription by Kyanzittha at Ayethama Hill", *JBRs*, XXVIII, i, pp. 92-4

Phayre, Arthur : *History of Burma*, London, 1883

Phillips, C.H. (Ed.) : *Handbook of Oriental History*, London, 1951

Po Lat, U. : "Union Culture : Its Sources and Contacts", *Burma*, III, i, pp. 4-5

Radhakrishnan, S. : *Dhammapada*, Oxford, 1950

Ray, Niharranjan : *Brahmanical Gods in Burma*, Calcutta, 1932

... *Sanskrit Buddhism in Burma*, Amsterdam, 1936

... *Theravāda Buddhism in Burma*, Calcutta, 1946

Rath, A. K. : "Buddhist Remains in the Cuttack District of Orrisa", *Journal of the Andhra Historical Research Society*, XXVII (1961-2), pp. 155-63

Remusat, Gilberte de Coral: *L'Art Khmer*, Paris, 1951

Rhys Davids, C.A.F. : *Vibhaṅga*, Pali Text Society, 1904

... *Visuddhi Magga*, 2 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1920-1

Rhys Davids, T.W. : *The Question of King Milinda*, The Sacred Books of the East, XXXV & XXXVI, 1890

Rhys Davids, T.W. and Stede, William : *The Pali-English Dictionary*, Pali Text Society, 1921-5

Richardson, D. : *The Dhammathat or the Laws of Menoo*, Rangoon, 1896

Ricci, Aldo : *The Travels of Marco Polo*, London, 1950

Rowland Benjamin : *The Art and Architecture of India*, Pelican History of Art Series, 1936

Sastri, K.A. Nilakanta : *South Indian Influence in the Far East*, Bombay, 1949

Sawyer, A.M. and Nyun, Daw : *A Classified List of the Plants in Burma*, Rangoon, 1927

Schoff, Wilfred H. : *The Periplus of the Erythraean Sea, Travel and Trade in the Indian Ocean by a Merchant of the First Century*, London, 1912

Scott, J.G. and Hardiman, J.P. : *Gazetteer of Upper Burma and the Shan States*, 5 Volumes, Rangoon, 1900-1

Sellman, R.R. : *An Outline Atlas of Eastern History*, London, 1954

Sinclair, W. Braxton : "Monasteries of Pagan", *JBRs*, X, i, pp. 1-4; *BRSFAP*, II, pp. 505-16

Silavarmīśa : *Rājawaiśkyoau*, (Celebrated Chronicle), ?1520

Smales, C.B. : *A Simple Key to 100 Common Trees in Burma*, Simla, 1945

Smith, Vincent Arthur : *Asoka*, Oxford, 1901

Stcherbatsky, T.H. : *The Central Conception of Buddhism and the Meaning of the Word 'Dharma'*, Royal Asiatic Society, 1923

Steinthal, Paul : *Udāna*, Pali Text Society, 1948

Stewart, J. L. : *Kyaukse District Gazetteer*, Rangoon, 1925

Stewart, J.A., Dunn, C.W., Kin Maung Lat, Hla Pe and Searle, H.F.: *A Burmese-English Dictionary*, 3 Parts, London, 1941 - in progress

Stuart, J.M.B. : *Old Burmese Irrigation Works*, Rangoon, 1913

Suriyagoda Sumangala Thera : *Dhammapada*, Pali Text Society, 1914

Takakusu, J. and Nagai, M.: *Samantapāśādikā*, 7 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1924-47

Taw Sein Ko : *The Po U Taung Inscription* (A.D. 1774), Rangoon, 1891

... *The Kalyāṇī Inscription* (A.D. 1480), Rangoon, 1892

... *Inscriptions of Pagan, Pinya and Ava*, Rangoon, 1892

... *Inscriptions copied from the Stones collected by King Bodawpaya and placed near the Arakan Pagoda*, Mandalay, 2 Volumes, Rangoon, 1897

... *Index Inscriptionum Birmanicarum*, Rangoon, 1900

... *Inscriptions collected in Upper Burma*, 2 Volumes, Rangoon, 1900

... *List of Pagodas at Pagan under the custody of Government*, Rangoon, 1901

... "Some Excavations at Pagan", *ASI*, 1905-6, pp. 131-4

... "The Burmese Inscription at Bodh Gaya", *Ep. Ind.*, 1911, pp. 118-20

... "The Early Use of the Buddhist Era in Burma", *JBRS*, I, i, pp. 31-4

... "Chinese Antiquities at Pagan", *JBRS*, I, ii, pp. 1-5

... "The Plaques found at the Petleik Pagoda, Pagan", *ASI*, 1906-7, pp. 127-36

... *Burmese Sketches*, I & II, Rangoon, 1913 & 1920

... *Original Inscriptions collected by King Bodawpaya in Upper Burma and now placed near the Patodawgyi Pagoda*, Amarapura, Rangoon, 1913

... *Selections from the Records of the Hluttaw*, Rangoon, 1914
Reprinted 1961

Temple, R.C. : *Notes on Antiquities in Rāmaññadesa*, Bombay, 1894

... "Currency and Coinage Among the Burmese", *IA*, XXVI, XXVII, XLVII, (passim)

... "Notes on the Development of Currency in the Far East", *IA*, XXVII, pp. 102-110

Tha Hla : "A Note on the Petrology of the Webu and Marble (Alabaster) Inscription Stones of the Kyaukse Area", *JBRS*, XLII, i, pp. 113-19

Tha Myat : *A History of the Mon-Burmese Alphabet* (in Burmese), Rangoon, 1955-6

Than Tun : "Mahākasapa and his Tradition", *JBRS*, XLII, ii, 99-118
 "History of Burma, A.D. 1000-1300", *BBHC*, I, i, June 1960, pp. 39-57
 "Religion in Burma, A.D. 1000-1300", *JBRS*, XLII, ii, pp. 47-70
 "The Legal System in Burma, A.D. 1000-1300", *Burma Law Institute Journal*, I, ii, June 1959, pp. 171-84; *UTR (Rgn)*, II, iv, 1961-2, pp. 15-27
 "Agriculture in Burma, A.D. 1000-1300", *UTR (Rgn)*, I, ii, 1960-1, pp. 33-6
 "Ñañoñkhyāñ", *UTR (Rgn)*, II, i, 1961-2, pp. 1-6
 "Inscriptions of Burma", *UTR (Rgn)*, I, i, 1960, pp. 9-16

Thein, Saya : *Upamāsamūhagirakkhamā Kyam*: 2 Volumes, Rangoon, 1911
 *Porāñadīpanī Kyām*: 2 Volumes, Rangoon, Hanthawaddy Press, 1960 and Myanmawadi Press, 1913
 *Pajat Rājawayāñ*, Rangoon, 1958 Reprint

Thomas, Edward J. : *Early Buddhist Scriptures*, London, 1935
 *The Life of Buddha as Legend and History*, London, 1949
 *The History of Buddhist Thought*, London, 1951

Tiloka, Sackyatoñ Ú : *Bhurā : Anekājātañ*, Rangoon, Kawimyakhman Press, 1926

Tin, U : "Mahayanism in Pagan", *JBRS*, XIX, ii, pp. 36-42
 *Mrañmā Mañ : Upkhyuppūñ Cātam*: 5 Volumes, Rangoon, 1931-3
 *Kabyābandasāra Kyam*, Rangoon, Hanthawaddy Press, 1959

Trenckner and Chalmers, R.: *Majjhima Nikāya*, 5 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1888-1925

Tun Nyein, U : *Inscriptions of Pagan, Pinya and Ava*, Rangoon, 1899

Wales, H.G.Q. : *Siamese State Ceremonies*, London, 1931
 *Ancient Siamese Government and Administration*, London, 1934
 "Anuruddha and Thaton Tradition", *JRAS*, 1947, pp. 152-6
 *The Mountain of God : A Study in Early Religion and Kingship*, London, 1953

Westlake, S. St. J. : *Report on Land Settlement in Kyaukse for 1890-2*, Rangoon, 1892

Wickremasinghe, Don Matino de Zilva, etc. : *Epigraphia Zeylanica*, 4 Volumes, Ceylon, 1912-1943

Wijesinha, L.C. : *Mahāvamīsa*, II, Colombo, 1909

Winstedt, R.O. : *A History of Malaya, J(Malay)RAS*, 1935

Wood, W.A.R. : *A History of Siam*, London, 1926

Woodward, F.L. : *The Book of Gradual Sayings*, 5 Volumes, Pali Text Society, 1932-6

Yule, Henry : *A Narrative of the Mission sent by the Governor-General of India to the Court of Ava in 1855*, London, 1858

... *The Book of Ser Marco Polo*, London, 1903

Yele, H. and Burnell, A.C. : *Hobson-Jobson*, London, 1903

III Theses

Kyaw Thet, U : *Burma's Relations with Her Eastern Neighbours, 1752-1819*, Thesis presented to the University of London for the degree of Ph.D., 1950

Shwe Baw, U : *Origin and Development of Burmese Legal Literature*, Thesis presented to the University of London for the degree of Ph.D., 1954

alphabet, evolution of the Burmese 192
alupaklwañ (servant) 131, 132
āmalaka (emblic myrobalan) 169
amāñ (name) 143, 155
Āmanā (Minnanthu) 73, 78, 80, 108, 127, 130, 131
Amarapura 163, 166, 190
amat (amatyā - minister) 30, 39, 40, 41, 111,—*kri* (chief minister) 39, 48
amaysañ (butcher) 69, 159
ambassador (*mañce*) 31, 33, 126
American plantation 143
Amherst 178
amhucuiw (officer in charge of the case) 42, 90, 101
ami (mother) 145, 147, 148
amipurhā (queen) 18, 63
amlyuiw (relative) 148, 154
amrañ asi (witness) 121
Amritta Lakyā 20
amrutiñ (bezoor) 129
amuiñ (stupidity) 112
amuiw (roof) 107
amūkwan (record) 44, 89
amunwan (Criminal Code) iv, 28, 46, 47, 88, 90
amusement 48
amuy (inheritance) 147, 148
amuy kywan (inherited slave) 146
amyak (anger) 112
amyakkhat (bejewelled) 130, 131
anāgāmimaggo 94 n. 12
Anāgatavāñsa Atthakathā 81
añak (powder) 135, 136
Ananda mahāthera 98 n. 2, 176, 182, 184, 185, 187,—pagoda 65, 66, 185, 189,—plaques 191
Anantajayapikrama 20, 182, 183, 187
Anantapaññ 73, 108
Anantapicañ (Anantapiyissi) 31, 33, 34
Anantasūra (Anantasü) 20, 40, 41, 72, 78, 91, 92, 130, 148, 149, 151, 152, 155
ancestor 148,—s of Pagan 126
Anein 120
anekajā (consecration ceremony) 74, 75
anger (*amyak, dosa*) 112, 143
Angkor 51
Āngulimālasutta 87 n. 4
angustifolia (*Morinda citrifolia, rāyriw*) 186
Ānguttara Nikāya 29, 46, 80
anhac moñ nhāñ (loving couple) 131, 132, 155
Aniruddha (Anawratha, Anawrathaminsaw, Anoratha, Anurudha) King, iii, iv, 1, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 13, 35, 37, 38, 51, 52 n. 1, 53, 58, 62, 65, 115, 116, 119, 169, 170, 176, 178, 182, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 189,—line 13, restoration of —line iv, post—1, seals of—51, 189
añjali mudrā (attitude of salutation) 171, 172
arikatiy (plaster, stucco) 129, 135, 136
anklets 67
annexation of Lower Burma by the British 190,—of Upper Burma by the British 101
annihilation (*nirvāna*) 112
antaravāsaka (*sañ : puñ*, lower garment) 105 n. 1
anterior lives 65, 66, 82
anumodanā (to say benediction) 111, 112
ānuphaw (*ānubhāva* - magnificence) 68
Anurādhapura 81 n. 4
anthropomorphism 69
Aparanta (*Sunāparantā* - south of the Irrawaddy) 2 n. 1
apāya (a transient state of loss and woe after death) 28
apha (father) 145, 147, 148
aphuiw (grandfather) 147
aphuiw (price) 151
aphyaw, yarimakā (sweet liquor made from palm juice) 123
aplac (*āpattika*, guilty of an offence) 110
apostle 115 n. 8
apotheosized 67
appeal, court of (*atam tryā*) 21, 87
appetite (*rammak*) 143
apprentice 92

INDEX and GLOSSARY

A

Abbreviation i
abhaya mudrā (attitude of protection) 171, 172
Abeyadana pagoda 6
Abhayaratanā 124
Abhidhammapiṭaka 56, 81, 82, 88
Abhīnantasū 143, 144
abhiseka (coronation) 8 n. 2
 abolition of slavery 155 n. 1
 absolute monarch 38
 absolution 110, 111
 absolutism 38
acāasok (food and drinks) 151
Acalā 99
Acalapharac 98
Acanthus illicifolius (khīrhā) 185
acāriya (chrya, teacher) 95
Acaw (Acau), Princess 73, 119
Acawkwram (Skhiñ), Princess 79, 103, 132, 144
Acawlat, Princess 21, 22, 87, 118, 125, 154
Acawmañlha, Princess 17, 18, 19, 20
Acawpatañsā, Princess 108
Acawracasū 59
 accession to the throne (*rhuyontak*) 8 n. 2, 21, 22, 23, 24, 29, 39, 44, 48, 111, 115 n. 8, 117, 120, 149, 158
 accident of being knocked down by elephant 48-9
 account, building 127, Chinese—2, 35, temporary — 119, 130, wage and expense—135
achañpu (image of the Lord) 64
 achieving *niyana* (*aklwat tryā*) 77, 85
achuy (relatives, friends) 145, 154
 aquisition of manuscripts 83,—of slaves 148
 acre, price of land per 44
 acreage 121
 act of merit 117, 166
 active service 40
Ādicca, General 12
Ādiccayanisa 8, 59
 administer (*lup kluy*) 99, 104, — law (*tryā chan*) 90
 administration 24, 36, 39, 40, 50, Burmese—49, provincial—49, revenue—47, — of justice 8
 administrative centre 32,—duty 43, 48,—office 40,—officer 49, 161, 184
 adviser, spiritual 54, 115
aegele marmelus (ūrec) 185
 affairs, love 9, state—34
 affinity, cultural 188
 Africa, slave raids in 145
 agent 100
agganāyaka (chief disciple) 92
Agni 58
 agriculturalist 143, 158
Ajanta 11 n. 10
aklwat tryā (achieving nirvana) 77, 85
akhāmlarā, mlay (forever) 155
akhrañ (rafters) 107
Akliwhi 101
akluiw (merit) 108, *kloñ*—109
Akyab 157, 184
akyāñ (practice) 107-8
 Alampagan inscription 9
Alaungpaya dynasty 101 n. 2
Alaungsithu, King (*Cañsū I*) 10, 11, 13, 115 n. 8
alay sañ (broker) 161
alhū (alms) 71, 112, 131, 132
alhū paccañ (gift) 111
ālidhōsana (stepping left—heroism) 172, 174
ālingana mudrā (attitude of embrace) 171, 172
 alliance, religious 7
 almond shape eye 169
 alms, giving 47, 48, 141
 almsbowl (*pa:to, sapit*) 15, 106 n. 2, 107, 123
almsfood (cāchwan, sañput) 84, 101
almshouse (carap) 74, 111, 130

atāñmay (death) 144,—sotryā (law of impermanence) 77
 athakcarañ (upper register) 44
 atham (porter's yoke) 106
 Añhānāthiyasutta 87 n. 4
 Athapatiy 82
 athu sañ (image maker) 159
 athwat (spire) 128, 130, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 140
 attached to the land, slaves were usually 152
 attack, Māra's 176
 attainment of nirvāna (aklwat tryā) 77
 attendant 83, personal—156
 añhakatha 84, Anāgatavamśa—81
 añhamahāñhāna (eight major scenes of the Buddha's life) 176, 177
 añhangika uposatha (eight vows of self-restraint) 93
 añhparikkharā (parikkharā yhac pā, eight requisites) 106
 attitude of argument (vitarka mudrā) 172
 attitude of bestowing gift (vara mudrā, varada mudrā) 172
 attitude of compassion (mākāruṇka mudrā) 171
 attitude of embrace (āliingana mudrā) 171
 attitude of meditation (dyānā mudrā, samādhi mudrā) 171
 attitude of prayer (namaskāra mudrā) 172
 attitude of preaching (dharmacakra mudrā, vyākhyāna mudrā) 171
 attitude of protection (abhaya mudrā) 171
 attitude of salutation (añjali mudrā) 171
 attitude of touching earth (bhūmiśpārṣa mudrā) 171
 attributes, five (pañcañga, pañcaññi) 95
 atiuw kywan (your slave, i.e. myself) 108, 149
 Atūlaissawir 21
 atwañruy (?secretary) 42
 atwañ:wan (privy councillor) 184
 audience 100, grant—47, king's—150
 aunt 146
 auspicious beginning 138,—moment 49
 authority 173, legal—101

Avalokiteśvara 5, 178
 avatāra (reincarnation of Viśnu) 54
 average price of slave 150
 Avici 47, 73
 awat phyañ (clothing) 121
 axe (puchir) 106, 107
 Ayeththama hill inscription 9
 Ayuthia, fall of 124 n. 6

B
 Bā: Carke 182
 Baccrapatiy 21
 Bā: Da: 182
 Badalung 178
 baddhasīma (permanent ordination hall) 54, 110
 Bā Dehi 182
 Ba Han, Dr 124
 Baktria 81 n. 1
 ball 179
 banana (ñhākpyow) 185
 Bañāno. 183, 187
 Banaras (Vārāṇasi) 165
 bandits 36
 bankrupt 148, 149
 banner 179
 Banyan Grove (Nigroda) 138
 banyan tree (ñoñi) 74, 127, 129
 Bā: Ra: 182
 barber (muchit rip) 69
 barge, royal 88
 Bāruci 17 n. 3
 Bā: Sga: 182
 basin (tatā) 111
 basket (tatā) 101, 102, 103, 138, 139, 140, 151, 153, one-sixteenth of a — (prañ, 101, 102)
 Bassein 34, 177
 Bā: Li 179
 bath, fire 117
 Bā: Tra U 182
 battle, hero of Takoñ, 117,—of Ngasaung-gyan 31

aperitoau (concubine) 16, 19
 apūmī (heap) 78
 arable land 54
 arāmī (rafters) 107
 archaic type 63
 archway 126
 arāha (deserving) 60, 62, 85, 85 n. 13, 92
 Arāhan 52 n. 1, 55, 56, 57, 67, 86, 115, 116
 arahattamaggā 94 n. 12
 arahattaphala (arahattaphul), rāhantā - one
 who has attained the highest stage of
 the Path) 85 n. 15, 94
 Arakan 36, 37, 184, 189,—pagoda 163
 Arakanese 63
 arāmī (compound) 130, 131
 arāñī (araññavāsi, arāññika, Ari, taw mlat
 kri, monks of the forest sect) iv, v, 39,
 72, 91, 101, 120, 123, 124, 125, 126,
 147, derivation of—124, leader and
 founder of the—125, tenets of the—126,
 —practices 124
 arāññakañgamī (practice of staying in seclu-
 sion) 120, 121
 arap (quarter) 130, 131
 arasāññāpā (five delecacies) 99
 arbitrators 101
 Archaeological Survey of Burma 165, 191,
 192
 archaeologist, government 190
 arched window 168
 architect (pisukā) 110, master—137
 architectural style 66
 architecture iv, v, 6, 16, Pagan—127
 architrave 178
 areca (kwam, kramū) 84, 103, 135, 150, 185,
 slave given in exchange of ten—palm
 trees 151, kañūn or measure for—seeds
 103
 argument, attitude of (vitarka mudrā) 172
 Aricaw 30, 78, 107, 119
 Arimaddanapura (Pagan) 2, 3, 6, 8, 38, 55,
 ariya (aryā, noble) 92, 93, 94, 95, 102, 107,
 111, 124, 130, 131, 132, 135, 156
 army 15, 51, invading—v, 34, 35 n. 9, Taruk
 —35, 40,— of slaves 159
 art of writing 6, 53, 140, 189
 articles of daily use 59, 69, 75, 101, 105, 160
 artificial tree (pateññāpan) 105
 artisan 110, 160, 166
 artist (pankhi) 153, 174, 181
 āsāni (feet position) 170, 172, 173, 188
Artocarpus integrifolia (mun, pinnai, Jack
 fruit tree) 186
 asadisadāna (incomparable charity) 60
 asafoetida (hinkiw) 186
 asāk (life) 154
 asāk achūmī (death) 144
 Asaklwat 110
 asakhiy (alive) 144
 asañ (post) 187
 Asāñkhya 20, 35, 40, 117, 149, 150
 asāñkheyā (incalcurable) 72
 Asāñ-tāmūr 53
 Asawat (Asawatdhammā, Aswat, Aśvatthāma)
 10, 20, 21, 40, 128, 184
 ascended the golden mountain (rhuyton tak)
 23, 110
 ascetic 78, 92, female—(bhikkhuni) v, 125,
 Great—166
 asiamrañ (witness) 121
 Asia Foundation 165
 Asia, Southeast 182
 ask pardon (pan) 149
 Asoka 51
 Assaji 166
 assassination of a king iv, 12, 29, — of
 Tarakpliy 126
 assassins from Ceylon 119
 assembly (sañgha) 91, etc. of the—
 116 n. 9,—hall (dīrgha) 130
 assistant 148, judicial—42
 association (sañ) 43
 astrologer (hurā) 39, 41, 49, 55, 96
 Asunthari (Vasundhara, Great Earth) 112
 asura (a Titan) 28
 asyañ (lord) 94, 95,—māñkri (lieg lord) 95
 atamitryā (court of appeal) 21, 87

Bawbawgyi pagoda, 52 n. 15, 179
 bead 169, 179,—border 169
 beans, rice and 34
 bedding (*i prā, senāsanam*) 107
 bed-spread (*khañ nhī*) 69
 beef, ox for (*sānwā*) 121
 begging-bowl (almsbowl, *sapit*) 69
 beginning, auspicious 138
 behalf, on my (*mimi kuiwca, nā kuiw cā*) 155
 belief, popular 59, religious—109, traditional — v,—and practice 123
 bell (*chañlañ, khonlon*) 15, 69, 106
Benincasa cerifera (*kleñphūrūm*, white gourd-melon) 185
 best Buddhist 78
 bestowing gift, attitude of (*vara mudrā, varada mudrā*) 172
 betel (*kwamī*) 101, 102, 103,—boat (*kwamīloñ*) 103,—box (*kwamī kap*) 103,—chewing 159,—container (*kwamī ac*) 103,—cup (*kwamī khyap*) 103,—leaf (*scāmīlhū*) 103,—quid (*kwamīrā*) 103,—receptacle (*kwamī khyap*) 69,—seed craker (*kwamī khyam*) 103,—server (*kwamī sañ*) 69,—viper vine 103
 bezoar (*amrutiy*) 129
 bewilderment (*moha*) 143
bhadrāsana (sitting with both legs pendant) 172, 173, 177, 188
Bhadresvara 166
Bhamo iv, 24, 32 n. 2, 49,—Sayadaw 78
bhānavāra 80 n. 8
bhāyatāñākhyā (left shoulder bare) 169
bhesajjāmī (medicine) 104 n. 3
bhikkhu (male ascetic) 86, 87
bhikkhuni (female ascetic) v, 87, 125, 126
 153
bhītikī (*pittaka, carica papaya, papaya*) 186
bhūmīsparśa mudrā (attitude of touching earth) 5, 67, 168, 169, 171, 172, 176, 188
bhūmīma 43, 49
Bhummabuī 23
bhūn:kri: (a person of great merit) 94

bhurā (*bhurāh, purhā*, the Lord Buddha) 63
Bhurā:sum:chū 124
Bhūridatta 66
Bidarāc 117
Bīmarān 168
 Binji cave 184
 birds and beasts, generous treatment to 9
 birth 75, anterior—65
bisā (*pisā, viss*) 130, 131, 132
Bisū (*Viśnu*) 8
Bissukarma 8
 blackboard (*sañpūn*) 83, 107
 blacksmith (*panphai*) 109, 143
 Blagden, C.O. 6 n. 4, 57, 63, 79, 189, 191
 blood, princely 149
 blue lotus (*utpala*) 179
 bo tree 5
 board, wooden (*klam*) 83
 boat (*lhīy, lhaukā, hlawga*) 86, 106, slave given in exchange of a—150
 Bodawpaya, King 16, 80 n. 4, 163, 166, 190
 Bodhi Gayā (*Srī Bajrās*) 4, 55, 61, 127, 145, 165, 169, mission to—9
 bodhi tree 65, 81 n. 5, 168, 169, 179
Bodhiramī 175
Bodhisattva (*purhāloñ*) 34, 39, 48, 60, 63, 78, 110, 165, 170, 174, 178, 188
Bodhiyanīsa 81
 bodily relic (*sariradhātu*) 128
 body (*rup*) 112
Bojjhañgasutta 87 n. 4
 bolt of cotton 138
bombax malabaricum (*lakpamī*) 83
 bondage 143
 boon 166, 187,—of Buddhahood 34
borassus flabellifer (*than, palmyra palm*) 83
 border, bead 169,—raiōs 3
 Botataung pagoda 184
 boundary 37, 44, eastern—36,—pillars 43
 bowl (*santiy*) 106, 138, 139
 Brahma 57, 96
Brahmacrī 125

Brahman. (*puṇīḍā*) 24, 39, 49, 55, 57, 96
 Brahmanical deities and symbols 166,—
 influence v, 57,—rituals iv
 Brahmanism 54
Brāhma script 184, 188, 189
Brāsica nigra (*munñāñ*, black mustard) 186
bratiw (spittoon) 107
 bravery, reward for (*raichu*) 48, 150
 breast plate 67
 bribe 35 n. 9
 brick (*u*) 121, 128, 129, 138,—building 140,
 —monastery (*kulākloñ*) 80, 97, 108,
 129, 132,—wall 141
 British 88 n. 4, 155 n. 1,—annexation of
 Lower Burma 190,—annexation of
 Upper Burma 101
 broadminded slave owner 154
 bronze 138, 144,—image 165
 broom (*myakkhat*) 106
 brother 150, half—149
 bud, lotus 169
 Buddha, The 2, 3, 45, 52, 53, 56, 57, 58, 60,
 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70,
 71, 72, 74, 75, 77, 79, 81 n. 2, 82, 85, 86,
 88, 91, 92, 93, 96, 115, 118, 128, 165,
 166, 168, 170, 171, 175, 176, 177, 178,
 179, 182, 187, 188,—as God 68, death
 of the—51, doctrines of the—51, 75,
 eight major scenes of the life of the—
 (*atthamahāthāna*) 176, 177, encyclopaedia
 of the teachings of the—80 n. 10,
 enlightenment of the—169, foot-prints
 of the—67, image of the—151, 170,
 184, keynote of the teaching of the—
 166, Law of the—77, Life of the—61,
 165, 176, 177, recumbent—(*purhā
 tanthim*) 84, 177, relics of the—46, 49,
 sitting—(*purhā thaway*) 122, 168, 177,
 standing—(*purhā ryap*) 84, 102, 174,
 177, throne of the—166,—worship 69
Buddhaghosa 80 n. 10
Buddhaghosa Dhammapala 184
 Buddhahood 60, 68, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 184,
 187, boon of—34
 Buddhalogy 52 n. 16

Buddha-pāda (foot-prints of the Buddha) 67
Buddhapā Saṅkri 46
Buddharamī 119
 Buddhism iv, v, 2, 4, 9, 39, 52, 53, 54, 55,
 62, 112, 166, 178, 188, converted into—
 2, essence of—166, expansion of—51,
Hinayāna—6 n. 2, influence of—on
 Burmese way of life 143, Northern—
 188, Pali—52, 53, pure form of—115,
 116, Tantric—iv, 124, *Theravāda*—iv,
 51, 115,—in Ceylon 119,—in pictures
 35
 Buddhist iv, 33, 56, 75, 105, 147 n. 2, 166,
Araññavāsika sect of—39, best—78,—
 building 1,—canon 58, 79,—church 5,
 —king 54,—land 165,—law 78,—men-
 dicant 58,—Monastic Order v,—phi-
 losophy 90,—monk 94,—Order 153,—
 precepts 38, 50,—religion 8,—ritual
 formula (*paritta*) 55,—scriptures 9, 49,
 77
 buffalo hide 138
 bugle 138
buīh (*buīy, pala*, intermediary between viss
 and tical) 130, 131, 132
buīh tryā (lower court) 87, 90
 builder 159
 building 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 118, 127,
 137, brick—140, Buddhist — 1, cost of
 —21, 139, house—55, library—90, plan
 of—137, religious—1, 9, 141, 145, 184,
 school—(*cāsantuik*) 96, 97, 126, type
 of—110,—material 139, 159-60
buīlpā (retinue) 30
Bukām (Pagan) 3, 54
 bull, chief 8, gelded—(*nwālāsañ*) 121
 bullion 49
 bullock, yoke (*nwālā*) 121
 bundle 138, 139
 Bundelkhand 166
 Burma v, 1, 2, 7, 12, 36, 37, 44, 45, 46, 49,
 51, 61, 78, 84, 85, 86, 88 n. 4, 104, 113,
 119, 125, 126, 141, 145, 151, 160, 166,
 172, 173, 174, 175, 177, 184, 189, Bri-
 tish annexation of lower Burma—190,
 British annexation of upper Burma—

101, assassination of king in—12, central—35, 37, 119, conquest of lower—6, 115, cultural affinity of—188, Department of the Archaeological Survey of—191, early history of—165, 182, kings of—39, 126, lower—iii, iv, 2, 5, 20, 30, 46, 51, 149, medieval—50, 158, 161, medieval history of—iii, northern—24, 31, 32, people of—75, President of the Republic of—155 n. 3, upper—1, 3, 32, 51, 115,—Historical Commission 132 n. 1, 192,—Parliament 155 n. 3

Burman (*Mirmā*). iv, v, 6, 7, 9, 10, 15, 16, 31, 36, 37, 45, 52, 53, 54, 59, 60, 61, 65, 68, 72, 77, 85, 91, 93, 95, 103, 109, 126, 127, 145, 147 n. 2, 157, 158, 160, 162, 174, 189, 190, coming of the—1,—heresy 124

burmanization iv, 15, 17 n. 3, 36, 95

Burmese iv, 6 n. 4, 10, 15, 31, 41, 51, 54, 58, 63, 64, 65, 77, 88 n. 4, 90, 91, 95, 104, 105 n. 1, 107, 112, 124 n. 6, 143, 145, 158,—administration 49,—alphabet 192,—capital 1,—chronicle 3, 12,—court iii, 41 n. 6,—culture 7, 36,—Dictionary Department of SOAS 163 n. 2,—empire 24, 37,—inscription 16, 53, 143, 190,—invasion 32, 53,—legend 86,—monarchy 38,—nationalism 126, —period 15,—political thought and practice 184,—power 31,—princess 10, —record 166,—regime 63,—rule 7,—slave 120, 152,—way of life and thought 37, earliest written—185, 189, spelling and style of old—189

burning of Pagan 121

business transaction 98, 100, 121

butcher (*amay sañ*) 69, 158

butter (*navanita*) 104 n. 8, 111, clarified—(*sappi, thawpat*) 99, 104, 111, unclarified—(*thawpiy*) 99, 104,—store (*thawpatki*) 104

buying land 39, 97, 98, 100, 121

byadissa (prophecy) 71

byākāruṇ (grammar) 41

Byaggasūra 19, 44

by-product 47

C

cabinet (*cātuk*) 83

cāchwan (almsfood) 101

cacsā (hereditary local chief) 8 n. 4 *kalan*—(chief by birth and officer by appointment) 41

cācsūkri (general) 35, 40

cākhi (clerk) 42, 161, *khuiwtryā*—(clerk of the criminal court) 90,—*puih* (chief clerk) 42, 110

cākhyup (record) 44, 88

cākhwak (eating cup) 106

Cakraw (Sagaw Karen) 43, 44, 98, 123, 157

Cakkrawati (*cakkavatīn*, a universal king 6, 38

Caku 157

Cakukri 45, 46

calac (flame pediments) 130, 169,—*kloñ* (monastery with flame pediments) 133, 134

Čalañ 17, 149

calon (pot cover) 69, 106

Calopyllum (*punñak*) 186

camakhan (cushion) 129, 130, 131

Cambodia 6 n. 2, 67

Cambodian (Cambojan, *Krwam*) 48, 51, 64, 157, 158, 175

Cambulac 33 n. 2

cāmkhā (*Michelia champaca, champa*) 186

Cammadevavāñsa 175

Campaign, frontier 49, military—40

compassion, attitude of (*mahākāruṇika mu-drā*) 171

camps, two opposite 126

cāmron (courtier) 42

cañ (drum) 71, 93, 111

cañsañ (drummer) 68, 153, 160

canal (*mroñ*) 43, *Santhway* (Thindway)—35 n. 9, 43

cañcim (enjoyment) 113

candidate, qualifications of the 95 n. 4

candrāsañ (dulcimer player) 69, 160
Candumāñ 182, 182
cane satañsañ 97,—*kloñ* 109
Cañi 146
cañkrami (platform, promenade) 128, 130, 131, 135, 137
Cañkray 21
Cañhan 116
 canon 59, 103, Buddhist—58, 79
 canopy (*pitan*) 85, 107, 139
Cañsankhā 103 n. 13
Cañsaphañimat 21
Cañsawat 46
Cañsū I, King 7 n. 1, 10, 11, 12, 13, 30, 70, 115, 116, 146, 176, 185, 187
Cañsū II, King iv, 4, 6, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 32, 36, 37, 45, 46, 47, 49, 65, 72, 77, 87, 118, 119, 143, 145, 149, 183, 185
Cañsū III, King (*Uccanā*) 29
Cañsū IV, King (*Tarukpliy*) 29, 30
Cantimā 121
Cāpsumbañ 41
capā (paddy) 84, 101, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136,—*cuik* (planting paddy) 158,—*thon* (pounding paddy) 99
 Cape Salang (*Salañkre*) iv, 4 n. 3, 37
 capital city (*prañ*) 28, 30, 32, 33, 34, 36, 48, 49, 53, 87, 120, 122, 190, Burmese—1, Khmer—51, Mongol—(*Taytu*) 50, Pyu—2
capthui: (summarised copy of an inscription) 190
 captive 149, war—145, 150, 175
 capture of Pagan 53
carai, aihak (upper register) 44
carap (almshouse) 111, 130, 131, 132
 cardamom (*phalā*) 186
 careless reading 192
Careya arborea (*pānpūy*) 186
Carica papaya (*bhittikiy, pittaka*, papaya) 186
cāriy (clerk, secretary) 69, 161
cāriw (a kind of medical herb) 185
 carpenter (*laksmā*) 109, 143
 cartage 128
 carve 165
 carvers of stone 139
 carving 178
cāsañ (student) 83, 96, 100, 140, 141—*kloñ* (school) 83, 118,—*tuik* (school) 83, 126
 case, civil 88, criminal—88, law—42, 46, 89, 90, 91, 98, 100, 101, 147, petty theft—77, 87, 90, officer in charge of the—(*amhu cuiw*) 90, judge of the theft—(*khuiw sūkri*) 42, 90, 124
 casket, Pyu 166, relic—179, 188
 cast 165, 166
 castanet (*khyū*) 69
cat (investigate) 88
cātāt (literate) 156, 157
cattara magga (four paths) 94 n. 12
Cattaruy 101
 cattle 34, 158, monastic—(*sanghika nwā*) 99, 111, dedication of—59, 96, 99, 118, 122, 126, 127
cātuik (cabinet) 83, 133, 134
caturapaccaya (*paccāñ lepā*, four necessities of the monks) 104
Caturañgapaccaya 79, 84
Caturañkapuñ 98
Caturañgasū 20, 21, 40
 cavalry officer (*mrāñ sūkri*) 42
 cave (*guha, kū*) 11 n. 10, 128, Binji—184, variegated—(*kūprok*) 128,—like hollow iv,—temple 11 n. 10
Caw 72, 73, 74
Caw Alhwan (Queen of *Cañsū II*) 16, 18, 19
Caw, Ari 78
Caw (Queen of *Narasiñghauccanā*) 21, 69, 97, 99, 150, 151, 153, 158, (Queen of *Tarukpliy*) 73, 104
Cawkri (King *Klacwā*) 22, 23, 27
Caw Mrakan Sañ (Queen of *Cañsū II*) 16
Caw Pulay May (Queen of *Klacwā*) 96
Caw Rahan, King 4 n. 6, 110
 celibate 93
 Celebrated Chronicle (*Rājawañkyoau*) iii, 2
 cemetery 105

central Burma 35, 37, 119,—figure 168, 178, 188,—government 4, 36

centre 120, 122, administrative—32,—of the Burmese 37

ceremony 57, 75, 86, 110, consecration—(*anekajā*) 74-5, dedication—111, *kathina*—144, mixed—55, *pavāranā*—110, robe of the—28, *uposatha*—110

Cethoyno, 182, 187

ceti (*cetiya*) 34, 59, 61, 102, 128, 129, *Pan-pwattrap*—126

cetiya 84, 102, 165, 169, *dhamma*—(a memorial in honour of the Law) 165, *paribhoga*—(a thing used by the Buddha) 165

Ceylon (*Laṅkā, Sinhala*) 7, 12, 24, 81 n. 5, 86, 118, 119, 122, 123, assassins from—119, chronicle of—7, educational mission to—119, 126, friendly relations with—119, gift of relics from—119, king of—7, mission to—7, religious mission to—120, story of the coming of Buddhism to—119

chā (salt) 133, 134,—*sāñ* (salt maker) 161

cha:bo (image) 64

chain of rebirths (*samsāra*) 71, 75

chair 160,—maker 160,—man 116 n. 9

chaitarvāḍ (eleven villages) 37

Chaktawshe (Long Novel Cord) iii

chalk (*mliyphlu*) 83, 107

Chalukya dynasty 166

Cham (Champa) 3,—inscription 3

chamber, relic 5, 65, 128, 141, 166, 184

champac (*Michelia champaca, cāmkā*) 186

chan (husked rice) 84, 101, 102, 133, 134, 185-6

Chan, Saṅkri 101

chañ (elephant) 106,—*cway* (ivory) 129, 130, 131,—*khuiw* (elephant theft) 97,—*phlū* (white elephant) 30, 38,—*phlūskhīn* (Lord of the White Elephant) 62,—*thin* (mahout) 89, 158,—*wāñ* (porch) 130

chañchumsañ (oil producer) 161

chandelier (*tanchorñ*) 107, 129

chañlañ (bell) 106

chañ nray (misery) 149

chañpu (image of the Lord, *chañ:tu*) 64, 128, 129, 130, 131,—*liyiyakñhā* (four images placed back to back) 130, 131

Chāñ:rai sū:pai (land measure used by the commonfolk) 163

chāñ, rhui: (full copy of an inscription) 190

chap (sattle debt) 149

Chapañ 119

chapswā (*Pandanus furcatus*) 186

chapter of five monks 105

charātoau (*chatoau*, head of a monastic establishment) 78, 95 n. 14, *Sudhammī*—116

charioteer of law 54, 145

charity 59, 60, 75

charm 89

Chēng-mien 32, 35

chest, massive 169

chewing betel 159

chi (oil) 102, 104

Chickrassia tabularis (Chittagongwood, *rañ-mā*) 186

chief bull 8,—clerk (*cākhipuñ*) 110,—disciple (*argasāvaka*) 57, 58, 92,—minister (*amatkri*) iv, 24, 39-40, 41, 44, 47, 49, 100,—monk (*charātoau, sañgharāja*) 43, 45, 46, 54, 56, 57, 87, 111, 141,—queen (*mahādevī, mahesi*) 17, 23, 182, 183, 188,—of the Religion (*Sāsanāpuñ*) 116,—of the State 31, local—2, 4, 8, 37

Ch'ien Han Shu 2

child born of slave parents (*sapok*) 146

child, lady and 178

children 147, dedication of ones own—as slaves 145, sale of—as slaves 145

chimi (light) 101, 102, 131, 132, 155,—*khwak* (oil lamp) 107,—*thor* (a thousand lights) 103,—*tuiñ* (oil lamp stand),—*wat* (duty to provide oil lamps) 155

Chin Hills (*Macchagiri*) iv, 4, 37, 45

China 31, 126, 188, contact by sea with—3, embassy to—2, peace mission to—3,

province of—32
 Chindwin 30, 39, 97, 100, 121 n. 2, 123
 Chinese (*Cin*) 3, 31, 36, 53, 63, 157, 158,—
 account 2, 35,—invasion 2,—reference
 2,—workmanship 185
chiphāh 185
Chipton (Poison Mt.) 43, 44, 98, 123
chisel (*chok*) 106
Chit Sa, Maung 185
chit thin (goatherd) 158
 Chittagong 12 n. 7,—wood (*Chickrassia tabularia, rāmā*) 186
Chiy (paint) 107-8, 130, 131, 140,—*plu cā*
 (wrought havoc by magic) 89,—*wā*
 (medicine) 104
 criminal court (*khuiw tryā*) 89
chiythañ (yellow orpiment) 107, 135, 136
chok (chisel) 106
 chopping firewood (*thākhuy*) 99
 Christian Era, Julian 7 n. 7, 11 n. 12
 chronicle iv, 1, 4 n. 6, 7, 8, 12, 13, 18, 21,
 29, 30, 31, 34, 36, 43, 51, 58, 73, 115,
 116, 120, 123, 124, 125, Burmese—3,
 12, Celebrated—iii, Glass Palace—iii,
 Great—iii, New—iii, Siamese—6 n. 2,
 Sinhalese—7, 12, 51, 119
 chroniclers iii, 9, 125
 chronological list of inscriptions 191,—order
 165
chryā (*acāriya*, teacher) 95, 96, *amat kri Siri watthanā*—96, *Caw Pulay Mai*—96,
Lhakanakkabram—117, *lū nat takā*—
 96, *mar*—(king's teacher) 6, 110, 116,
Na Surim Sai—117, *Nat*—96, *sumū*—
 96
chu fan chih 2
chuīwārāy (hardship, labour, misery) 147,
 148
chumithā 98
chun (minimum) 135, 136, (mortar) 107
chunam 103,—phial (*thunphū*) 103
 church 55, 56, Buddhist—5,—dignitaries 125
chwāri (food for the monk) 102, 153
cicer arietinum (*kulāpāy*) 185
cīcōn (granary keeper) 161
cīmukri (gingerwort) 185
cīmūnāk (*Nigella sativa*) 185
cīn (Chinese) 157
Cin:ñākmañ: 116
Cipe, Queen 182, 183
 circular mound 168,—wall 127
 citizen 149
cītrus (*rhok*) 186
 city (*prañ*) 33, 35, 55, 112, 120, 122, 127,—
 gate (*prañ tamīkā*) 122,—of *nirvāṇa* 73,
 —of no death (*masi prāñ*) 112,—of the
 Enemy Crusher 3,—of Pagan 36,—wall
 of Pagan 1, capital—33, royal—166,
Viśnu—(*Peikthanomyo*) 182
cīvarañ (clothing) 104 n. 3
 civil and criminal law 87, 90
 civil and military duties 40, 49
 civil case 88,—code (*dhammasatthā*) 46, 49,
 88,—court 101,—service 90,—suit 42
 civilization 52, Mon—6, 53
 clad, properly 120
 claim to the throne 149
 claimants, rival 45
 clarified butter 111
 class distinction 153
 clay, potter's 165,—tablet 165, 166
 clear water, tender grass and (*mrak nu riy krañ*) 154
 clergy 39, 87
 clerk (*cākhī*) 42, 49, chief—(*cākhipuñ*) 110,
 —of *Kamīkun* 12,—of the criminal
 court (*khuiw tryā cākhī*) 90
 climber 186
clitoria ternatea (*ōñmañi*) 185
 cloth 138, 139, 160
 clothing (*cīvarañ*) 104, free food and—137
Co (honorific) 19
 coconut (*ūn*) 185
 code, civil (*dhammasattha*) 46, 49, 78, 88,
 90, criminal—(*amunwan*) 28, 49, 88, 90,
 legal—42, penal—47, 49
 codification of the customary law 88 n. 4
 Coëdès, George 166, 175, 178

coffeewort (*krakkrūn*) 185
 coin 105 n. 10
coix la chrymae jobis (klit) 185
Co Khañ Mi Nay 19
Coñla 7, 55, 81 n. 2,—prince 9
 collection, revenue 43, 49
 collotype reproductions 191
 colossal image 67
Co Man Lha 19
 coming of Buddhism to Ceylon 119,—of the Burmans 1
 commandant, fort (*mruiw sūkri*) 42
 commander 35 n. 9
 commander-in-chief (*senāpati*) 41, 72, 92
 commentary 84, 90
 commission 24, 49, Burma Historical—132 n. 1, 192, enquiry—20, royal—39, 87, —of eight 101 n. 2, 116
 committee of 1829 190,—of elders 101
 commodities, price of 21
 common folk 112, 141,—people 143, 182
 commoner 145
 communal life 120
 communications 49
 community, slave 146, 161
 companions of the king (*mañkhyai*) 41
 compound 97, inner—141, monastic—131, outer—141, sweeping—(*talāñmrak*) 99
con (?sharp) 93
Conac, King 35
 couch 55, 56
 concubine (*aproñtoau*) 16, 19, 42, 78, 146, 151
 confession of monks 111
 confiscation of a rebel's estate 150,—of estates 23, 48,—of religious lands iv, 20, 23, 24, 39, 75, 87, 100, 101, 120
 confluence 165
 congregation 77, 84, 85
Conjeveram (Pallava) 189
 connivance at drinking intoxicants 121
 conquest 52,—of lower Burma 62, 115,—of Thaton 6, 51, 53,—of the delta iv, 7
coñsañ (?harpist) 160
 consecration 110,—ceremony (*anekajā*) 74-5
 consort (*sakti*) 178
 construction 57, 130, 135, 138, cost of—109, palace—iv, 9,—and maintenance of religious edifices 126,—of monastery 108
 contact, overseas 7
 contemplative knowledge (*vipassāñ ñāñā*) 52
 contemporary 67, 176,—account 119, 130, —evidence iii, 51,—inscriptions 143,—record 6,—rulers 182
 contestants 89
 control, foreign 35
 convert 166
 converted into Buddhism 2
 cook 69, 146, 158, curry—(*hari sañ*) 158, 159, domestic—(*im thamañ khyak*) 159, rice—(*thamañ sañ*) 158, 159
 cooked rice (*thamañ*) 123, price for—(*thamañ phuiw*) 45, 122
 copper 47, 100, 107, 121, 128, 138, 139, 151, land of—3-4, white—(*kriyphlu*) 151
 copy 79, 135, full—(*chan, thui*) 190, summarised—(*cap thui*) 190, copying the *piñtaka* 9, 78, 84, 118, 139, 140
 core of the Burmese empire 4
 coronation (*abhiseka*) iv, 8 n. 2, 24, 39, 52
 corporal oath 89
corypha elata (*piy*, umbrella palm) 83, 186
 cost (*phuiw*) 101, 102,—of building 21, 139, —of construction 109,—of *piñtaka* 79
 cot (*kharitavi*) 69
 cotton, bolt of 138
 couch (*ñorñor, salwan*) 69, 106, 111
 councillor 10, privy—(*aiwai*) 184
 country 24, 33, 50, 51, 12
 couple, loving (*anhac lañmayā, anhac moñ-nham*) 148, 155
 courier, mounted (*mraci*) 42, 49
 courses, musical 93
 court 41, 48, 88, Burmese—iii, 41 n. 6, civil—101, criminal—(*khuiw tryā*) 87, 89, ecclesiastical—101, judge of the—(*tryā*)

89, law—87, 97, 101, lay—117, lower—*(buīh-tryā)* 87, 90, royal—42, 44,—intrigue 30,—of appeal (*atamitryā*) 21, 87,—of Pagan 20, 31, 55
 courtier 42, 112
 cow 152, Lord of the—58, milch—(*nutwñhat nwñma*) 99
 cowherd (*nwñthin*) 69, 152, 158
 coxswain (*lawkā sükri*) 88
 craft 92
 craftsman 158, 159, 188
 craftsmanship 75
 craving 75
 creditor 148
 cremation 104
 crime 47, suppression of—iv
 criminal 88,—code (*āmunwan*) 28, 46, 49, 88, 90,—court 87,—law 87,—procedure iv
 crop (*kok si*) 87-8, 99
 crossbeam (*thup*) 107, 138
 crowd 112
 crown 67, 179,—prince 17, 18
 cruel law 161
 crystal (*phan*) 129
 cucumber (*cucumis sativus, sikhwā*) 186
 cuim, amhu (judge of the civil suit) 42
Cuiwiman 69
 cuivsā 30
Cuñasakkarāja 124 n. 6
Cuñasandhivissodhāna 81
Cuñamani 133, 134
Cūlavagga 80 n. 5
Cūlavanisa 7, 12
 cultivable land 102, 118, 190
 cultivate 162
 cultivation 162, dry—(*muryan lay*) 158, hill side—(*ryā*) 89, 101, 158, wet—(*sanlay*) 158
 cultivator 158
 cultural affinity 188
 culture, Burmese 7, 36, Mon—Pagan—7, 15
 cup (*khwak*) 15, 59, eating—(*cākhwak*) 106

curry (*hari*) 101, 102,—cook (*haisañi*) 158, 159
 curse on monks 109, 110
 cursive hand 169
 cushion (*camakhan*) 129
 custom 45
 customary law iv, 49, codification of the—88 n. 4
 cutch 103
 cutter, firewood 153
 cymbal (*khwakkhwañi*) 69

D

daily food 83, 84, 102,—life 60, articles of use 69, 101, 105, 160
 dairy farming 158,—man 99,—produce 99
Daia (Tala) iv, 20, 100, 175
dānapati 184
 dancer (*kakhriy sañi*) 69, 143, 153
 dancing (*nicca*) 93, 160,—figure 179
Dasaratha iii
dusasilāñi 100 n. 5
 date of the tablet 166
 daughter (*samī, sāmīyama*) 144, 147, 152
 day, four parts of the 120
dāyakā (devotee) 80, 97, 98, 178
 deacon (*samanī, sāmāñera, kuiran*) 94
 death (*nairwāñā, pyamitawmū*) 77, city of no—(*masiyprāñi*) 112, lord of life and—39,—of Mahākassapa 123,—of the Buddha 51
 death-bed 10,—gift 115
 debased form of religion v
 debt (*mri*) 148, settling—21, slaves given in settlement of—146
 debtor, insolvent 145, 148, — slave 153, 161
 Decease, The Great (*mahāparinivana*) 172, 176, 177
 decipher 190, 191
 decoration 130, 137, 138, 141, 178, 179, 188, floral—169, 174, wooden—140
 decorative motif 174, 184, 188

decorator 159, 160
 dedication 16, 19, 22, 40, 43, 52, 71, 72, 73, 102, 103, 117, 125, 143, self—as slave 145,—ceremony 111,—of articles of daily use 59,—of cattle 59, 96, 99, 118, 122, 126, 127,—of elephant 118,—of food 59,—of garden 118, 152,—of land 12, 13, 23, 39, 44, 45, 48, 49, 59, 62, 75, 83, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 108, 109, 111, 118, 119, 120, 122, 126, 127, 144, 153, 190,—of money 127,—of palmyra palms 111,—of precious metals 59,—of ones own children as slaves 145,—of slaves 23, 48, 59, 68, 69, 74, 83, 92, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 104, 108, 109, 111, 118, 119, 120, 122, 125, 126, 127, 140, 141, 144, 146, 147, 150, 151, 152, 154, 156, 157, 158,—of toddy palms 144,—to a monastery 155,—to a pagoda 155, receiving a—112, witnesses to a—116, 119 n. 5
 deeds, meritorious 10, 20, 21, 32, 47, 48, 49, 54, 61, 67, 73, 108, 119, 123, 144
 deer 178, 179
 defeat in a law suit (*tryā yhumī*) 88
 defeating the rebels 150
 defender (*trā*) 78
 defensive warfare 35
 deforestation 3
 degradation in social status 145
 deity 58; Brahmanical—166, Indian—57, living—68, 75, Mahāyāna—178, Shai-vaite—58
 delicacies, five (*arasā nā pā*) 99
 delta 6 n. 4, conquest of the—iv, 7
 demon, snake 58
 Department of Oriental Studies 191
 Department of the Archaeological Survey of Burma 191
 depository for the law 141
 derivation 77, 78, 91,—of *Arañ* 124
 descendants 45, 145, 155 n. 1
 descent from *Tāvatīmīsa* 176, 177
 description of Pagan 1
 design 108, floral—(*khlyupan*) 128, 174, 178, 179, 184, 190
 desire (*ramimak*) 73
 despot 39
 destruction of the Pyu kingdom 52
 dethroned king (*nanklamañ*) 35
deva 73, 96, 113, 178, 184, 187, king of—15, men and—73
devaloka 77, 113
 Devanagala inscription 12
 devastations of the invading army 34
devī 109 n. 3
 devotee (*dāyaka*) 45, 90, 94, 96, 97, 100, 166, 170, 178, 179, 188, lay—117, 121, 141, shed for lay—(*satañ tañkup*) 111.
Dhājaggasutta 87 n. 4
dhamma 91
Dhammabandā 98
Dhammabhañqāgārika 98 n. 2
Dhammacakka (*Tryā ū*, First Sermon) 85, 123
Dhammaceī (*Rāmādipati*) King, 6, 120
dhamma cetiya (a memorial in honour of the Law) 165
dhammakhandha (section) 79, 80
Dhammapada 52, 75, 82
Dhammarāc (*Dhammarāja*, Just King) 21 n. 10, 78, 117
Dhammarājaguru 18, 20, 46
Dhammarājapāñdita 183, 184, 187
Dhammarājika inscription 118,—pagoda 18, 65, 74, 119
dhammasā (Hall of Law, preaching hall) 85, 130, 132, 140, 141
Dhammasatīgani 81 n. 13, 82
Dhammasat (Civil Code, Code of Law, *Dhammasattha*) iv, 46, 49, 78, 88, 90
Dhammasīri 24, 48, 101, 110, 119, 120, 122
Dhammāvīlāsa 17, 46, 88 n. 4, 145
Dhammayangyi inscription 11,—pagoda 11, 12
dhāpanā (*thāpanā*, enshrinement) 129
dharani (bring up) 147
dharma 42, 77
Dhamacakra mudrā (*Vyākhyāna mudrā*, attitude of preaching) 67, 171, 172, 178

dhāt (relics) 45
Dhātukathā 81 n. 13
Dhīpasyāñ 23
dhutañgāñ 120
Dhyāñā mudrā (*Samādhi mudrā*, attitude of meditation) 171, 172
Dhyāñāsana (legs closely locked, sitting for introspection or meditation) 169, 172, 173, 176, 178, 188
Diamond Throne (*Vajrāsana*) 174
different sects of the Order 120
different shapes of the votive tablets 168
Dīghanikāya 80, 82
digging 42
dignitaries of the Order 115, 125
Diospyros Burmanica (*tī*) 186
Dipankarā 119, 174
diplomacy 36
diplomatic success 126
direct evidence 149
directions, four (*līmyakñāñ*) 99
Disāprāmuk, *Syañ* (Shin Dithapamauk) iv, 3, 4, 32, 33, 34, 50, 126,—inscription 31
disciple (*śrāvaka*) 58, 69, 92, 170, 178, 179.
 chief—(*aggasrāvaka*) 57, 58, 92, mourning—177
discipline 77, 116
dish (*khwak*) 106
displeasure shown by right foot stepping forward (*pratyāliñghāsana*) 172
dispute 87, 100,—among monks 117,—for the ownership of slaves 146, land—23, 89, 123, succession—150
dissension, internal 34
distinction between civil and military offices 40, class—153
district 42, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 157, 184, Kyaukse—98 n. 1, 110, out-lying—24
Divācariyena 183
doctrine of the Buddha 51, 75
Dolichos lablab var. lignosus (*pāykrī*) 186
domestic cook (*im thamañ khyak*) 159,—

help) (*im kywan*, *im t'ionkywan*, *im niy*) 156—servant 145,—slave 151, 162
donation 73, 84, 101, 148
donor (*dāyaka*) 7, 17, 22, 40, 42, 60, 64, 67, 68, 70, 71, 74, 80, 82, 83, 84, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 102, 103, 104, 105, 107, 108, 109, 110, 118, 119, 120, 121, 123, 125, 126, 127, 141, 144, 146 n. 9, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 165, 176, 182, 188,—of a monastery (*klon tāyakā*) 108, name of the—166
door (*tarikhā*) 127
doorstep 138
doorway 130
dosa (anger) 143
double enclosure (*tantuit nhac thap*) 127, 141
double throne (*Padmā-vajrāsana*) 174, 176
dowager queen 48, 59
dream of *Māyā* 177
drinks 45, 124, intoxicating—121, 122
drinking water 120
Drought and Wind, God of 58
drum (*cañ*) 55, 71, 93, 112, 138, 160, 169
drummer (*cañsañ*) 68, 153, 160
dry cultivation (*muryañ kay, ryā*) 89, 158
dry zone 3, 35
dukut (*sañghāti*, outer garment) 105 n. 1
dulcimer player (*candrā sañ*) 69
Duroiselle, C. 1, 66, 124, 191
Duttagāmañ 81 n. 4
duty (*wat*) 101, administrative—43, 48, civil and military—40, 49, kingly—30, military—32, official—48, 155,—of slaves 99, 155, 156,—to cook rice (*sañput wat*) 155,—to provide oil lamps (*chimi wat*) 155
Dvārāvati 178
dynasty 16, 40, 41, 57, Alaungpaya—101 n. 2, Konbaung—116, early Chalukya—166, end of the—122, 152, fall of the—119, Pagan—iii, 7, 29, 36, 39, 54, 65, 70, 189 *Vikrama*—2
dynastic table 13

E

earlobes 189
 earliest writing in Burmese 189
 early history of Burma 165, 182
 earth 171, attitude of touching the—(*bhūmi-sparśa mudrā*) 171, Great—(*Asuntariy, Vasundharā*) 112,—pavilion (*miyantakup*) 155,—to bear witness 169
 earthly luxuries 68
 eastern boundary 36
 ecclesiastic 92
 ecclesiastical 77,—court 101,—lord 63
 economic history iii
 edict 29,—against all malefactors, iv, 24, 46, 88 n. 3, rock—51
 edifice, religious 127, 181
 edition, revised 79
 education 120, monastic—90, religious—90, standard of—41
 educational institute (*cāsañ tuik, cāsañ klon*) 83, 90, 141,—mission 24, 119, 126,—qualification 41
 Egypt 12 n. 4
 eight, commission of 116
 Eight Major Scenes of the Buddha's Life (*Atthamahābhāna*) 176, 177
 Eisor 64
ekaccika sanghāti (upper garment) 169
 elder among the monks (*thera*) 125
 elders, a committee of 101,—of the village 43
 elephant (*chañ*) 12, 30, 69, 83, 97, 106, 137, 139, 179, dedication of—118, slaves given in exchange of an—151, white—38, 177,—entrance (porch, *chañwān*) 130,—hunt 29,—theft (*chañ khuiv*) 97
 eleven villages 35 n. 6, 98 n. 1
 embassy to China 2
 embossed writing 166
 embrace, attitude of (*ālinigana mudrā*) 171
 emperor 35
 empire 36, 39, Burmese—24, 37, core of the Burmese—4, end of the—126, extent of the—37, fall of the—120, 157, 181, founder of the—13, northern limit of the—32, Pagan—iv, 35, 122
 enclosure, double 127, 141,—wall (*tantuin*) 97, 127, 132, 135, 139
 encroaching of land 101
 encyclopaedia of the Buddha's teachings 80 n. 10
 end of the dynasty 122, 152
 end of the empire 126
 endeavour (*lunila*) 148
 enemies of Pagan 149
 English 10, 44
 enjoyment (*caścim*) 113, 143
 enquiry commission 20, legal—12
 enlightenment 62, 65, 66, 71, 75, 169, 171, 176, 177
 enshrine 118
 enshrinement (*dhāpanā; thāpanā*) 129, 144, 166
 entertainment, musical 99, 160
 entrance, elephant (porch, *chañwān*) 13, four—s 127
 envoys, execution of 31, 34,—to Pagan 31
 epidemic 175
 epigraph iii, 9, 16, 165
 epigraphic evidence iii, v, 10, 12, 17, 19, 36, 40, 123, 192,—source 186
 epigraphy iii, 191, 192
 episode 6, 51, 66, 101
 essence of Buddhism 166
 establishment 79, 97, 108, 118, 121, 122, 123, 127, 130, 132, 135, 137, 138, 140, 152, monastic—78, 80, 82, 85, 109, 111, 117, 118, 119, 120, 159, religious—39, 44, 48, 68, 73, 141, 148, 150, 155, 156
 estate 45, 79, 98, 121, 122, 147, 150, confiscation of—23, 48, slaves as a heritable—146
 ethnic sense 157
 Ethnographical Museum, Hamburg 66 n. 6
 eulogy of the king 54
 European influence 160
 evening meal for monks 124
 everyday use, articles of 75, 107
 evidence 55, 89, 118, 122, 124, 125, 126,

140, 143, 145, 152, 153, 155, contemporary—iii, 51, direct—149, epigraphic—iii, v, 10, 12, 17, 19, 36, 40, 123, 192
 evolution of the Burmese alphabet 192
 exalted person 63
 excavation 1,—at Hmawza 52
 excellent and omniscient lord, most 27
 exchange of a boat, slave given in 150,
 slaves given in—of a horse 151,
 slaves given in—of an elephant 151,
 slave given in—of ten areca palm trees
 151, medium of—151
 excommunication (*pakāsamyakamma*) 59,
 126 n. 2
 execution of envoys 31, 34,—of rebel princes
 20
 executive officer 42, 91, 145
 exegetical work 80 n. 1
 exemption from tax 12, 101
 exile 48
 existence, next 74
 ex-monk (*lūthwak*) 96
 expansion of Buddhism 51, north and south
 —51, Pagan—4
 expediency, political 10
 expedition 12, 31,—to Pagan 33
 expenditure 132
 expense 122, account of wage and—135
 exports 12
 expression, facial 168
 extension 130, 139, front—(*uchak*) 130
 extent of the empire 37
 extirpation of heresy 8
 eye, almond shape 169

F

face, stern 169
 facial expression 168
 faith (*saddhā*) 74
 fall of Ayuthia 124 n. 6,—of Pagan 45, 121,
 157,—of the dynasty 119,—of the empire 120, 181
 family (*imthoni, lai mayāsācum*) 145, 149,
 head of the—143, 156, re-establishing
 the royal—36, royal—iv, 23, 35, 48, 91,
 117, 183, slave—145
 famous stanza 166, 169, 176
 fan (*yap*) 102, 107,—lady (*yaptawsāñ*) 146
 farm labourer 99
 farming, dairy 158
 facsimile 191,—reproduction 165
 fauna 188
 favourite 41, 42, king's—(*rājavallabha*,
 king's intimate) 19, 184
 fear of insurrection 38, 39
 feast 45, 102, 121, 122, 123, 124
 fee, scribe's 140
 female ascetic (*bhikkhuni*) v, 125
 fermented spirits for monks 124
 Ferrand, Gabriel 2, 3
 fetching water (*riykhap*) 99
 fictitious king 12
 field 150, paddy—23, 45, ridges in a paddy
 —(*bnhan, kansan*:) 163 n. 1
 fife (*kharā*) 112
 fifty group (*pannāsa*) 80 n. 8
 fig leaf 168
 fighting scene 184
 figure 178, central—168, 178, 188, dancing
 —179, relief—165, 168,—s of deva and
 various other beings (*rup nat athū thū*)
 128
 find spot 5-6, 51, 166, 189
 fine 44
 fingers, normal 67, 169
 Finot, L. 4 n. 9
 fire 120; great—(of 1225) 9 n. 4, 127
 fire-proof wall (*tantuin mīkā*) 127
 firewood (*than*) 104, 120, 138, chopping
 —(*than khuy*) 99,—cutter 153
 First Bath 177,—Sermon (*Tryā ū, Dham-
 macakka*) 123, 176, 177, 178, 179 n. 4,
 —World War 191
Ficus hispida (*si, twot*) 186
 fish 159
 fishery (*añ*) 47
 five attributes (*pañcaṅga, pañcañ:*) 95,—
 hundred stories (*jāi nā ryā*) 130, 131,

—requisite qualifications 153,—thousand years of the Religion 155,—urn inscriptions 189

flame pediments (*calac*) 130, 134, 135

flint (*mikhat*) 106

flora 188

floral design (*khlyu pan*) 128, 169, 174, 178, 179, 184, 190

flower (*pan*) 101, 178, 186, 188, pure—(*pancañ*) 95,—seal (*tanchip pan*) 89

folk, common 112, 141

folktale 51

follower 96

food (*piñgapāto, samiput*) 101, 104, free—and clothing 137, cooking—99, daily—83, 84, 102, dedication of—59, —and shelter 96,—supply 153,—suppliers 158

foot-prints of the Buddha (*Buddhapāda*) 67

forces, Mongol 126

Forchhammer, Dr Emil 46, 88 n. 4, 190

forehead, high 169

foreign control 35

foremen 156

foremost person 187

forest 96 n. 11,—dweller (*Āraññavāsi, Āraññika, Araññ, Tawmlakri*) 72, 101, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125,—monastery 100,—monastery 24, 100, 108, 120, 121, 124

forever (*akhā mlañ, mlay*) 155

form of Buddhism, the pure 115, 116

formula, Buddhist ritual (*paritta*) 55

fort 31, 32,—commandant (*mruiw sūkri*) 42

fortification 31

foundation 128, 137,—of Pagan 1, 2, 37

founder of the Araññ sect 125,—of the empire 13

founding of Pagan 3

four entrances 127,—necessities of monks (*paccāñ liy pā*) 9, 55, 118,—parts of the day 120

fo-ya, fo-ye (*purhā*) 63

fragmentary 191

free food and clothing 137,—man 151

freedom 154

frescoes 66

friendly relations with Ceylon 119

front extension (*uchak*) 130, 132

frontier 43,—campaign 49,—guard 98, 123,—tribes 31,—northern—iv, 49

fruit 103, 185, 186, 188, 189

Fu-kan-tu-lu 2, 3

fund 83, 84, 90, 154, monks' fund (*sañghika uccā*) 98

funeral 104

fu-ya (*purhā*) 63

G

gamūñi: (species of *Kaempferia*) 179

ganaries, master of (*kī sūkri*) 42

Gañeśa (*Mahāpinnai, Mahāvināyaka*) 57, 166

Gaṅgābījañ 144, 153

Gaṅgasūra, Prince (*Kaṅkasū*) 18, 19, 20, 147, 153

garden (*uyāñ*) 23, 107, 111, 141, 150, 153, 158, dedication of—118, 152, kitchen—(*kuiñ*) 158

gardener (*uyāñsañ*) 69, 151

garment 106, inner—(*khruy kham, sakkhāñ*) 105, lower—(*antaravāsaka, sañ:puñ*) 105 n. 1, outer—(*dukui, sañghāti*) 104-5, 105 n. 1, upper—(*kuiwat, uttarā-sāṅgo*) 105 n. 1

garuda 166

garrison 31

gate 97, city—(*prañ tamkhā*) 122, *Sarabha*—1

gateway (*muk*) 127, 128

Gavampati 8, 56, 57, 58, 79

gilded bull (*nvālāsan*) 121

gems (*ratanā*) 129, 174, precious—128, Three—s (*ratanā sumi:pā*) 91

gem-studded (*myak khat*) 69

general (*cac sūkri, ?puil sūkri*) 35, 51, 122, —Ādicca 12,—Hu Tu 31,—unrest 24

generation (*sā can mliy can*) 45, 46, 145, 148

generous treatment to birds and beasts 9
gentleman 148
gentry, landed 43, 49
gift (*alhū paccāñ*) 33, 111, attitude of bestowing—
 gift (*vara mudrā, varada mudrā*) 172, death-bed—115, miscellaneous—
 126,—of land 121, 123,—of relics from
 Ceylon 119
gild 139
gilding 140
gilt 141
ginger (*kheñ*) 186
gingerwort (*cīmukri*) 185
girdle (*kāyabandhanā*) 106 n. 2
gīta (singing) 93
giver, law 90
giving alms 47, 48, 141
Glass Palace Chronicle (*Mhannan*) iii, 1, 10
glazed plaques 189
glebe land 24, 47, 100
gloss 81 n. 3, Shih-ku's—3
god 75, The Buddha as—68,—of Drought
 and Wind 58
Goddess *Kāñyā* 3
gold 107, 128, 138, 139, 140, 144
golden mountain (*rhuy-ton*, throne) 16, 30,
 110
gold-leaf manuscript 52, 53, 189
goldsmith (*panthan*) 69
gong (*noñ nañ*) 69
good, luxury 145
Gotama 64, 65, 66, 67, 75, 77, 78, 92, 112,
 teachings of—84
gourd-melon, white (*Benincasa cerifera, kleñphūrum*) 185
government iv, 39,—archaeologist 190,—
 official 47, 63, 91, central—4, 36, Yunnan—31, 34
governor 10, 21,—of Taungdwin 81 n. 3,—
 of Tavoy 183, 187
grain 103
grammar (*byākāruñ*) 41
granary keeper (*ki con*), royal—49
grant audience 47,—of land 141
grape (*mathunsarā*) 186
Great Ascetic 166
Great Chronicle iii
Great Decease (*Mahāparinivāna*) 172, 176,
 177
Great Earth (*Asuntariy, Vasundharā*) 112
great fire (1225) 9 n. 4
Great Khan. iv, 126
great king (*asyañ mañkri*) 95
Great Miracle at *Sāvasti* (*yāmakāprātihār-ya*) 174, 176, 177, 178
greed (*lobha, rārimak*) 112, 143
grinding stone (*klokpyāñ*) 107
group 187, family—(*lañmiyāsācumī*) 145,
 fifty—(*paññasa*) 80 n. 8, new—of the
 Order 122, 125, orthodox—118, 123,
 study—126, working—156
Grove, Banyan (*Nigroda*) 138
guard (*kañsañ*) 43, 44, frontier—98, 123
Gubyaukgyi inscription 146,—pagoda 6, 66
Guha (*kū, cave*) 128
Guhadipa 182
guide for land measure 163
gumir (monk) 94, 95
Gunagambhi 87, 88
Guñāñānasithī 99
Guñasidhi 121
Gupta 182, late—period 166
gymnastics 51

H

half-brother 122, 149
half-sister 118
Halingyi 2, 52, 53
hall, assembly (*dirlac, dirlec, tulik*) 130,
 Elephant-Review—(*Chai-rhu kwan*) 48,
 Great Variegated—(*Kwan prok kri*) 48,
 100, High—(*Kwan mrañ*) 48, 49, Lecture
 —111, 118, Pleasant—of Justice (*Tryā-
 kwansāyā*) 87, Ordination—(*Sim, Si-
 ma*) 110, 130, Permanent Ordination—
 (*Baddhasimā*) 54, 110, Pleasant—(*Kwan-
 sāyā*) 48, prayer—56, preaching—130,
 Pure—(*Cañkraykwan*) 48, 49, Small
 Variegated—(*Kwanprokñay*) 48, Varie-

gated—(*Kwanprok*) 48, 49,—of Law (*dhammasā, tryāśim, tryākloñ*) 85, 90, 96

halo 169, 178, 179

Hamburg Ethnographical Museum 66 n. 6

hamsa (geese) 169, 179, 188

hañ (curry) 101, 102,—sañ (curry cook) 69, 158, 159

Hañ Ram Pa-ak 20, 24

handling of money 100 n. 5

Hanlañ 33, 34, 126, 182

hañsapatā (vermillion) 107, 135, 136

Haribhuñja 175

Harivikrama, King 2, 182

harp (*coñ*) 93

Harvey, G.E. 47

hat 105 n. 10

Hatā 146

Hayagriva 178 n. 5

head, cursive 169,—of the family 156,—of the Order 116,—of a monastic establishment 119,—of the monastery 45, 46, 117, 156,—priest 78

headman 28, 41, 124, monk as a village—100, village—(*rwāñukri*) 42, 47, 100,—of the suburb (*?kliy sūkri*) 42

heap (*apūñi*) 78, Three—s of Law (*Pitaka suni puni*) 130, 132

heaven 175

heir iii, iv, 10

hell (*niray*) 98, 109, *Avici*—47, miseries of—109, *Tapana*—28

help, domestic (*im kywan, im thoñ kywan, im niy*) 156

Henbuñ 146

hereditary rank 38,—slave 145, 161,—title 38

heresy, Burman 124, extirpation of—8

heretics 55, 175, suppression of—iv

hero of *Takor* battle 117, mythical—8

heroism shown by left foot stepping forward (*āliñhāsana*) 172

hewer of stone 139

hierarchy 117

high forehead 169,—relief 169,—roofed monastery (*mwan khonñacwan kloñ*) 129

highways 105 n. 10

Hills, Chin (*Macchakiri*) iv, 4, 37, 45, Kyaukse—53, Sagaing—78, *Turan*—101,—side cultivation (*ryāñ*) 101, 158

hilllock 185

Hinayāna Buddhism 6 n. 2, 170, 178, 188

Hinduism 166

hinkiw (asafoetida) 186

Historical Commission, Burma 132 n. 1, 192

historical study 165

history 51, 188, economic—iii, early—of Burma 165, 182, oral—190, medieval Burmese—iii, Pagan—iii, political—iii, v, social—iii

hlaawga (*hlaouka, boat*) 86

Hluttaw (Chief Administrative Office, *Lhawattoau*) 40, 47

Hmannan: Rājawañ (Glass Palace Chronicle) iii, 1, 10

Hmawza 2, 52, 53, 175, 178, 179, 182, 184

hollow, cave-like iv,—pagoda 11 n. 10, 21, 23, 64, 87, 96, 97, 103, 118, 120, 122, 125, 127, 128, 132, 135, 141, 144, 148, 153, 154, 189,—pagoda of four sides (*kū 4 myaknā*) 102

holy man (*sutau kon*) 94,—place 127

honey (*madhu, pyā*) 104,—rice 176

horn 138,—of a *makara* 169

horse 67, 109, 137, 139, 151, magic—51, *narakā*—138, slaves given in exchange of a—151

hostel 83

house 109, alms—(*carap*) 74, 130, rest—(*tanchon*) 130, store—(*piyakuñi*) 130,—builder 75,—builder

household slave (*im thoñ kywan*) 23, 108

Hpaunglin village 178 n. 5

Hsinbyushin pagoda 18

Hsueh-hsueh-ti-chin, Prince (*Susunaki*) 34

hti (*h̄t, umbrella*) 5

Htilo-minlo, King 13, 17 n. 3, 20,—Pasoda 65

Htupayon, Sagaing 184

humanitarian 143
 hundred stories, five (*jāt nā ryā*) 130, 131
 hunt, elephant 29
 hunter (*mūchuiw*) 42
 hunting lodge 30,—scenes 184
hurā (astrologer) 39, 41, 96,—*nay* 17
 husband (*lān*) 148
 Hu Tu, General 31

I

icon 64, 67, 168
Igvara 64
 illegible 191
im (house) 108
 image (*chanpu*) 56, 58, 65, 67, 68, 88, 129, 148, 154, 169, 175, 177, 182, bronze—165, colossal—67, golden—64,—of the Buddha 122, 151, 165, 170, 184,—of the Lord 123, 128, 132, 141, 144, 159, 170
imkrīsañ 101
imkywan (*imthōñ kywan*, *imniy*, domestic help) 156
 imperial ambassador 31,—order 31, 34
 imperialistic design 6
 impermane, law of (*atañmayosotrā*) 77
 importance, order of 117
imtañ (palace) 12
Imtawsyañ, King 12, 13, 19, 119
im thamañ khyak (domestic cook) 159
imthōñ (family) 145, 146,—*kywan* (household slave) 108
imriyamañ (Heir Apparent) 21
 inability, security against old age and 153
 incident 89
 independence 155 n. 3
 India 4, 5, 7, 11 n. 10, 61, 145, 165, 179, 188, direct contact by sea with—iii. South—7, untouchables of—145
 Indian 12, 119, 143, 157, 158, 161,—city 57,—law book 49,—philosophy 77,—script 166, 168, 300,—temple 6—slave 151, 152,—stone—115
 indigenous thought 15
 Indo-China 115

Indra 8, 57
 industry 158
 influence, Brahmanical v. 57, European—160, Mon—iv, 15, 58, Mongol-Chinese—53, religions—115, Thai—175
 information 149
 inherit 45
 inheritance 87, 147
 inherited property 59, 98, 147,—slave (*amuy kywan*) 146
 ink inscription 189
 inner compound 141,—garment (*takyat*) 69,—wall 141
 inscription 1, 2, 5, 6, 7, 8, 12, 13, 19, 20, 21, 22, 28, 30, 34, 35, 37, 39, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 47, 48, 49, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 60, 61, 63, 69, 70, 77, 80, 85, 86, 87, 88, 93, 98, 99, 101, 104, 105, 108, 109, 112, 115, 116, 117, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 128, 135, 137, 144, 145, 146, 155, 156, 158, 163, 168, 177, 184, 189, Alanpagan—9, Ayeththama Hill—9, Burmese—16, 53, 190, Cham—3, chronological list of—s 191, contemporary—143, Devanagala—12, Dhammayangyi—11, *Dhammarājika*—118, *Disāprāmuk*—31, five urn—s 189, Gubyaukgyi—146, Great Shwezigon—2, 8, 54, 58, 70, 149, ink—189, *Jayapavattī* (Zeyaput)—23, 44, 47, *Kalyāñi*—74, 119, 175, Khemawara pagoda—70, Laydaunggan—17, Laymyakhna—22, List 73—10, lithic—189, 190, Lomgoeu—3, Mahadhi—17, 18, Medieval Burmese—143, Midwedaw—17, Minwaing—22, 23, Mon—15, 20, 78, 110, 116, 189, 191, Mt. Thetso—12, Myagan—8, 9, 79, Myazedi—7 n. 1, North *Kūni*—21, Pagan—s 11, 46, 58, Palace—9, 39, 41, 55, 115, Pali—4, 184, Pali-Sanskrit—11, Phimanakas—63, pillar—43, 47, post-Pagan—8, Prome Shwezandaw—8, Pya—53, 190, 191, *Rājakumār*—7, 9, 53, 64, 157, Sanskrit—4, 189, *Saitya*—122, Sawhlawin—67, Sawhlaun—184, Sawminhla—16, Shinbin-dhi—29, Shwegu—140, Shwezigon—115, stone—(*kkhīcā*) 155, Sulamani—

19, Tainggyut—57, Tatkale—189, Tharaba Gate—9, urn—2, 182
 insolvent debtor 145, 148
 inspection of villages 45, 49
 institute, educational (*cāsañ kloñ, cāsañ tuik*) 83, 90, 141
 institution 143
 instruction 101, 110, 153
 instrument, musical 160
 insurrection, fear of 39
Intapaccarā 31, 32
 interest, landed 123
 interloper 107
 internal dissension 34
 interregnum iv, 13,—of nine years 12
 intervention to get the king's pardon 150
 intimate, king's (king's favourite, *rājavallabha*) 184
 intoxicants, connivance at drinking 121
 intoxicating drinks 122
 intrigue, court 30
 introspection (attitude of meditation with legs closely locked, *dhyānāsana*) 172
 invaders 35
 invading army iv, 34, 35 n. 9
 invasion, Burmese 32, Chinese—, Mongol—iv, 30, 37, 39, 40, 126, 141, Sinhalese—iv, 12
 investigation (*cat*) 88, 100, 101
 investiture 35
ip mhūy (*Lagerstroemia Flos reginae, Pyañma, embrella robusta*) 185
I Poi San 29
iprā (bedding) 107
 iron (*sam*) 159, 185
 ironwood (*kamikaw, sāniwkhūy*) 186
 Irrawaddy 2, 6, 165
 irrigation 9, 35 n. 9, 43, 49
 Irwin, Sir Alfred 7 n. 7, 11 n. 12
I Taimila 182
 itch 73 n. 4
 ivory (*chançway*) 129, 144

J
 Jack fruit tree (*Artocarpus integrifolia, mun, pinnaí*) 186
 jaggery 102, 111
Jambalā 178 n. 5
Jabudipa 38, 61
 jar 15
jat nā rā, nā:chay (five hundred and fifty stories) 65
jat nā ryā (five hundred stories) 65, 130, 131
jātaka iii, 65, 66, 82, 35, 86, 128, *Mahājānaka*—81, 141, 189,—plaque 104
Java 63
Jayabhin 68
Jayabhūmi (Shwezigon, *Thilun Min*) 55
Jayacandraravarman 185
Jayapavattati (*Jeyyapwat*) 20, 21, 24, 100, 120,—inscription 44, 47
Jeyapikrama (*Jeyyapikrami*) 73, 151
Jayaset̄the (*Jeyyasaddhiy*) 21, 22, 72, 118, 154, 155
Jayasiñ 68
Jayasūra, King 11, Prince—19
 jewellery 160
Jottā 146
 judge (*amhu cuiw, khuw sūkri, saiphama, saiphama, tryā, tryā saiphama, tryā sūkri*) 21, 28, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 77, 87-8, 89, 90, 98, 101, 146,—of civil suits (*amhu cuiw*) 42,—of theft cascs (*khuw sūkri*) 42, 90, 124,—of the court (*tryā*) 89, junior—90, woman—42
 judgement 44, 46, 101, 117
 judicial assistant 42
 judiciary 49
 jug (*karā*) 107, 112
 juice, sweet liquor made from palm (*yamimakā aphyaw*) 123
 Julian Calendar 7 n. 7
 junior judge 90,—queen iii, 42
 Junk Ceylon (Cape Salang, *Salañkre*) 4 n. 3
 jurisdiction 101 n. 2, 116
 just king (*dhammarāja*) 30, 78

justice, administration of 8, Pleasant Hall of
—(*Tryā Kwan Sāyā*) 87

K

Kaccakāpatiy 80 n. 7
Kaccāna 80 n. 7
Kaccapakram 101
Kaccāyana 81
Kaccāyanasuttaniddesa 81 n. 8
Kachin 37
Kadu 158
kađun (*kuđuba*, *kudaya*, bamboo measure, measure for arecca seeds) 103, 132, 133, 134
kaempferia, species of (*gamumī*) 179
kakhriy sañ (dancer) 69, 160
Kakusandha 65, 67
Kala, U 190
Kalagya, King 12, 13, 119
kalan (executive officer) 8 n. 4, 39, 40, 41, 121, 176, 183, 184,—*cacsā* (officer cum hereditary chief) 8, 41
Kālañjara 166
kalasā 128, 130, 131, 179, 188
kalm 41
Kalyāñi 6,—inscription 74, 119, 175
kamay (widow) 156
kamikaw (*sāniwhū*, ironwood) 186
kamikuchan (*kamikutamī*, steatite, soapstone pencil) 83, 107,—*kleñ*, cylindrical case for soapstone pencil 83, 107
kamikun (?land officer) 12
kamikut (plumbago) 135, 136
kampoñ (soap acacia) 185
Kāñiram (Kanyan) 157, 158
kan (reservoir, tank) 121, 123, 130, 131,—*2 chai* (two level tank) 130, 132, 4 *thor*—(square tank) 130, 132
kanāprāñ (?out house) 135, 136
Kanistika 168
Kāñkā 88
Kāñkabhatrā 45
Kāñkaphirac 21
Kāñkapikram 64, 118
Kāñkasū 69, 112, 122, 146
kankhyow 185
Kannai 31
Kanñāran 45
Kanplañ 17
kañ sañ (guard) 43
Kantasmin 117
Kāñyā, Goddess 3
Kantū (*Kadu, Saw*) 97, 121, 157
Kanyan (*Kāñram*) 157, 158
Kapilavastu 165
kappa 72, 128
kappikā (*kappiya*, personal attendant) 97, 98, 151
kappiyakṭi (storehouse) 111, 130, 131, 132
karā (jug) 107,—*sañ* (jug maker) 160
Karen 52, 158, Sagaw—(?*Cakrow*) 157,—potato (*sitūy*) 186
Kareni 45
ka sañ (?harness maker) 161
Kassapa 65, 67, 81 n. 2
Katakarmma 8
Kathāvatthu 81 n. 13
kañhina 86, 123,—ceremony 144, —*civara* (hard robe) 15, 97, 105, 106
kati (musk) 185
Kaungsin (*Koñcañ*) 32
Kawari 146
Kawgun caves 175
kawthā 105, 160
kāyabandhanani (girdle) 106 n. 2
keeper, granary (*kicon*) 153
Kelūsa, Mt. 51
kettle (*krā*) 69
keynote of the Buddha's teaching 166
Khabu (*Khamlhū*, *Khamrimhū*) 17, 37, 53
khāchi (waistband) 135, 136
khāñtañ (cot) 69
Khan, Great iv, 33 n. 2, 126
Khangahāla 66
Khandhaka 110
khandhāpyak (*khanthāpyak*, death) 144

Khandhasutta 87 n. 4
Khañminay 19
khaññī (bed-spread) 69, 160
Khao Ok Dalu 178
khapon (Strychnos) 186
kharā (fife) 112,—sañ (trumpeters) 160
kharuin 37, 121 n. 2, 123, *Santon* — 98
Khemawara pagoda 70,—inscription 70
khen (ginger) 186
khin (weigh) 150, 151
khīrhā (*Acanthus illicifolius*) 185
khlyu pan (floral design) 128
Khmer 3, 63, 67,—capital 51,—monarch 51
khoñlor (bell) 69, 140, 141
khraññay sañ (*khrāsañ*, spinner) 106, 160
krinhap 15
khrit (gum-lac) 135, 136
khruykhāñ (inner garment) 105, 160
Khuddakanikāya 80, 82
kuinan:khui.pallañ (a throne of many sides) 174
khuiw, chai (elephant theft) 97,—*sūkri* (judge of theft cases) 42, 90,—*tryā* (criminal court, theft case) 77, 87, 89, 90,—*tryā cākhī* (clerk of the criminal court) 90
khwak (cup usually of copper) 69, 106, 121, 132, 133, 134,—*khwan* (cymbal) 69,—*khwan sañ* (cymbal player) 160
khwan (revenue) 84
Khyatma 146
Khyatsanā 146
khyāyā: (kind of mimusops) 179
khyū (castanet) 69
kidnapping 145, 161
kī sūkri (master of granaries) 42
kilns 128
kind and considerate 154
kindness 154
king v, 4, 23, 24, 27, 28 29, 30, 33, 35, 39, 44, 47, 48, 49, 51, 61, 63, 68, 70, 73, 79, 87, 90, 98, 100, 182, 188, *Alaungsithu* (see also *Cañsū I*) 10, 11, 13, 115 n. 8, *Aniruddha* (*Anawrata*, *Anaw-*

Anawratha, Anawrathaminsaw, Anoratha, Anuruddha) iii, iv, 1, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 13, 35, 36, 37, 38, 51, 52 n. 1, 53, 58, 62, 65, 119, 169, 170, 182, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 189, *Bodawpaya* 16, 80 n. 4, 163, 166, 190, *Cañsū I* (see also *Alaungsithu*) 7 n. 1, 10, 11, 12, 13, 30, 70, 115, 116, 146, 176, 185, 187, *Cañsū II* (see also *Narapatisithu*) iv, 4, 6, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 32, 36, 37, 45, 46, 47, 49, 49, 65, 72, 77, 87, 118, 119, 143, 145, 149, 185, *Cañsū III* (see also *Uccanā*) 29, *Cañsū IV* (see also *Tarukpily*) 29, 30, *Caw kri* (also see *Klacwā*) 22, 23, 27, *Cāw Rahā* 4 n. 6, *Chañ Phlu Skhiñ* 62, *Conac* 35, *Dhammacerī* (Damazedi, *Rāmādhī-pati*) 6, 120, *Harivikrama* 2, *Htilominlo* 13, 20, *Imtawsyāñ* (Kalagya) 12, 13, 19, 119, *Jayasūra* 11, *Klacwā* (see also *Kyaswa*) iv, 13, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 27, 29, 36, 38, 39, 40, 46, 48, 61, 67, 75, 79, 88 n. 3, 91, 96, 100, 108, 120, 125, 126, 150, *Kou - ma-la-kia-chipa-sou-tan-patcho-li* (*Kumāra Kassapa*) 35, *Kumāra Gupta I* 166, *Kyanzittha* (see also *Thiluiñ Mañ*) iv, 4, 8, 10, 13, 15, 39, 41, 51, 57, *Kyaswa* (see also *Klacwā*) iv, 13, *Kyawzwa* (see also *Rhuyansyāñ*) 37, *Mahāsenā* 81 n. 6, *Makuṭa* (see also *Manuha*) 6, 10, 57, *Manululan* (see also *Sawlu*) 7, 8, 10, 12, 13, *Manuha* (*Manoḥa, Manohari*) 6, 10, *Mañyan* (*Min-yin*) iv, 13, 29, 30, *Menander* (*Milinda*) 81 n. 1, *Mindon* 78, *Minyin Naratheinkha* 12, 13, 18, 19, *Nandaungmya* (*Nan:ton:myā*: see also *Nātonīmyā*) iv, 13, 19, 47, *Narapati* 12, *Narapaticañsū* (*Narapatisithu*, see also *Cañsū II*) iv, 4 n. 1, 10, 13, 115 n. 8, *Narasīngha*, *Uccanā* iv, 13, 18, 21, 22, 23, 29, 38, 69, 87, 97, 99, 117, 150, 154, *Naratheinkha* (see also *Minyin Naratheinkha*) iv, 13, *Narathihapate* (see also *Tarukpily*) 13, *Narathu* 12, 13, *Nātonīmyā* (see also *Nandaungmya, Nāton Skhiñ, Uccanā*) iv, 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 36, 40, 41, 44, 46, 47, 70, 72, 87, 88, 110, 111, 117, 120, 122, 148, 149, 150, 184,

Nyaung-u Sawrahan 4 n. 6, *Panpwat Puthuiwtu Dāyakā* (*Panpwat Sañ, Panpwat Sañ Mliy*, see also *Tarukpliy*) 30, 100, *Parākkamabāhu* I 12, Pyinbya (*Prañprā*) 1, 3, *Putasin Mañ* 62, 145, *Rāmādhipati* (see also *Dhammadēti*) 6, 120, *Rāmā Gamhēñ* (Ramkhamheng) 124, *Rhuynansyañ* (see also *Kyawzwa*) 35, 37, 49, *Rhwekū Dāyakā* (see also *Cañsū I*) 11, *Saktawrañ* (see also *Cañsū I*) 11, 12, *Satuw 62*, Sawlu (*Colū*; see also *Mañlulan*) 7, 10, 13, *Sihavikrama* 2, *Siri Aniruddhadeva* (see also *Aniruddha*) 5, *Siridhammasaka* (Asoka) 61, *Sirisin-ghabodhi* 7, *Sri Bajrādharanatribhūpati* (*Sri Vajrābharañ*, regnal title of *Mañlulan*) 7, 170, 183, 187, *Sri Trībhuvanā-dityadhammarāja* (regnal title of *Thiluiñ Mañ*) 8, 15, 16, 54, 55, 70, 78, 115, 183, 187, *Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarājadā-napati* (*Sri Tribhuvanādityapavaradhammarājadhirājadānapati*) regnal title of *Narasingha-Uccanā*) 13, 21, 70, *Sri Tribhuvana ditya dhamma rājā jayasūra* (regnal title of *Uccanā*) 29, *Sri Tribhuvanādityadhammarājarā jādhī rājaparamisvarabalaçakkrāvar* (later regnal title of *Thiluiñ Miñ*) 8, *Sri Tribhuvanāditya-varadhammarāja* (regnal title of *Cansū I*) 11, 183, 187, *Sri Tribhuvanāditya-pavaradhammarāja* (regnal title of *Cañsū II*, *Nātoñmyā* and *Tarukpliy*) 20, 22, 30, 38, 70, 183, 184, *Sri Tribhuvanādityapavaradhammarājā Mañlulan* (regnal title of *Conac*) 35, *Sri Tripahavā-nādityāpavarapāññitadhammarāja* 27, *Sūriyavikrama* 2, *Taktaumū* (see also *Kumara Kassapa*) 35, *Talasūkri* (see also *Conac*) 35, *Talapyamī Mañ* (see also *Uccanā*) 29, 30, 100, *Taningeraw* iii, *Tarukpliy* (Tayokpye, Narathihapate, *Panpwat sañ mliy*, *Cañsū IV*) iv, 13, 21, 22, 29, 30, 35, 36, 38, 39, 42, 47, 48, 72, 73, 74, 78, 80, 87, 92, 97, 100, 119, 122, 126, 144, 146, 158, *Taungthugyi* 4 n. 6, *Thaktawshe* (see also *Cañsū I*) iii, *Thamoddarit* 1, *Thibaw* 38, *Thiluiñ Mañ* (*Thiluiñ Syañ*, see also *Kyan-zittha*) 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 12, 13, 36, 41, 52, 54, 58, 61, 65, 67, 70, 77, 78, 79, 87, 115, 116, 149, 170, 176, 178, 183, 187, 188, 189, *Uccanā* (see also *Cañsū III*) iv, 13, 22, 29, 30, 69, 96, 100, 118, 132, 144, *Uccanā* (see also *Nātoñmyā*) 20, 110, *Uccanā* (see also *Tarukpliy*) 30, 38, *Vijaya Bāhu* 1, *Yama* 61, assassination of the—iv, 12, 29, Buddhist—54, companions of the—(*mai khyai*) 41, crowned—30, dethroned—(*nankla mañ*) 35, eulogy of the—54, fictitious—12, great—(*asyan mañkri*) 95, just—(*dhammarāja, tryāmañ*) 30, 78, Mon—57, orders of the—(*thuytaw*) 42, Pagan—12, 20, 47, 187, poisoning the—34, *Pyu*—2, reigning—(*purhā rhañ taw*) 70, servants of the—(*manice*) 42, super celestial—68, supreme—(*mañkri*) 4, *Taruk*—4, 34, traveller—12, youths of the—(*mañlulan*) 42,—and country 126,—of Ceylon 7,—of Deva 15,—of Pagan 7, 10, 13, 30, 32, 35, 38, 183,—of Burma 39, 126,—of Thaton 115,—of Law 3,—Protector 78

king's accession 117,—audience 150,—favourite (*rājavallabha, aklwāñ wāñ so mañ amar*) 44, 184,—preceptor (*mañchryā*) 96, 184,—presence 31, 39,—teacher (*mañchryā, rājaguru*) 110, 115, 116, 117, 119, 120,—whitlow 17

kingdom 10, 24, 33, 34, 49, 190, *Pagan*—2, *Pyu*—52

kingly duties 30

kingship 38

kirttimukha 179

kitchen garden (*kuiñ*) 158

Klacwā, King iv; 13, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 27, 29, 36, 38, 39, 40, 46, 48, 61, 67, 75, 79, 88 n. 3, 91, 96, 97, 100, 108, 120, 125, 126, 150

klañjū (benevolence) 92

Klaw Sañ, Uiw, (Lady Gloria) 15

kleñphūrūm (*benincasa cerifera*, white gourd-melon) 185

klipyan 185

klipwe (pestle) 107

klit (*Coix la chrymae jobis*) 185

kliy sūkrī (headman of the suburb) 42
klok (lithic) 54, 110, 130, 131,—*cā* (stone inscription) 155,—*pyān* (grinding stone) 107, *tatuīn* — (monolith) 135, 136,—*ut* (stone brick) 135, 136
Klok Sayon 116
kloī (monastery) 92, 102, 104, 106, 107, 129, 130, 131, 132, 135, 140, 144, *calac* —(monastery with flame pediments) 133, 134, *Cane Satañsañ*—(monastery that keeps sabbath on Saturdays) 109, *cāsañ* —(educational institute) 83, 118, *kulā*—(brick monastery) 80, 108, 129, 130, 133, 134, *mvañ khoñ ta cwan*—(high roofed monastery) 107-8, 129, *panpu* —(monastery with wood carvings) 129, *purhā* —(monastery for the Lord) 108 n. 5, *sac nay muīw* —(thatch roofed monastery) 129, *sāyā cwā so* —(Pleasant Monastery) 108, *tañtay cwā so* —(Splendid Monastery) 108, *taw*—(forest monastery) 108, 120, *tryā* —(monastery for the Law) 108 n. 5, —*akluiw* (merit of founding a monastery) 109,—*kywan* (slaves of a monastery) 146,—*prok* (Variegated Monastery) 129,—*sañ* (lay devotee staying at a monastery) 97, 98,—*sankri* (chief of a monastery) 43,—*tāyakā* (donor of a monastery) 108
klum (to remove) 156
klway thin (buffalo-herd) 158
klyam (board) 44
klyap (tical) 130, 131, 132, 135
knowledge (*prañā*) 108
kok si (crop) 87-8
Konāgamana 65, 67
Konbaung 163,—dynasty 116
Koican (Kaungsin) 37, 40, 49, viceroy of— 24
koñi mhu (act of merit) 60, 71, 131, 132
Konow, Sten 4
Kotuma (*Gotuma*) 34
Kou-ma-la-kia-chipa-son-tan-pa-tcho-li, King (Kumāra Kassapa) 35
krā (kettle) 69, (lotus, *nymphæa*) 107, 185
krakkrūn (a kind of coffeewort) 185
kra, klū (the chebula tree, *Terminalia chebula*) 185
kram (sugar cane) 185
Kramimaphat 21
kramū (areca palm) 150
Kramisuiñkri, Prince 19
Kramitū 34, 126,—*Nim* 100
Krañcañ 118, 151
krāpallañ (*Padmāsana*, Lotus Throne) 169
Krāpuiw 17
Krāsawat 97
kri swat ui: (*kalasā*) 179
Kriy:sai Lethap Charātoau 163
kriy (copper) 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 140, 141,—*khrañ* (copper wire) 130, 131,—*nī* (red copper) 130, 131, *na* *krāñ-phlū* (white copper) 151
Kron Singhā 23
Krontau sañ 18
krwac (casket) 130, 131
Krwam (Cambodian) 48, 157,—*Skhiñ* 109,—*thui* 51
kū (*guha*, cave, hollow-pagoda) 11 n. 10, 21, 108, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 140, 146,—4 *myaknhā* 84, 102, 128,—*prok* (variegated cave) 128
Kublai Khan 4
kuhā sañ (launderers) 69, 161
kuiñ (kitchen garden) 158
kuiwat (*uttarāsañgo*) upper garment 105 n. 1,
kuiwlup (slave wife) 156
kuiwmhu (body-guard) 40
kuiw ryap tuñ purhā (standing Buddha made to the measurements of the donor) 64, 67, 68.
kulā kloñ (brick monastery, see also *kloñ*) 80, 107, 108, 129, 130, 133, 134, 135, 137
Kulā Nat (The Indian Deity) 57
kulapāy (cicer arietinum) 185
Kulāphlū (White Indian) 157
Kumāra Gupta I, King 166
Kumāra Kassapa, King (Kou-ma-la-kia-chipa-sou-tan-pa-tcho-li) 35

Kume 122
kumītham (landed gentry or supervisor of fiefs) 43, 49, 161
 Kusinagara 165
 Kutha pagoda 74
kwamī (*kramū*, areca, betel,) 101, 104, 131, 132, 155, 185,—*ac* (betel container) 103,—*cā tuik* 104,—*kap* (betel box) 103,—*khyāmī* (betel seed cracker) 103,—*khyap* (betel receptacle) 69, 103,—*lonī* (betel boat) 103,—*macā* (don't eat betel) 103,—*mwan raw sañ* (royal betel server) 159,—*rwā* (betel village) 104,—*sañ* (betel server) 69, 159,—*sz* (areca seeds) 103, 132, 133, 134, 135, 137,—*sitañ* 159,—*taw sañ* (royal betel server) 159,—*thon* (*sikhara*, pinnacle) 169,—*yā* (betel quid) 159
kwan (hall) 47, *cañkray* — (Pure Hall) 48, 49, *chañ rhu* — (Elephant-Review Hall) 48, *tryā-sāyā* (Pleasant Hall of Justice) 87,—*mañi* (High Hall) 48, 49,—*prok* (Variegated Hall) 48,—*prok kri* (Great Variegated Hall) 48, 100,—*prok nay* (Small Variegated Hall) 23, 48, 150,—*sāyā* (Pleasant Hall) 48
kwan sañ (net man, fisherman) 159
Kyāk Talañ pagoda 9 n. 2
kyaktañiuw (?Sun God, coloured ceiling decoration) 107, 130, 131, 135, 136
 Kyanzittha, King (see also *Thiluñ Mañ*) iv, 4, 8, 10, 13, 15, 39, 41, 51, 57
 Kyazwa, King (see also *Klacwā*) iv, 13
 Kyaukgu Onhmin 155
 Kyaukse 35 n. 9, 37, 43, 53, 54, 62, 121, 122, 123, 124,—district 98 n. 1, 110,—hills 53
 Kyaw Thet 78 n. 4
 Kyawzwa, King (see also *Rhuyuansyai*) 37
kyek (pagoda or an-exalted person) 64
 Kyontu 184
kywan (slave) 84, 140, 141, 143, 144, 146, 147, 148, 154, 156, 158, *amuy*—(inherited slave) 146, *atuiw*—(referring oneself as 'Your Honour's Slave') 108, 149, *im*—(*im thon*—, *im niy*, domestic help)

108, 156, *kloñ*—(monastery slave) 146, *samput khyak*—(wat *khyak*—, slaves to cook food at a religious establishment) 101, 155,—*aphuiw* (price of a slave) 151,—*rwā* (slave village) 146,—*taw* (*mañ im kri sañ*, slaves of the royal household) 156

L

labour 148, farm—99, menial—93
 lacquer ware 107
 lady and child 178
 lady-in-waiting (*moñima*) 73
Lagestroemia flos regiae (*ipmhūy*, *pyañma*, *embrella robusta*) 185
 laity 100
lak choñ (present) 79, *Sampyan*—108
 lake 98
lakkha (wage) 135, 136, 151
Lakkhanā Lakway 40, 117
Lakkhiyapura (near Dala) 175
lakpamī (*bombax malabasicum*) 17, 83
 lamp, oil (*chimī*) 15
laksamā (carpenter) 135, 137, 156, 159
laksañ (midwife) 161
laksañthuiw (manicurist) 161
lakthut (*wrightia tomentosa*) 186
lalitāsana (one leg pendant, sitting at ease) 172, 173
lāñ (husband) 125, 147, 154,—*miyā sācumī* (family) 145
Lāñ Yan Len 183, 187
 land (*mliy*) 103, 117, 124, 125, 145, 158, arable—54, Buddhist—165, buying—39, 97, 98, 100, 121, confiscation of, religious—23, 24, 87, 120, cultivable—102, 118, 190, dedication of—12, 13, 17, 18, 23, 39, 44, 45, 48, 49, 59, 62, 75, 83, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 108, 109, 111, 118, 119, 120, 122, 126, 127, 144, 153, 190, dry cultivation—(*ryā*) 89, encroachment of—101, gift of—121, 123, glebe—24, 47, 100, grant of—141, guide for measuring—163, lord of—38, 39, 73, monastery—87, ownership

of—87, 89, 123, paddy—23, 44, price of—(*mliy phuiw*) 45, 121, 122, produce of the—45, 46, 153, purchase of—98, 121, 122, 123, religions—22, 30, 39, 47, 48, rice—43, sale of—43, slaves attached to—152, —assessment 49,—dispute 23, 89, 123,—of conquest (*nuiñnam*) 4,—of copper (*Tambadipa*) 3-4,—officer (*Tuin Sūkri*) 89,—revenue (*mliy khwan*) 47, — transaction 43, 45, 98, 121, 125

landed gentry (*lakamkuh, kumitham*) 43, 49,—interest 123

language 15, 16, 52, 63, 77, Burmese—53, Mon—6, 8, 10, 36, 54, 189, official—iii, iv, 10, 36,—policy 10

Lañkā (Ceylon, *Sinkuih*) 12, 118

lañpan (tray) 69, 107, 135, 136,—*sañ* (tray maker) 160

lapses in the observance of the *Vinaya* 120, 124, 126

launderer (*kuhāsañ*) 69

lavatory 141 n. 1

Law (*tryā*) 49, 55, 58, 75, 77, 141, 156, administer—(*tryā chāñ*) 90, all applications of—77,—and order 29, 46, Indian—book 49, Buddhist—78, charioteer of the—54, 115, civil and criminal—87, code of—(*dhammasattha*) 78 codification of the customary—88 n. 4, cruel—161, customary—iv, 49, depository of the—141, hall of—(*dhammasā, tryā im, tryā klorā*) 85, 90, 96, moral—77, religious—77,—case 90,—court 87, 97, 101,—giver 40, 90,—of impermanence (*atañ may so tryā*) 77,—of succession 23,—of the Buddha 77,—of the Religion 9,—officer (*tryā*) 90,—suit 13, 20, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 49, 77, 87, 88, 89, 90, 100, 146, 148, three heaps of—(*Pitaka Sum Pum*) 130, 132, throne of—97, wheel of—171, 178

lawkā sūkri (coxswain) 88

Lawkananda pagoda 67

laxity in the observance of the *Vinaya* 82

lay (field) 77, 84, 105 n. 10, 154, *muryāñ*—(dry cultivation) 158, *sampūt*—101, *sañ*—(wet cultivation) 158, *wat*—101,—*coñ* 158,—*sañ* (—*sū*, cultivator) 158

lay court 117,—devotee 117, 121, 141,—man 100, monk called by—name 125

Laydaunggan inscription 17

Laymyakhna inscription 22,—pagoda 20

ibhak (pickled tea) 4, 44-5

leader 57,—and founder of *Arañ* (forest dwellers) 122, 125,—of the group 153,—of the mission 119

leadership 120

leaf, fig 168, palm—(*piyā*) 44

learning (*pariyatti*) 82-3, 96, 118,—by rote 90, seat of—118

lecture hall 111, 118

leg pendant, one (sitting at ease, *lalitāsana*) 172

legs closely locked (*dhyānāsana*, meditation, introspection) 172

legs pendant (*bhadrāsana*) 172

legal 77, 90,—authority 101,—cases 42,—code 42,—enquiry 12,—literature 88 n. 4

legend 124 n. 6, Burmese—86, local—iii, Mon—189

lent (*wā*) 33, 84, 105, 110

lesser queen 149

lesson, moral 85

letter 166, *Nāgari* —169, 185

Lhaknakkbram chryā 117

lhañ (sweep) 155,—*kha* (cartage) 32, 33, 133, 134, 135, 136,—*sañ* (cartman) 161

lhoaukā: (boat) 86,—*sañ* (boatman) 16

lhīy (boat) 106

lhū (charity) 144, 146

lhwat (released from secu¹ ² ness) 140, 141, 154

lhyā 104

liaison officer 97

libation, water of 48, 154

liberal mindedness 153

library (*pitaka tuik*) 78, 79, 80, 81 n. 3, 82, 83, 84, 90, 96, 97, 118, 127, 130, 132, Rangoon University—9 n. 2,—main-

tenance 118,—staff 118

liege lord (*asyāi manikri*) 95

life, communal 120, daily—60, eight major scenes of the Buddha's—(*atthamahā-ṭhāna*) 176, 177, miseries of—61, 75, social—143, way of—155,—of the Buddha 61, 165,—stories 165

life and death, lord of 39

life and thought, influence of Buddhism on Burmese way of 143

light (*chīmī*) 101

lighting, oil for 83

lime (*sarīparā*) 186

limit of the empire 32,—of a *sīma* 111

lin (smear) 132, 133, 135, 136, 140, 141

line, *Aniruddha* 13

linen (*phyañ*) 47, 67

Ling wai tai ta 2

lin̄gam 57

lintuiñ (phallic stone) 57

lion 174,—throne (*simhāsana*) 174,—type 169

lips, smiling 169

liquor (*se, siy*) 121, 122, 123, meat and—45, pots of—(*siy uiw khak*) 121, price of—(*siy phuiw*) 45, 121, sweet—(*yanimakā aphyaw*) 102, 123

List 73 inscription 10, chronological—of inscriptions 191,—of slaves 125, 145, 153, 154, 156, 157,—of witnesses 116, 119 n. 5

literacy among slaves 157

literate 143, 162

literature 163, legal—88 n. 4

lithic inscription 189, 190

litter (*sanlyari*) 55

lives, anterior 66, 82

livelihood 162

living deity 68, 75

liymyaknha (four directions) 99, chief of—130, 131

loan word 91

lobha (greed) 143

local administration 49,—chief 2, 4, 8, 37,—legend iii

locality 43, 116, 152, 161

lodge, hunting 30

lodging (*senāsanām*) 107

loincloth (*puchuiw*) 47, 84, 106, 135, 139

Lokanāthā 170

Lolo 63

Lomngoeu, inscription 3

lonely monk 120

Long Life (*Saktawrhañ*) iii

Long Navel Cord (*Khyaktawrhañ*) iii

longevity 59

Lopburi 41

lord (*purhā*) 58, 75, 77, 83, 141, ecclesiastical—63, image of the—123, 128, 170, liege—(*asyāi manikri*) 95, most excellent and omniscient—27, temporal—63, picture of the lord (*chanipu*) 128,—of life and death 39, — of oxen 58,—of the cows 58,—of the sun 58,—of the rāys 58,—s attainment of nirvana 2

loss of revenue 39, 101

lot of the slaves 152

lotus (*ki, ā*) 107, 174, 179, blue—(*ut pala*) 179,—bud 169,—flower 172,—seat 169, —throne (*Padmāsana, Krā Pallāñ*) 5, 169, 178

Lo-tz'u 33 n. 1

love affair 9

loving couple (*anhac lan mayā, moñ nhami*) 148

lower Burma iii, iv, 2, 5, 20, 30, 46, 51, 149, British annexation of—190, conquest of—62, 115

lower court (*buih tryā*) 87, 90

lū (mankind) 113,—*thwak* (ex-monk) 96

Luce, G. H. 3, 16, 41, 45, 51, 53, 57, 58, 64, 77, 103, 141 n. 1, 143, 160, 191

lumi 132

lumila (endeavour) 148

lumpani 125

lunar mansion 120

lup kluy (*lup klway*) minister) 99, 104, 144, 153, 155

-luxury goods 145
lyac (fled) 149
lyok (eaves-boards, pieces supporting the rafters) 107, 135, 136

M

Macchakiri (Chin Hills) 4, 37
madhu (honey) 104 n. 8
Madhurarasavāhini vitthu 86 n. 2
magic, havoc wrought through (*chiy plu cā*) 89
magic horse 51
mango (*siryak*) 186
Magwe 125
Mahābodhi 64, 169
Mahābodhivarisa 1
mahādāna 23
mahādevī (chief queen) 182, 183
Mahādew 54
Mahadhi inscription 17, 18
Mahāgovinda jātaka 65
Mahājanaka jātaka (No. 539) ? 65, 81
Mahākāli 166
mahākāruṇika mudrā (attitude of compassion) 172
Mahākassapa 1, 31, 44, 45, 72, 91, 97, 98, 121, 122, 123, 125, death of—123
Mahāmatimā the 100
Mahānāma therā 66
Mahānāradakassapa 66
mahā parinirvāṇa (Great Decease) 172, 177
mahā parittam (*parit-kri*:—major verses of the recital to ward off evil) 86
Mahāpinnai (*Mahāvināyaka*, *Gaṇeśa*) 57
Mahāpuiw 33, 34
Mahārāja 33, 34
Mahārāja *Sri Aniruddhadeva* 4
Māhāsamanta (*Mahāsamāna*, *Mahāsman*, Viceroy) 20, 21, 23, 24, 40, 41, 44, 47, 89, 99, 122, 155
Mahāsatti 20
Mahāsena, King 81 n. 6
Mahāsenāpati (commander-in-chief) 20, 40
mahāthera 8, 17, 33, 34, 47, 48, 49, 54, 55, 57, 67, 86, 95, 96, 98, 100, 110, 115, 116, 117, 119 n. 5, 145, 176

Mahātherā Parīsakū 12
Mahāthera *ṭīkā* 81
Mahāthūpa 81 n. 4
Mahāumagga jātaka (No. 546) 66
Mahāvagga 80 n. 5, 110
Mahāvarīsa (*Mahāwani*) 81, 86 n. 2, 119
Mahāvāraṇa 81
Mahāvimalabuddhi 81 n. 9
Mahāvināyaka (*Mahāpinnai*, *Gaṇeśa*) 57
Mahāway 21
Mahāyāna 170, 188,—deities 183
mahesi (*mahādevi*, chief queen) 183, 188
mahiṣasuramardini 166
mahout (*chañthin*) 89
Mahtaw village 178 n. 5
maintainance of religious edifices 59, 109, 118, 127
Maitreya 5, 60, 61, 62, 65, 71, 73, 85, 86, 92, 170, 178, 187
Majjhima Nikāya 29, 46, 80
Major Scenes of the Buddha's Life, Eight (*Atṭhamahāṭhāna*) 176, 177
makara (an alligator) 169, 178, 179, 183
maker, palm leaf (*piyasmā*) 148
Makkarā 37
Makuta, King 6, 10, 57
Mālañ (*Māleyya*, *Malaya* *Mahādeva* *Thera*, *Shin Māle*) 85, 86
Male (*Malay*) 35
malefactors, edict against all 24
male slaves 150
man (king) 4, 37, 41, 78, 110, 147,—*ce* (servants of the king) 42,—*chryā* (king's preceptor) 96, 110, 116, 117, 119 n. 5
man, free 151
Man rebels 2
mandala 168
Mangalasutta 87 n. 4
manhood 74
Mani 146
manimkri sañ (slave of the royal household) 156

Manisak slave 152
Mañkalapāññ 100,
Mañkulapicāñ 89
mahākārupika mudrā (attitude of compassion) 171
man khyāñ (companions of the king) 41
Mañki 146
mankind 73, 143
mañiklāñ (tamarind) 186
mañkrī (supreme lord) 4, 16, 18, 21, 35, 37, 41, 95, 110, 125, 155
Mañlha, Princess 122
mañlulāñ (youths of the king) 42
Mañlulañ, King 7, 8, 10, 12, 13
mañ mat (king's minister) 140, 141
mañ mayā (concubine) 155
mañ myā moñ (king's brother-in-law) 68
Manoha, King 6 n. 4
Manoharī, King 6
Manorāja 40, 41, 90
mañ:pay (land measure) 163
mañ phathuy (king's uncle) 20
man, rich 154, right-hand—115
mañsā (king's son) 30, 111, 125
mansion 109, lunar—120
mañtūryā (*tryāmañ*, just king) 78, 90
Manu 40, 90
manual for punishments (*amūñwan cā*) 46
Manuhā, King 6, 10
Manukay Dhammasat 163
Manurāja 40, 90
manuscript 83, gold-leaf—52, 53, 189
Mañyan, King (Minyin) iv, 13, 29, 30
Minyin Naratheinhkha, King 13
Mapañcara 17
Māra 112, 171, —'s attack 176
Marañan sañ (Queen of *Cañsū* II) 18
Māraphai (partition) 138, 139
marble 144
marches, northern 49
Marhak 151, —sañ *Nā Sok Sañ* 12
Marshall, Sir John 1
Maru 63
masā (sick) 77
masiy prañ (city of no death) 112
mason (*purāñ*) 69, 135, 138
masonry squares 163
massive chest 169
master 92, 125, 149, 153, 161,—architect 137,—of ganaries (*ki sūkri*) 42
mat (*amatya*, minister) 140, 141
mat (*sañiplū*) 106
material 165, building—138, 159-60, writing —83, 102
Mathiluiw 61
mathunsarā (grapes) 186
mayā (*miyā*, *myā*, wife) 146, 148, 149,—*kri* (senior wife) 146,—*nay* (lesser wife) 146
Māyā, dream of 177
Mayangon 9 n. 2
May Khray 183
May Pā 183
Mandalay 163
may sañ (butcher) 159
meagre evidence 123
meal for monks, evening 124
means of transport 106
measure, guide for land 163,—for areca seeds (*kañun*) 103,—for oil (*tanak*) 102
meat 122, 123, 159, price of—(*sāphuiw*) 45, 121, meat and liquor 45
meddling in politics, Buddhist monks 126
medical treatment 104
medicine (*bhesajjam*, *chiywā*, *smā*) 41, 104, five standard—104
medieval Burma 50, 158, 161,—Burmese history iii,—Burmese inscriptions 143, —times 49, 143
meditate 103
meditation (*dhyāñāsana*, introspection, legs closely locked) 85, 141, 172, attitude of —(*dhyāñāmudrā*, *samādhi mudrā*) 171
medium of exchange 151
Meiktila 5
Mekkaya 35
men and *deva* 73
Menander, King (Milinda) 81 n. 1

members of the Burma Parliament 155 n. 3,
—of the Order 153

mendicant, Buddhist 58

menial labour 93,—service 143

merchant 12

merciful owner 152

Mergui 7, 165

merit (*akluiw*) 59, 60, 71, 75, 93, 108, 109,
148, 165, a person of great—(*bhun:krī*)
94, act of—117, deeds of—20, 119, 123,
possessor of—(*phunsañ*) 94, sharing the
—13, 15, 16, 22, work of—16, 83,—of
giving alms 141

meritorious act 166,—deed 10, 21, 32, 47,
48, 49, 54, 61, 62, 73, 108, 144

metals and stones, precious 160.

Metta sutta 11, 87 n. 4

Metteyya (*Maitreya*) 81, 86

Mhannan: Rājawayā 116

mhānrwāñ 186

mhura 156

mica-schist (Webu Stone) 190

Michelia champaca (*cāmkhā*, champac) 186

Midwedaw inscription 17

Mijjhimanikāya 85 n. 9

mikā, tantuiñ (an open space around the
enclosure wall) 127

mikhat (flint) 106

milch cow (*nuiw ñhat nwā ma*) 99

Milinda, King (Menander) 81 n. 1,—*Pañña*
29, 46, 80 n. 1, 81

military iv,—campaign 40,—duty 32, 40,
49,—prowess 35,—service 40

milk, butter (*ryaktak*) 99, fresh—(*nuiw sac*)
99, sour—(*nuiw thamim*) 99,—rice 176

millet 102

mi mi kuiw cā (on my behalf) 155

mimusōps, kind of (*khyayā*) 179

Minbu, 5, 123, 178 n. 5

minedness, liberal 153

Mindon, King 78

Mingalizedi (*Panpwat rap cetī*, Pagoda at
Turner's Quarter) 65, 126

miniature pagoda 129,—stupa 144

minister (*amatyā*) iv, 20, 21, 31, 32, 34, 39,
47, 48, 49, 70, 78, 79, 80, 84, 87, 91,
96, 99, 112, 117, 118, 122, 130, 143,
144, 145, 148, 149, 150, 151, 153, 154,
155, 177, 183, 184, 188, chief—(*amat*
krī) iv, 24, 39-40, 41, 47, 49, 100

Minnanthu (*Āmanā*) 20, 31, 73, 78, 120,
122, 124, 130, 131, 132

Minwaing 122,—inscription 22, 23

Minyin Naratheinkha, King 12, 18, 19

mipurhā (queen) 63

miracle at *Srāvasti* (*yamakāprātihārya*)
174, 175, 176, 177

Mirmā (Burman) 9

miscellaneous 158,—gift 126

misery 71, 187,—of hell 109,—of life 61, 75,
—of rebirth 73

mission 51, educational—24, leader of the
—119, peace—iv, 32, peace—(1285) 31,
50,—to Bodh Gaya 9,—to Ceylon 7,
119, 120, 126,—to Peking 126

mithuy (mother's younger sister) 146

Mitti 146

Mittrabicañ 110

mixed ceremony 55

miya (*mayā*, *myā*, wife) 143, 144

miyama (woman) 146

mlac ok (*mlacphlañ*, north) 17

Mlacphlañ sañ (Queen of *Cañsū* II) 16, 17

Mlaçsā 37, 98 n. 7, 121

mlat cwā so (most exalted) 95,—*purhā* 63,
64

mlat krī (Reverend) 95, 96, 151,—*cwā*
(Most Reverend) 95, 103, *taw*—(Rever-
end Forest Dweller) 91

mlat so (exalted) 95

mliy (land) 158, (grandchild) 143,—*phlū* (chalk)
83, 107, 135, 136,—*phuiw* (price of land)
121,—*tañkup* (earth pavilion) 155

mlok (*mlac ok*, north) 17

mloñ mliy sañ (?canal digger) 161

modernisation of spelling 190, 192

modern times 162

Moggallāna 58, 92

moha (bewilderment) 143

Molañā 20, 46

molasses (*phāñita, tarñglay*) 104, 138

moment, auspicious 49

momentos 165

Mon (*Rmeñ, Tanluiñ*) iv, 3, 6, 7, 9, 15, 17
n. 3, 20, 41, 53, 54, 61, 62, 64, 65, 77,
88 n. 4, 91, 93, 94, 95, 143, 158, 177,—
Burmese script 176, 184, 185,—civilization 6, 53,—country 9,—culture iii, 6,
7,—influence iv, 15, 20, 58,—inscription
15, 78, 110, 116, 189, 190, 191,—king
57,—land 53,—language 6, 8, 10, 36,
54, 189,—legend 189,—notables 9,—
period 7, 15, 36, 54,—prince 10,—
rebellion 10, 30,—records 58,—type 6,
16,—word 57, old—149, patron of the
—s 58

Mon Keh Soau 183, 185

Mon Khat 183

Mon Utñ 183

monarch, absolute 38, Khmer—51

monarchy, Burmese 38, Pagan—iii, 37

monastery (*kloñ*) 15, 16, 23, 31, 32, 33, 34,
43, 45, 46, 61, 73, 78, 79, 80, 83, 84,
90, 91, 92, 93, 96, 97, 98, 100, 101, 102,
103, 104, 107, 110, 111, 113, 116, 118,
121, 122, 125, 127, 128, 129, 130, 132,
135, 138, 140, 141, 144, 146, 153, 166,
brick—(*kulā kloñ*) 80, 97, 107, 108,
129, construction of—108, dedicated to
a—155, donor of a—(*kloñ tāyakā*) 108,
forest—(*āraññavāsi, taw kloñ*) 24, 100,
108, 120, 124, head of the—45, 46,
117, 156, high roofed—(*mwañ khon ta
cwan kloñ*) 107-8, 129, ruined—156,
sandalwood—2, spired—97, 103, thatch
roofed—(*sac nay muiv kloñ*) 129, type
of—109, variegated—(*kloñ prok*) 129,
—slave (*kloñ kywan*) 99, 146, 162,—
with woodcarvings (*panpu kloñ*) 129

monastic cattle 111,—compound 111,—
education 90,—establishment 78, 80,
82, 85, 109, 111, 117, 118, 119, 120,
159,—land 87,—order v,—property 88,
—robe (*sañkan*) 15, 69

money 98, dedication of—127, handling of
100 n. 5

Mongmit 5, 6, 189

Mongol 31, 32, 35, 36, 43,—capital (*Taytu*)
50,—forces 126,—invasion iv, 30, 37,
39, 40, 126, 141,—suzerainty 35,—Chi-
nese influence 53

monk (*rahan sañghā*) iv, 7, 20, 23, 24, 33,
34, 39, 43, 48, 50, 57, 61, 63, 72, 77,
82, 84, 87, 88, 90, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96,
99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 105, 107, 108,
109, 112, 113, 115, 117, 118, 119, 120,
121, 125, 126, 128, 141, 148, 182,
Buddhist—94, cattle of the—s (*sañghī-
ka nwā*) 99, chapter of five—s 105,
chief—(*sañghā thera, sañkri*) 43, 45,
56, 57, 87, 111, 141, curse on the—s
109, 110, dispute among—s 117, even-
ing meal for—s 124, fermented spirits
for—s 124, forest—(*arañ, āraññika, sañ-
arañ, taw mlat kri*) 94, 101, four figures
of standing—s 168, four necessities of
—s 9, fund of the—s (*sañghika uccā*)
98, junior—(*sañlyani*) 94, lonely—120,
orthodox—124, purchase of land by—s
121, quarrel between—s 101, requisites
of a—97, reverend—91, senior—(*sañ-
kri, thera*) 84, 93, 94, 96, 100, 110, 117,
183, shed for—s 144, *Taluin*—46,—s
and nuns 162,—as a village headman
100,—called by lay name 125,—meddling
in politics 126.—s participating
in a 'liquor and meat' feast 45,—who
was once married (*taw thwak*) 96

monkhood 93

moñima (lady-in-waiting) 19, 72, 110, 143,
144

moñinhami (loving couple) 148

monsoon 33, 34

monument, sepulchral (*cetiya*) 165

Monywa 120, 122

moon 178, 179

moral law 77,—lesson 85

Morasutta 87 n. 4

Morinda citrifolia (*angustifolia, rāyriw*) 186

mortar (*chun*) 107

mother 152, royal—149

motif, decorative 184, 188

mould 165, 166, 176
 Moulmein 9 n. 2
 mound, circular 168
 mourning disciples 177
 Mountain, Poison (*Chiptoñ*) 43, 98
 mounted couriers (*mrañci*) 42, 49
 movement, Burmanization 15, 36, religious purification—24
Mrañsauñ (Queen of *Cañsü* II) 17, 19, 20
mrañuriykrañ (tender grass and clear water) 154
mrañra 156
mrañi (horse) 135, 137
mrañci (mounted courier) 42
Mrañkhuntuiñ 37
Mrañki 147
mrañ sükri (calvary officer) 42
mri (debt) 148, 149
Mroñ, Sañthway (Thindwe canal) 35 n. 9, 43
mruñ sükri (fort commandant) 42
 Mt. *Kelasa* 51
muchui rip (barber) 69, 161
muchuiw (hunter) 42, 159
Muchuiwpuñ 116
 mudar plant (*muriw*) 186
mudrā (hand position) 170, 172, 174, 188, *bhūmisparśa*—(earth touching) 5, 6, 7, 168, *dharmacakra*—(turning the wheel of law) 67, *vyākhyāna*—(argumentative) 67
Mügapakkha 66
Muggaliputta 183
muk (archway, gateway) 127, 135, 136
Mukhamattadī pani 81 n. 9
 multiple roofs 132
 multitude (*sañghā*) 91
mun (*Artocarpus integrifolia*, Jack fruit tree, *pinmai*) 186
Munalon 157
munñañ (black mustard, *Braisia nigra*) 186
Munton, *Skhiñ* 45, 46
muriw (mudar plant) 186
muryañ lay (dry cultivation) 158

Museum, Hamburg Ethnographical 66 n. 6, Pagan—184
 music 68, 69, 71, playing instrumental—(*vādita*) 93
 musical course 93,—entertainment 99, 160, —instrument 160
 musician 68, 93, 143, 153, 158, 160
 musk (*katiw*) 185
 mustard, black (*Braisia nigra, munñañ*) 186
mwankhoñ ta cwañ klori (high roofed monastery) 129
 Myagan inscription 8, 9, 79
myakkhat (broom) 106, (gem-studded) 69
Myak Mañ (Black Eyes) 150
 Myatheindan pagoda 9 n. 2
 Mya, Thiripyanchi U 165, 169, 174, 177, 178, 179, 182, 184, 185
 Miracle, Great 178
 Myazedi inscription 7 n. 1
 Myinggaing 124
 Myingyan 123
 Myinkaba 176, 185
 Myinmu 120, 122
 Myinpan 124
 Myinsaing 35
 Myitnge 53
 myrobalan (*sacchim, Terminalia bellerica*) 186
 myself (*atuñw kywan*) 149
 myth 51
 mythical hero 8

N

Na Cañ Cim Sañ 45
Na Cañ Kray Sañ 87, 88
Na Can Sañ 117, 123
Na Canti 121
Na Chañ Sañ 45
Na Chū 68
Na Chūñ 182
Na Cuik Sañ 101, 123
Na Cway Sañ 143, 144
Na Gan Dā 53
Na Gón 182, 183

Nā Khan Pha 121
 Nā Khyām Sañ 110
 Nā Khyām 150
 Nā Khyāt Phuy 69
 Nā Khyat Sañ 150, 152
 Nā Kon 151
 Nā Kon Rhañ Sañ 68
 Nā Kon Sañ 147
 Nā Kram Lhok Sañ 144
 Nā Kram Sañ 121
 Nā Kroñ Sañ 97
 Nā Kri 143, 144
 Nā Kruiw Cā 89
 Nā Kumkay 151
 Nā Lak Cway Sañ 89
 Nā Lap Sañ 87
 Nā Lat 82
 Nā Luiñ Sañ 121
 Nā Lwoy 54
 Nā Lyon 158
 Nā Mañ Kri 89
 Nā Mañ Sañ 147
 Nā Mlat Khac 91
 Nā Mlök Sañ 147
 Nā Mrik 54
 Nā Mwah 87, 88
 Nā Myan Sañ 97
 Nā Nantā 146
 Nā Nattaw 146
 Nā Nōñ Sañ 118
 Nā Nuiw Sañ 68
 Nā On 151
 Nā On Cañ 151
 Nā Pa Nay 46
 Nā Pay Pwan 182
 Nā Phlu 146
 Nā Phun Rok Sañ 46
 Nā Phway Sañ 44
 Nā Puik Sañ 154
 Nā Pu Tat 48
 Nā Rac 44
 Nā Rakhuiñ 157
 Nā Rok Lway Sañ 46
 Nā Rok Sañ 98
 Nā Rok Ú 88
 Nā Sok Sañ 12
 Nā Surim Sañ Chryā 117
 Nā Tañ, Sañ 148
 Nā Thwak Sañ 68
 Nā Tit Sañ 45, 46
 Nā Toñsū 157
 Nā Tuin Pañ Sañ 116-17, 154
 Nā U Lyon 146
 Nā Wam Sā Sañ 44
 Nā Yoñ Sañ 121
 naçca (dancing) 93
 Nāchoñkhyām (Ngasaunggyan) 4, 31, 36, 37
 naga worship 9, 57
 Nāchontiñā 37
 Nadaungtap pagoda 19
 nagā krañ sañ (?armourer) 161
 Nagari letters 169, 176, 177, 184, 185, 186
 Nāgañena 81 n. 1
 Nāgasman:, Prince 10
 Nāi, Skhin 62
 Nakkabuñil 23
 Nakorn Pat'om 6 n. 2
 nā krañ kriyphlū (pure white silver) 151
 nā kuiw cā (on my behalf) 155
 Nālandā 166, 182, 188
 Nālāgiri, subjugation of 176, 177
 nam (soul) 112
 namaskāra mudrā (attitude of prayer) 172, 173, 178
 name, monk called by lay 125,—of the donor 166
 namuiñ (land measure) 163
 nan (?shrine) 135; 136
 Nāñagambhīra 81 n. 7
 Nāñapicañ (Nāñapaccaya) 140, 141
 Nançhao 2, 51,—raids 2, 37
 Nāndamaññā 124
 Nandaungmya, King (Nantaungmya, Nan: ton:myā, see also Nātonimyā) iv, 13, 19, 47
 han kia mañ (dethroned king) 35
 Nannava 6, 57

Nar (*Nārāyana*, *Viśṇu*) 57
narakā elephant 138,—horse 138
narañcra (wind instrument) 69, 160
Narapati, King 12
Narapaticañsū, King (Narapatisithu) iv, 4 n. 1, 10, 13, 115 n. 8
Narasāñkram 121
Narasiṅgha - Uccanā, King iv, 13, 18, 21, 22, 23, 29, 38, 69, 87, 97, 99, 117, 150, 154
Narathelinha, King iv, 13
Narathihapate, King 13
Narathu, King 12, 13
Nārayana (*Viśṇu*) 57
Narintasū 21, 89
ñā syañ 95
Nathlaungkyau 57
 nationalism, Burmese 126
 nationality 157, 162
 nationalistic sentiment 35
 native places, slaves never taken away from their 152
 Nativity 176, 177
Nātoñmyā, King (*Uccanā*, see also Nandaungmya) iv, 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 36, 40, 41, 44, 46, 47, 70, 72, 87, 88, 92, 110, 111, 117, 120, 122, 148, 149, 150, 184
Nātoñ Skhin, King 19
nāt rwā lā (death) 77
nat thamañ (the food of *deva*) 96 n. 6
nauth (*pantyā*) 68, 71, 93
navanīta (butter) 104 n. 8
 navel 169
 necessities, four (*catupaccaya*, *paccāñ lepā*) 9, 55, 104, 107, 109, 118
 neck, slender 169
 necklace 67
 needle (*sūci*) 15, 106 n. 2
 negotiations for peace 34, 126
 nehpew 150
Netti 80 n. 7
Nettipakarāṇa 80 n. 7
New Chronicle iii
 new growth in the Order 122, 125,—school 122
 next existence 74
Ngachaunggyan (*Nachorikyāmī*, *Ngasaunggyan*) iv, 4, 32, Battle of—31
Nga-o 5
Ngashinkan 178 n. 5
Ngayamankan rebellion 7, 8, 10
nhac chañ kan (two level tank) 130, 132
Nhakpacton 151
Nhakpluiyawtuin 146
nhakpyow (banana) 185
nham (sesamum) 102, 186
nhama (sister) 146
ñhañ (trumpet) 71,—*sañ* (trumpeter) 69, 160
ñhuwpāñ 186
Nhutchak 110
ni (younger brother) 150
niccapat (*niccabhattamī*, constant rice) 101
 niche 67
Nidāna 52
Nigellā sativa (*cimunak*) 185
 night watchman 153
Nigroda (Banyan Grove) 138
Nigyawda village 137
nikayi 79
nīma (younger sister) 146
nipāta (section) 80 n. 9
Nimi 66
niraban (*nirvāṇa*, annihilation) 130, 132
niraya (*ñiray*, hell) 28
nirvāṇa (annihilation) 11, 15, 16, 28, 60, 61, 62, 70, 74, 75, 90, 92, 93, 94, 112, 113, 141, 143, 170, 187, achieving—(*aklwat tryā*) 2, 77, 85, city of—73
Nittipakarāṇa 80
 noble (*ariyā*, *aryā*) 92, 94
 nomadic past, relic of the 154 n. 3
ñoi (banyan tree) 129, 140, 144
noi (leder brother) 147
 non-Buddhist 124
 non-Burman 43
 non-canonical 86

Nōn Cok 46
nōncon (couch) 107
nōnnan (bell, gong) 69, 139, — *sāñ* (bell player) 160
Nōn Ram Kri 147
Nōn Thon 68
Nōn Ü 36
Nōn Up 85
 normal fingers 67
 Norman 10
 north expansion 51,—of Burma 31,—queen 17
 North *Kūnī* inscription 21
 nothern Buddhism 188,—Burma 24, 32,—frontier iv, 49,—limit of the empire 32,—marches 49,—most outpost 31
 nose, prominent 169
 notable 112, Mon—9, —s of the village 154
 notes 191
 novice (*kuirāñ*, *sāmañera*, *samaniy*) 94, 95, 153
nīray (*nīraya*, hell) 109
nīrut (black pepper) 133, 134
nuiññam (conquered land) 4, 37
nuiw, *cuiw*, (suckling) 156
nuiw nīhat nwā ma (milch cow) 99, 158
nuiw sac (fresh milk) 99, 158
nuiw tham (sour milk) 99, 158
 nun 94, 96, 162
 nurse 29, wet—158
 nusery 34
nuy (silver) 130, 131, 132, 135, 136, 150,—*pyan* (pure silver) 44, 151, —*rañ* (liquid silver) 129
nwā (cattle) 135, 136, 158, *sā*—(ox for beef) 121, *sāñghika*—(cattle of the monks) 99,—*kloñ* (cowherd) 121,—*kloñ cwāñ* (expert cowherd) 103,—*cowherd* 69, 158
nwālā (yoke bullock) 121, —*sāñ* (gelded bull) 121
nwānuiw, (milk) 135, 136, 158, —*cowherd* 158, 159
 Nwa-te-le Ywahaung (Nwatale Ywazo) 5, 165

nwegyo (*pyānoy*, *thunbergia laurifolia*) 186
Nyāsa Tīkā 81
 Nyaung-u 2
 Nyaung-u Saw Rahan, King 4 n. 6
Nymphaea (*krā*) 185
 O
 Oath, corporal 89
 observance of the *vinaya*, laxity in the 82, 120, 124, 126
 objects of offering (*yatthu*, *wat*) 101
 obverse 166, 182, 184
 offence (*aplac*, *āpattikat*, *āppatti*) 44, 110
 offering (*pucaw*) 57, 69, 129,—on tray 179
 office 42, chief administrative—(Hluttaw) 40
 officer 32, 42, 43, 44, 46, 47, 118, 176, 183, administrative — 161, 184, calvary—(*mrañ sūkri*) 42, executive — 42, 91, 145, government—91, land—(*tuñ sūkri*) 89, law—(*tryā*) 90, liaison—97, local administrative — 49, provincial—(*tuik sūkri*) 42, senior—49, in charge of the case (*amhu cuiw*) 90,—inspecting villages 45
 official duty 48,—language iii, iv, 10, 36,—status 117, government—47, 63
 oil (*chi*, *tela*) 102, 104, measure for—(*tanak*) 102,—for lighting 83
 oil lamp (*chimi*, *chimi khwak*, *chimi tuñ*) 15, 69, 86, 102, 103, 107, 141
 old age and inability 153,—or sick slave 162,—record iii
 omen 15
 omniscience (*sabbāññutāññā*, *si cap mrañ nhami*) 55, 70, 71, 73, 74
 omniscient lord 27
oñmañiw (*clitoria ternatea*) 185
 opportunist 39
 oral history 190,—tradition 124
 ordain 125
 ordeal, trial by (*kambhā le:rap*) 89, water—(*tryā* *ñap*) 89
 Order, the Buddhist (*ñāñghā*) iv, v, 39, 43, 48, 49, 58, 71, 83, 91, 93, 96, 104, 122, 141, 155, different sects of

the—120, dignitaries of the—115, head of the—116, members of the—153, new group in the—122, 125, purification of the—118, 119, 120, 122, 126, the Sinhalese—iv

order 49, chronological—165, law and—29, 46, imperial—31, 34, royal—(*thuylaw*) 42, 87, 155,—of importance 117.—of the king 42

ordinand 116 n. 9

ordinary fingers 169

ordination (*rahan mū*) 123, 125,—hall (*sim, sima*) 110, 130, 141, permanent—hall (*baddhasima*) 54, 110,—service 94, 106, 116 n. 9

organization 123

Oriental Studies, Department of 191

ornaments, dedication of 17, royal—67

orthodox group 118, 123,—monks 124

orthodoxy iv, 55, 118, 119, 123, 126

outcast, social 145, 162

outer compound 141

outlying district 24,—region 45

outpost 43, northern most—31

overlordship 36

overseer 156

overseas contact 7

owner 147, 162, liberal—154, merciful—152, slave—153

ownership 162, dispute for slave—146, registration of—146, transfer of—146,—of land 87, 89, 123,—of slave 87, 161

ox for beef (*stā nwā*) 121

oxen 137, 138, 139, dedication of—16, Lord of—58

paccañ (*pacceñ*, property, material) 59, *alhu*—(gift) 111,—*le pā* (*catupaccaya*, four necessities of the monks) 104

Paccarā 88

Pācittiya 80 n. 5

paddy (*capā*) 34, 47, 84, 101, 102, 103, 138, 139, 140, 151, 153, pounding—(*capā thon*) 99,—field 45, 84, ridges in a field (*bnhan, kunsanī*) 163 n. 1,—land 23, 34, 44

pādesa 15

padmāvara (lotus throne, *krēpallāñ*) 169, 171, 174, 178, 188

padmā-vajrāsana (double throne) 174

Pagan iii, v, 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, n. 2, 8 11, 12, 20, 21, 30, 33, 35, 36, 37, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 63, 65, 66, 68, 75, 81 n. 7, 108, 115, 116, 118, 119, 120, 122, 132, 150, 153, 174, 181, 185, 186, 189, ancestors of—126, burning of—127, capture of—53, city wall of—1, court of—20, 31, 55, description of—1, enemies of—149, envoys to—31, expedition to—33, fall of—45, 121, foundation of—1, 2, 3, 37, king of—7, 10, 12, 13, 20, 30, 32, 35, 38, 47, 183, 187, pagodas at—1, rise of—2, suzerainty of—36, vassals of—2,—architecture 127, 159,—culture 7, 15,—dynasty iii, 7, 29, 36, 39, 54, 65, 70, 189,—empire iv, 35, 122, 157,—expansion 4,—history iii,—inscription 11, 46, 58,—kingdom 2,—monarchy iii, 37,—museum 53, 184,—period 21, 53, 140, 163, 165, 168, 169, 173, 179, 188,—slave 3, 124, 152,—throne iv, 35, 149,—times 172

pagoda (*ceti, cetiya, mutho, purhā, puthuiw*) iv, 5, 6, 12, 15, 16, 23, 55, 63, 64, 65, 75, 92, 93, 99, 100, 103, 108, 111, 113, 118, 122, 125, 129, 141, 144, 145, 152, 153, 154, 156, 157, 158, 166, dedicated to—155, four sided hollows—(*kū liy-myakñā*) 84, hollow—23, 64, 87, 96, 97, 118, 120, 122, 125, 127, 128, 135, 141, 144, 153, 154, 189, miniature—129, Pagan—1, red—(*puthuiw ni*) 129, repairing—9, solid—128, 129, 141, variegated—(*puthuiw prok*) 129,—slave (*purhā kywan*) 145, 152; 155, 162,—spire (*athwat*) 160

Pagoda, Abeyadana 6, Ananda—65, 185, Arakan—163, Bawbawgyi—179, Bota-taung—184, *Dhammarājika*—(*Dhammayazika*) 18, 65, 74, 119, Dhammayangyi—11, 12, Gubyaukgyi—6, 66, Hsinbyushin—18, Htilominlo—65, Khemawara—70, Kutha—74, *Kyukktalañ*—9 n. 2, Laymyakhn—a—20, Lokananda—67, Mingalazedi—(*Panpway, upcen*, Pagoda at the Turners' Quarter) 65, 126, Myatheindan—9 n. 2, Nadanping—

tap—19, Nanpaya—6, 57, Patothamya—6, Petlaik—1, 65, Shahtut—176, Shwegu—140, Shwegugyi—11, 70, Shwesandaw—5, 65, Shwesayan—57, Shwezigon—7, 65, 67, Tatkale—189, Thinganyon—18, *Tilomañguir*—17, 18, 20, *Trailokluhōhbuil* 17, 20, Zeyaput—21

paint (*chiy*) 107-8

painter (*pankhī*) 69, 139

painting 64, 66, 139, 140, 141, wall—124

pakāsaniyakamma (excommunication) 59

pakati pay (ordinary land measure) 163

palace (*īmtaw*) 12, 18, 56, 57, 79, 86,—construction iv, 9,—inscription 9, 39, 41, 55, 115,—scene 175

palanquin (*sanryāñ*) 106,—bearers (*sanryāñ sañ*) 69

Palhū. 146

Pali 4, 5, 7, 11, 15, 58, 63, 72, 88 n. 4, 91, 92, 101,—Buddhism 52, 53,—inscription 65, 184,—manuscript in gold 52, 189,—poetry 80 n. 11,—prayer 189,—Sanskrit inscription 11, non canonical work in—86

pallāñ, *khuinan:khyui*: (*pro*; *pallāñ*, a throne with many sides) 174 (see also *panlāñ*)

Pallava (Conjeveram) 189

palm, areca (*kramū*) 150, *corypha*—(*piy*) 186, palmyra—(*borassus flobellifer, than*) 83, toddy—45, 102, 111, 144, 186, umbrella—(*piy, corypha elata*) 83, sweet liquor from—juice (*yanimakā aphyaw*) 123, -leaf manuscript (*piy cā*) 44, 141, —tree 141,—leaf maker (*piy samā*) 148, 149, dedication of—trees 111, 144

pamisukūlika (*pamisukū*, *pañsakū*, dusty robe) 62, 105, 123

Pamisakū, *Mahāthera* 12, 105

pan (ask pardon) 149, (flower) 101, 131, 132, 155, *khlyu*—(floral design) 128, *tanchip*—(flower seal) 89,—*cañ* (pure flower) 95, 153

Pañā 98

Panan 37

pañcañ: (*pañcañga*, five attributes) 95

pañcavaggiya 178

Pandamus fureatus (*chapswā*) 186

pardit 34

panegyric 8, 30, 78, 79

pankhī (painter) 69, 135, 159

panlāñ, *tryā* (throne of the Law) 130, 132, 140, 141 (see also *pallāñ*)

Pankli 30, 100

Panlāñ 37

paññāsa (fifty group) 80 n. 8

Paññāsāmi 51

panphay (blacksmith) 135, 156, 159

panpu (sculptor, woodcarver) 69, 135, 136, 159,—*kloin* (monastery with wood carvings) 129

panpwat (wood turner) 69, 159

Panpwat Puthuiwtau Dāyakā, King (see also *Tarukpliy*) 30

panpwat rap (the turners' quarter)—34.—*ceti* (pagoda at the turners' quarter) 126

Panpwat Sañ, King 30,—*mliy* 30, 100

Pāñ Rāñ 143, 144

pañsakū (see *pamisukūlika*)

panthan (*panthin, panthyān*, goldsmith) 69, 130, 131, 150, 160

pantyā (nautch) 68, 71, 93, 153, 160

papaya (*pittaka, bhittikiy, carica papaya*) 186

paper, folded (*parabuit*) 83, 107

Parākkamabāhu I, King 12

Pārājika 80 n. 5

Paramatthabindu 29

pārami (perfections) 70, 71, 72

Parched Land (*Tattadesa*) 3,—rice (*pokpok*) 129

pardon, ask (*pan*) 149, intervention to get the king's—150,—the rebels 48

parents, slave 125, 153

paribhoga cetiya (a thing used by the Buddha) 165

parikkharā (requisites) 69, 107,—*yac pā* (*atṭhaparikkharā*, eight requisites) 106

parisat (audience, congregation) 130, 132

parissāvanām (water strainer) 106 n. 2

paritta (Buddhist ritual formula recited to ward off evil) 55, 56, 86, 87, 112, 118, 125

paritkī: (*mahāparittam*) 86

Parivāra 80 n. 5

pariyatti (learning) 82-3, 96

Parliament, members of the Burma 155 n. 3

party 44

partition (*māraphari*) 138, 139
 parts of the day, four (quarters) 120
paryā:kasana (serenity, sitting cross legged) 172, 173
pasāsañ (side drummer) 68, 160
 passer-by 105 n. 10
 past, relic of the nomadic 154 n. 3
 pasture 152
Rataikkhaya 12
patañsa (wish tree) 21, 62, 105
 Pathothamya pagoda 6
 paths, four (*cattaro magga*) 94 n. 12
paticca sunuppāda 52, 85
Patthāna 81 n. 13
Pāthaya 80 n. 6
Pātikavagga 80 n. 6
Pātimokka 110
pañipatti (practice) 96
pañsambhida 85
 patron saint of the Mon 57, 58
patto (almsbowls, *sapit*) 106 n. 2
pānpūy (*Careya arborea*) 186
pañvāranā ceremony 110
 pavilion 55, earth—(*mliy tan kup*) 155
 Paw 146
Pawaradhamma 117
 pay (land measure, 1.77 acres) 17, 23, 24, 34, 39, 40, 45, 47, 48, 73, 75, 79, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 108, 109, 111, 117, 118, 120, 121, 122, 124, 126, 132, 145, 152, 153, 158, 163, *pakati*—(*chain: raisā pay*, ordinary land measure) 163, *mañ:*—(king's measure, double of the ordinary) 163, *tuñi* (revenue surveyor) 42
pāy krī (*Dolichos lablab var. lignosus*) 186
pāy lwam (*Vigna Catjang*) 186
 Pe Maung Tin 11, 57, 69, 105, 124, 141 n. 1, 191
 peace 24, 150,—and tranquility 46,—mission (to China in 1285) iv, 3, 31, 32, 50, 126,—negotiation 34, 126
 Pearl, (Queen of *Klacwā*) 96
 pedestal 65, 67, 178
 pediment 179, flame—(*calac*) 130
 Pegu 51, 120, 175, 184
 Peikthanomyo (*Viññu City*) 182
 Peking (*Taytu*) iv, 31, 32, 33, peace mission to—126
 Penal Code (*amunwancā*) 47, 49
 pencil, soapstone (*karikuchān*, steatite) 83, 107,—case (*karikūtamikleñ*) 107
 people, common 143, 182,—of the Buddhist lands 165,—of Burma 75
 perfection (*pārami*) 70, 71, 72
 pepper, black (*ñrut*) 135
 period 69, 77, 101, 104, 115, 120, 125, 126, 137, 150, 153, 158, 160, Burmese—15, Gupta—166, Mon—7, 15, 36, 54, Pagan—21, 46, 53, 140, 163, 165, 168, post Pagan—191, transition—7, 10, 15, 36, 53,—of temple builders 160
 permanent ordination hall (*baddhasīma*) 54, 110
 permission 153
 person, exalted 63, foremost—187
 personage, royal 67
 personal attendant (*kappika*, *kappiya*) 156
 personality 113, 115, 126
 Peshwar 166
 pestle (*klipwe*) 107
peta (*pritiā*, unhappy ghost) 28
Petakapadesa 80 n. 7
 Petlaik pagoda 1, 65
 petty theft case 87, 90
Pha-an 175
phalā (cardamom) 186
 phallic worship 57
phan (crystal) 129, 130, 131
phāñita (molasses) 104 n. 8
 Pharoah 12 n. 4
phattāsañ (*bhandāsañ*, ?steward) 161
phaya (see *purhā*)
 phenomenon 77
 philosophical terms, Indian 77
 philosophy, Buddhist 90
 Phimanakas inscription 63
phitkhyāñ (*Piper cubeba*) 186
phiy (great grandfather) 147
Phoñ Chañ 30
phra (see *purhā*)
phuiw (cost, price) 101, 102, 104, 135, 136, *kywan*—(price of slave) 150, 151, *mliy*—(price of land) 121, *sā*—(price of meat) 45, 121, *siy*—(price of liquor) 45, 121, *thamañ*—(price of cooked rice) 45, 122

phun *mlat kri cwā* (the Most Reverend) 95
 phun *mlat so* (the Reverend) 95, 125
 phun *sañ* (possessor of merit) 68, 94, 95,
 149
 phurhā (see *purhā*)
 phurhā (see *purhā*)
 phut 156
Phwā Caw (Queen of *Tarukpily*) 99
Phwā Jaw (Queen of *Narasingha-Uccanā*)
 21, 22, 29, 38, 48, 49, 117, 122
 phyā *nā uiw* (sick, ill and feeble with age)
 153,
phyān (cloth) 135, *awat*—(clothing) 121,—
 mañ klyaw (fine black cloth) 135, 136,
 —*phlū* (white cloth) 135, 137
Pi, *Kalan* 183, 184, 187
Picāñ 124
 pickled tea (*lbhak*) 44, 45
 picture 64, Buddhism in—s 85,—of the Lord
 (*chanpu*) 128
 pieces supporting rafters (*lyok*) 107
 piety (*stāñ*) 75, practice and—72
 pilgrim 61, 141, 165
 pillar 44, 56, 169, boundary—43, inscription
 —43, 47, polished—(*pwat tuñ*) 130
 pillow (*dm*) 69
 Pin Sekkalampa 125
piñdapāto (food) 104 n. 3
 Pinle 35
pinnai (*Artocarpus integrifolia*, Jack fruit
 tree, *mun*) 186
Pintū 183
 pipe (*plwan*) 111
Piper cubeba (*phitkhyan*) 186
 piprava 179
 piracy 145, 161
pisā (viss) 132, 140, 141
Pisamantra (*Vessantara*) 85, 86
pisañ (?crusher, ?salted fish maker) 135, 136,
 161
pisukā (architect) 110
 pit, refuse 105
piñaka 41, 51, 52, 55, 81, 82, 84, 88, 90,
 132, 133, 134, 135, copying the—78,
 cost of—79, price of—82, works on—
 144,—*sunipum* (Three Heaps of Law)
 78, 102, 130, 132,—*tuik* 130
pitan (canopy) 107, 130, 132
pittaka (*bhittikiy*, *Carica papaya*, payaya) 186
 piy (*corypha elata*, *corypha*: palm, umbrella
 palm) 83, 186,—*cā* (palm leaf manu-
 script) 44,—*samā* (*piyamā*, palm leave
 maker) 148
plac (rebel) 149
 place, holy 127, slaves never taken away
 from their native—152
 plan of the building 137
 planning of wood 138
Plañmanā 37
 plant 186
 plantation, American 143
 plaque 57, 65, 66, Ananda—191, glazed—
 189, *jātaka*—104, *terra cotta*—41
 plaster (*anikate*) 138
 plate 138
 platform (*cañkram*) 128
 Pleasant Hall of Justice (*Tryākwansāyā*) 87
 pleasure, worldly 143
 plinth 128, 131
Plotipla 121
plwan (pipe) 111, 130, 132
 Po-Nagar inscription 3
 poetry 16. Pali—80 n. 11
 point, strategic 43
 Poison Mt. (*Chipton*) 43, 98
 poisoning the king 34
Pokāñ (see Pagan)
Pokpo Ramāñ 110
pok pok (parched rice) 129, 130, 131
 policy, language 10
 polished pillar (*pwat tuñ*) 130
 political expediency 10,—history iii, v,
 uneasy—situation 152, Burmese—
 thought and practice 184,—troubles
 126
 politics, Buddhist monk meddling in 126
 Polo, Marco 31
 pomegranate (*taleñ*) 186
 popular belief 59,—support 126
 population, slave 157, 158
 porch (*chanwan*, elephant entrance) 67, 130
 port (*sañphawchip*) 152
 portfolio 191
 portrait statue 67, 68
 position of slaves 143
 post (*?asañ*) 107, 138

post - *Aniruddha* 1
 post - Pagan 8, 11, —inscription '8, —period 21 n. 10, 46, 191
 posterity (*sā mliy acin*) 155
 posture 165
 pot (*kalāsa, krāswatui:*) 107, 179, 188, —and pan 160, —lid (*calon*) 69, 106 n. 2, —of liquor (*siy uiw khak*) 121
 potentiate 68
 potter (*uiw thin*) 151, —'s clay 165
 poter's yok (*atham*) 106
 poultry 158
 pounding paddy (*capā thon*) 99
 pouring water (*riy swan*) 12, 112
 power, Burmese 31
 practice (*akyai, pačipatti*) 96, 107, 108, 120, —and piety 72, Ari—s 124, beliefs and —s 123, Burmese political thought and —184, regular—159
praḥ (see *purhā*)
prai (plank) 139
Prañ (capital city) 31, 32, 112, 131, 132, *ma siy*—(city of no death) 112, *Taruk*—(China) 35, —*tarikhā* (city gate) 122
prañ (one sixteenth of a basket) 84, 101, 102
Prañ Khwañ 121
prañā (knowledge, wisdom) 74, 92, 108
prasat (multiple roof) 130
Prasatā 120
pratā (quick silver) 132, 133, 135, 136, —*rañ* (liquid quick silver) 130, 132, —*sañ* (workers in quick silver) 135, 136
pratuiw (spittoon) 69
pratyālīdhāsana (displeasure, stepping right) 172
 prayer 70, 74, 169, 170, 187, attitude of—(*na maskāra müdrā*) 172, Pali—189, —hall 56
 preacher 84, 85
 preaching 77, 84, 85, 90, attitude of—(*dharmačakra mudrā, vyākhyāna mudrā*) 171, —hall (*dhammasā*) 130, 132, 141
 pre-Buddhist 45, 58
 preceptor 99, king's—(*mañ chryā, rājaguru*) 96, 184, royal—95, 116
 precepts, Buddhist 38, 50
 precious gems 55, 128, —metals 160, dedication of—metals 59
 predecessor 150
 prefix 183, —for Mon woman's name (*Ya*) 156, —*Uiw* and its variants 125
 premises 141, cleaning the—99
 precence, king's 39
 presents and gifts 33
 preservation 83
 president (*sañkri*) 43, —of the Union of the Republic of Burma 155 n. 3
 price of a slave woman 151, —of building material 138, —of commodities 21, —of cooked rice (*thaman phuiw*) 45, 122, —of land (*mliy phuiw*) 45, 121, 122, —of liquor (*siy phuiw*) 45, 121, —of meat (*sā phuiw*) 45, 121, —of *pitaka* 82, —of slave 150, 151
 priest, head 78
 prince (*mañsā*) 112, 150, Crown—17, 18
 Cola—9, Mon—10
 Prince *Asawatdhammā* 10, —*Gaṅgasūra* 18, 19, 20, 153, —*Hsiēh-hsüeh-ti-chin* (*Susuttaki*) 34, —*Jayasūra* 19, —*Kaikasū* (*Gaṅgasūra*) 122, —*Kramisuiñkri* 19, —*Nāgasāman*: 10, —*Pyamkī* 18, 19, 20, 40, —*Rājakumār* 10, 52, 115, 146, —*Rājasūra* (*Rājasū*) 18, 19, 20, 91, 101, 147, —*Sawyū* 10, —*Singhapati* 21, 23, 35, 97, 153, —*Singhapicañ* 19, 20, 40, —*Siughapikrami* 23, 48, —*Singhasū* 61, —*Siriwadhanā* 23, 48, —*Sudhummarac* 10, —*Susuttaki* 33, 34, —*Tryāphyā* 21, 23, 97, 153, —*Ye-sin Timur* 35
 princely blood 149
 princess (*mañsami*) 19, 48, 145, Burmese—10
 Princess *Acaw* (*Acau*) 73, 119, —*Acawkwram* 79, 105, 132, —*Acawkwamskhin* 144, —*Acawlat* 21, 22, 87, 118, 125, 154, —*Acawmañlha* 17, 18, 19, 20, —*Acawpatāñsā* 108, —*Mañlha* 122, —*Rhweimsañ* 19, —*Sattikāmi* 18, 19, —*Saw* (*Caw*) 78
 privy councillor (*atwai:wai*) 184
pro, pallañ (a throne with many sides) 174
 proceeding 89
 procedure, criminal iv
 produce, dairy 99, —of the land 45, 46, 153
 procession 68, 75, 158, slaves were allowed to carry on with their own trade or—152

professional 152
 Prome iv, 5, 33, 34, 52, 175, 178 n. 5, 179,
 184.—Shwesandaw inscription 79
 promenade 128
 prominent nose 169
 propaganda 8
 propagation of the Religion 34, 166
 properly clad 120
 property (*uccā, utcā*) 147, 149, inherited—
 (*amuy*) 59, 98, monastic—88, religious
 —98, transfer of—111
 prophecy (*byadissa*) 71
 prose 16
 protector (*trā*) 78
 protection, attitude of (*abhaya mudrā*) 171
 province 49,—of China 32
 provincial administration 49,—officer (*tuik
 sūkri*) 42
 provision 97, 139, 153,—for old or sick
 slaves 162
 prowess, military 35
 proximity to the sea 152
Pubbāñhasutta 87 n. 4
pucaw (*pujaw*, offering) 129, 130
puchin (axe) 106, 107
puchuiw (loin cloth) 106, 130, 131, 132, 133,
 134, 160
pucu (young people) 156
puipā (retinue) 111
Pugāma (see Pagan and *Arimaddanapura*)
Puggalapaññati 81 n. 13
puik sañ (net man) 159
puik sūkri (?general) 42, 122
Pukam (*P'ukan*, *Pukam*, *Pukām*) 2, 3, 36,
 149 (see also Pagan)
pukhrañ (lower garment) 135, 136, 160,—
sañ 160
pulay (pearl) 130, 131
Pumāñ (Brahman) 96
Puñā 31
Puñadhammikā 33
Puñarāsi 99
 punishment (*dan*) 28, 29, 46, 47, 88, manual
 of —s (*amunwancā*) 46,—for thieves 27
Puñadhammika 34
puñak (*Calopyllum*) 186
pupil (*tape*) 92, 96, 99
puppet 35
puran (mason) 69, 135, 137, 159
 purchase 101, slave acquired through—148,
 —of land 98, 121, 122, 123,—of
 slave 151
 pure flower (*pancarī*) 95,—form of Buddh-
 ism 115, 116
purhā (*phurhā*), exalted person, the Lord
 Buddha) 58, 63, 64, 75, 77, 91, 93, 108,
 109, 123, 129, 130, 131, 132, 143, 144,
 154, 155,—*ryap* (the standing Buddha)
 64, 67, 68, 102, 135, 136, — *samā* (im-
 age maker) 67, 135, 136, 151,—*chanpu*
 (the image of the Lord) 64,—*chu* (the
 boon of Buddhahood) 70, 71, 72, 74,—
chuiw ruined pagoda) 140, 141,—*kloñ*
 (building of the Lord) 108 n. 5,—
kywan (pagoda slave) 155,—*liymyaknhā*
 (four images of the Lord placed back
 to back) 140, 141,—*loñ* (the future
 Buddha) 18, 39, 63, 70, 110,—*niyapan*
 (the dead Buddha) 64, — *rhañ* (the
 reigning king) 63, 70,—*ryap* (the stand-
 ing Buddha) 84,—*sañ* (image maker)
 159, —*tanthism* (the recumbent Buddha)
 64, 84,—*tape*, *sā* (disciples of the Bud-
 dha) 92,—*thaway* (the sitting Buddha)
 64, 68, *ryaptuiñ*—(the image made to
 the height of donor) 64, 67, 68, *kuiw*
ryaptuiñ—(the image made to the size
 and weight of donor) 64, 67, 68, *mlat
 cwāso*—(the Most Exalted Lord) 63,
 64
 purification, religious iv, 24, 54,—of the
 Order 118, 119, 120, 122, 126
 purity, water of (*recañ*) 112
Putak 17
Putasin, King 62, 145
puthuiw (pagoda) 129, 130, 131; 140,—*ñ*
 (red pagoda) 129, — *prok* (variegated
 pagoda) 129
Puwa 176, 183, 187
pwat tuiñ (polished pillar) 130, 169
Pwazaw (*Sacmati*) 21, 78 n. 10, 119, 120,
 122
Pwoñ 183
pyā (honey) 104, 135, 136
pyānoy (?*nwegyo*, *Thunbergia laurifolia*) 186
Pyamikhi, Prince 18, 19, 20, 40, 121, 149,
 150

pyaritawmū (dead) 77, 147
pyañma (*tp miñy*, *embrella robusta*, *Lages-troemia Flos reginae*) 185
 Pyinbya, King 1, 3
Pyu (*Tircul*) 1, 5, 9, 15, 52, 52, 61, 62, 64, 91, 157, 158, 165, 174, 176, 178, 179, 185, 188, 189, —capital 2, —casket 168, —centre 182, —inscription 53, 190, 191, —king 2, —kingdom 52, —period 169, 172, —times 168, 173

Q

Qanbaliq (Peking) 33 n. 2
 qualification, educational 41, five requisite —s 153, —s of the candidate 95 n. 4
 quarrel among monks 101
 quarter 99, 175, (four parts of the day) 120, pagoda at the turners'— (*Panpwatrap ceti*, *Mingalazedi*) 126
 queen 16, 19, 21, 22, 63, 73, 78, 92, 100, 107, 120, 126, 146, 182, chief— (*Mahādevī*, *Mahesī*) 17, 23, 182, 183, 188, junior—iii, 42, lesser—149, north—17, south—17 n. 1, dowager—48, 49, —grandmother 122, —mother 18
 Queen Caw (*Narasiñgha-Uccanā*) 21, 69, 97, 99, 150, 151, 153, 158, *Caw* (*Tarukpлиy*) 73, 104, *Caw Alhwam* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 18, 19, *Caw Mrakan Sañ* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, *Caw Pulay May* (*Klacwā*) 96, *Mlacphlañ sañ* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 17, Pearl (*Klacwā*) 96, *Phwā Caw* (*Tarukpлиy*) 99, *Phwā Jaw* (*Narasiñgha-Uccanā*) 21, 22, 29, 38, 48, 49, 117, 122, *Ratanā-pum* (*Tarukpлиy*) 48, 97, 99, *Saw* (*Narasiñgha-Uccanā*) 80, *Saw* (*Tarukpлиy*) 73, *Sumilüla* (*Uccanā*) 29, 119, 132, 144, Thanbula (*Thiluin Mañ*) 9, 10, *Ton-phlañsañ* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 17, *Trilokavata-misikā* (*Thiluin Mañ*) 10, 170, 178, 183, 187, *Uchokpan* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 17, 18, 145, 147, *Vañamsikā* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 18, 19, 146, *Veluvati* (*Cañsū* II) 16, 18, 19
 queenship, promoted to 19
 quelling a rebellion, reward for 117
 quotation 155

R

Racasū (*Rāiasūra*) 59
 race 143

rafter (*akhrañ*, *aram*) 75, 107
 rag, dusty (*parisukulika*) 105
rahan (*araña*, monk) 92, 94, 95, 153, —mū (ordained) 94, 123, 125, —*sanghā* 92, 111
rahantā (*arahattaphuil*, *arahattaphalañtha*) 85 n. 13, 94
raichu (reward for bravery) 20, 48, 150
 raid 161, border—3, Nanchao—2, slave—145, 148
 rain and wind 28
Rājāgaha 52
rājaguru (*mañchryā*, royal preceptor) 117
Rāiakumār, Prince 10, 52, 115, 146, —inscription 7 n. 1, 9, 53, 64, 157
rāialilāsana (royal ease, sitting with right knee raised) 172, 173
Rāiamahāmākalapati 120
Rājapuñh 46
Rājasāñkram 20, 21, 35, 40
rāiasattha (rullings) 44, 46
Rājasū, Prince (*Racasū*, *Rājasūra*) 18, 19, 20, 68, 91, 101, 147
Rājavallabha (king's favourite) 184
Rājawañkri: (the Great Chronicle) 190
Rājawañ kyoau (the Celebrated Chronicle) 190
Rājawañ sac (the New Chronicle) 190
rakansañ (?poet) 161
Rāmādhipati, King 6
Rāma Gamhēñ, King (Ramkhamheng) 124
ramimak (appetite, desire, greed) 73, 112, 143
Rāmaññadesa (Monland) 6, 7, 12, 51, 58 n. 6
 Ramayana iii
ranāy (rafters) 135, 136
Randhip 23
 Rangoon 175, 184, University of —191, Library of the University of —9 n. 2
rañmā (*Chickrassia tabularia*. Chittagong wood) 186
Raiun 37
Rapay 146
Rasavāhini 86
ratanā (gems) 129, 130, 131
Ratanāpūñim (Queen of *Tarukpлиy*) 48, 97, 99
ratanā sumi:pa: (Three Precious Gems viz, the Lord, the Law and the Order) 58,

91, 144
Ratanasutta 87 n. 4
Ratanāucchi 96
Ratani 146
 rate 12, standard—of redemption from slavery 151
Ratthavinita Sutta 85
Raṭṭhapāla 86 n. 2
ratu sum pā (three seasons) 107, 108
 Ray, N. 58, 115 n. 8
raychu (reward for bravery) 20, 48, 150
Ray Kheri 143, 144
rāyariw (*Morinda citrifolia, angustifolia*) 186
 Rays, Lord of the 58, spreading—169
razor (*sañthun, vāsi*) 106
 reading, careless 192
 real ruler 35
 realm 46, 49
 rebel (*tawhan*) 78, 143, defeating the—150, execution of the—prince 20, Mon—2
 rebellion 10, 20, 23, 40, 48, 150, Mon—10, 30, Ngayamankān—7, 8, 10, reward for quelling a—117, suppression of a—iv, 149, Tenasserim—115, 116,—against *Nātoñmyā*’s accession 149
 rebirth, chain of 71, 73, 75
recañ (water of purity) 111
 receive dedication 112
 recite *paritta* 118
 recluse, forest (*taw mlat kri*) 120
 record (*amūkwān, cākhyup*) 88, 89, Burmese—166, contemporary — 6, special—44, Mon—58, old—iii
 rectangular wall (*tantuññ lemyakñā*) 127
 recumbent Buddha (*purhā tanthim*) 177
 red pagoda (*pathuiwni*) 129
 rededication of land 24
 redemption from slavery 145, 151, 152, 161
 reestablishing the old house 35, 36
 references, Chinese 2
 reform 120
 reformation, religious 7
 refuge 75
 refuse pit 105
 regime, Burmese 63
 regions, outlying 45
 register, royal 44, 98, upper (upper *wni*) 44
 registration of the transfer of ownership
 146
 Registrar, Royal 49
 regnal title 187
 regular practice 159
 rehabilitation of war victims 149
 reign 115, 116, 119, 184
 reincarnation of *Viññu* (*avatāra*) 8, 54
 relatives (*achiy*) 145
 relations with Ceylon 119
 released from slavery 151, 153, 154, 155, 161
 relic (*dhat*) 45, 63, 87, 88, 115 n. 8, 118, 125, 168, bodily—(*sariradhatu*) 128,—casket 179, 188,—chamber 5, 65, 128, 141, 166, 184,—from Ceylon 119,—of the Buddha 46, 49,—of the nomadic past 154 n. 3
 relief 5, 66, high—169, sandstone—177,—figure 165, 168
 Religion, the (*Sāsanā*) v, 6, 15, 24, 33, 39, 45, 46, 51, 52, 54, 58 n. 6, 59, 61, 62, 73, 74, 98, 111, 113, 115, 127, 184, 190,
 Buddhist—8, Chief of the—(*Sāsanā-puññ*) 116, debased form of—v, five thousand years of the—155, Laws of the — 9, propagation of the—34, purification of the —54, Year of the—51, —in Upper Burma 1
 religious 84,—alliance 7,—belief 109,—building 1, 9, 141, 145, 184,—edifice 127, 181,—education 90,—establishment 39, 44, 48, 68, 73, 141, 148, 150, 155, 156,—influence 115,—land 22, 39, 48, 57, confiscating of—land iv, 20, 23, 24, 39, 87, 100, 101, 120, dedication of the—land 75, return of the—land 30, — law 77,—mission 120,—property 98,—purification iv, 24,—reformation 7,—sense 78,—teaching 90,—toleration iv, 55, 75,—works 79
 rent (*khwan*) 84
 repair 62, 68, 83, 93, 109, 110
 repairing *Vajrāsana* 9,—pagoda 9
 reproduction, facsimile 165, collotype—191
 reliquary 179, silver—168, 182
 requisites of a monk (*parikkharā*) 69, 97, 107, eight — (*atṭhaparikkharā, parikkharā yha*) 106, five—qualifications 153.
 four—104 n. 3
 resentment 149
 reservoir (*kan, niv*) 45, 111, 121, 127,

141
 residence 122
 rest house (*tanchoi*) 111, 130
 restoration of the *Aniruddha* line iv
 restrictions, three 120
 retinue (*puiwpā*) 73, 100, 112
 return of the religious land 30
 revenue iv, 20, 23, 39, 190, exemption of
 —12, land—47, loss of—39, 101,—
 administration 47,—collection 49,—
 collector 43,—surveyor (*pay tuiñ*) 42
 Reverend, the 95, 118, 119, 120, 125, the
 Most—95, 96, 97, 120, 125, 151, the
 Right—95, the Very—95
 reverse 166, 169, 182, 185, names on the—
 166, written in—184
 revised edition 79
 revolution, spiritual 143
 reward 40, 71,—for bravery (*raichu*) 48, 150,
 —for quelling a rebellion 117
rök (citrus) 186
rhuy (gold) 130, 131, 135, 136, 140,—*rañ*
 (liquid gold) 129,—*toñ* (golden mountain,
 i.e. the throne) 30,—*toñ tak* (ascending
 the golden mountain, i.e. accession
 to the throne) 22, 110
Rhymansyañ, King (Kyawzwa) 35, 37, 49
Rhwe im sañ, Princess 10
Rhwekūdāyakū, King (*Cañū* I) 11
 rice (*capā*, 84, 101, 102, 135, constant—
 (*niccapat*, *niccabhettari*) 101, cooked—
 (*thamañ*) 123, honey—176, husked—
 (*chan*) 185, parched—(*pok pok*) 129,
 price for cooked—(*thamañ phuiw*) 45,
 122,—alms 86,—and beans 34,—and
 curry 101, —cook (*thamañ sañ*) 158,
 159,—field 23,—land 43
 rich man (*suthe*, *sukrway*) 112, 147, 154,—
 lady (*sukrwayma*) 148
 ridge in a paddy field (*bnhañ*, *kansañ*) 163
 n. 1, —pole 75
 right hand man 115
 righteous rule 54
rikhā (?store, provision) 135, 136
Riruiñruiñ 121
 rise of Pagan 2
rita (law) 77, 91
 rite 56, 84, sacrificial—45
 ritual formula, Buddhist (*paritta*) 55, Brahma-
 nical—iv, Vaisnavite—9
 rival 122,—claimants for three generations
 45
 river, Chindwin 97, Irrawaddy—165, Sal-
 ween (*Salwañ*)—iv, 36, 37, Shweli—
 165, Taiping—31
riy (water) 130, 132, *khliw*—(water to wash
 the body) 156, *khriy chiy*—(water to
 wash feet) 156, *lak chiy*—(water to
 wash hands) 156, *sok*—(water to drink)
 156,—*im* (water closet) 140, 141,—*kan*
 (reservoir, tank) — 111, 130, 132,—
khap (fetching water) 99, *mraknu—krañ*
 (tender grass and clear water) 154,—
mhut (water dipper) 107,—*ñup* (water
 ordeal) 89,—*sañ* (water carrier) 161,—
swan (pouring the libation water) 112,
 —*twan* (well) 111, 123, 130, 131, 132,
 140
Rmeñ (Mon) 9
 robber 36
 robe (*sañkan*, *sañghāti*) 59, 104, 105, 168,
 ceremonial—28, dusty—(*pañskū*, *pani-
 sukū*) 105, hard—(*kañhinacvara*) 15, 97,
 105, 106, outer—105, monastic—15,
 105, the three—s (*nicivaram*) 106 n. 2
 Rock Edicts of Asoka 51
 roof (*amuiw*) 107, multiple—(*prasat*) 130
 roofing, timber for 128
 rose apple tree (*sipriy*) 186
 rote, learning by 90
 royal barge 88,—city 166,—commission 39,
 75, 87, — court 42, 44, — ease (sitting
 with right knee raised, *rājatilāsana*)
 172,—family iv, 23, 35, 36, 48, 91, 117,
 183,—granaries 49, — mother 149,—
 order (*thuytaw*) 42, 87, 155,—ornament
 67,—personage 67,—preceptor (king's
 teacher, *mañchryā*, *rājaguru*) 95, 116,—
 register 44, 49, 98,—treasury 39
 royalty 72
 rubbing (estampage) 190, 191
 ruined monastery 156
 rule, Burmese 7, righteous—54
 ruler, contemporary 182,—and ruled 188
 rules and precepts, Buddhist 38
 rulings (*Rājasattha*) 44, 46
 runaway slave 152, 161

rup (body) 112,—*athūthū* (a great variety of figures) 131, 132,—*nat athūthū* (figures of *deva* and various other beings) 129
rwā, *kywan* (slave village) 146, *wat khyak*—(village of cooks of the monastery) 146, *Taluiñ*—*ma* (the main village of the Mon) 53,—*sañ* (villager) 88,—*sūkri* (village headman) 42, 100
Rwāsā 17, 146
ryā (dry cultivation, hill side cultivation) 89, 158
ryaktak (butter milk) 99
ryaptuīn purhā (the image made to the height of the donor) 64, 67, 68

S

sā (child) 143, 144, 146, 149, 150, 154
Sāaw 45
sabbaññu 71
sabbaññutañña (omniscience, *sicapmrañ-nhamī*) 22, 72, 73
Sabbath (*satañ*) 93,—day 84,—on Saturday (*cane satañ*) 109
sac (timber) 135, 136
sā can mliy can (generation) 145
saccā (truth) 73, 74, 85
Sacchim 33, 150, (*Terminalia belerica, myro-balani*) 186
Sacchitani 4, 37
Sacmati (*Samati*, Thamahti, Pwasaw) 68, 78, 120 n. 9
saciñay (thatch) 108,—*muiw klon* (thatch roofed monastery) 129
sacrificial rites 45
sācuiw (keeper of games) 159
saddhā (faith) 74
Sagaing 184,—Hill 78
Sagaw Karen (?*Cakraw*) 43, 157
sagha (see also *sañghā*) 91
Sahassaranisi *ṭikā* 1
saint, patron 57, 58
Sak 157
sakadāgāmimago 94 n. 12
Saka Era 11
sakkham (inner garment) 105, 160
Sakmunalon 146
Saktawrhañ, King (see *Cañsū I*) 11, 12
Sākti (consort) 178, 188
Salaiikre (Cape Salang, Junk Ceylon) iv, 4,

37

(*salwan*, (*salawan*, couch) 69, 106
 sale of children as slaves 145,—of land 43,—of slaves 152
 salt 135
 salutation, attitude of (*añjali mudrā*) 171
 salvation 59, 143
salwan (*salawan*, couch) 69, 106
Salwañ (the Salween River) iv, 4, 36, 37
 Salween, trans.—37
Sālini 176, 177
sāmī (iron) 135, 136
Sāma 66
sāmā (*sāmā*, doctor of medicine) 39, 146 n. 9
sāmādhi (*sāmāthi*, self-possession) 92, 107-8,—*mudrā* (*dyānā mudrā*, attitude of meditation) 171
sāmañera (*sāmāniy*, *kuirā*, deacon, novice) 94, 95
sāmantabhañdrā 47, 100
Samantakumitham 69, 96, 118
Samantapicañ 46
sāriaryā (the Order) 94
sāmbyāñ (see *sāmpyāñ*)
sāmīghāti (dukut, outer garment) 105 n. 1
Samantasū 19
samaruiw (?staircase) 140, 141
Sameikshe 5 n. 3
sāmī (*sāmī*, daughter) 143, 146, 149,—*apluiw-nay* (young unmarried daughter) 156
sāmīyama (daughter) 144
sāmīkosañ (locksmith) 161
sāmīlyacīn (posterior) 155
sāmīlhū (betel leaf) 103
 Samon 53
sāmparā (lime) 186
sāmiphama (*sāmiphama*, judge) 21, 42, 44, 49, 87, 89, 90
sāmīphlū (mat) 106
sāmīput (rice food) 101, 131, 132, 155,—*khyak kywan* (slaves who cook rice) 101, 155,—*lay* 101,—*wat* (duty to cook rice) 155
sāmpyāñ (*sāmbyāñ*, minister) 21, 24, 39, 40, 41, 79, 108, 121, 182, 183, *tryā*—41, 90
sāmīsāra (chain of rebirths) 5, 15, 22, 59, 61, 71, 73, 112
Sāmī Tra Uil 17 n. 3

samuit 110
Samyuttanikāya 85 n. 7
sañ (association) 43, 93, 94, 95, 123
sañ lay (wet rice cultivation) 158
sāñ phway (?cushion maker) 160
sañarañ (see also *taw mlat krī*) 94, 95
sañariy (*sañaryā*, the Order) 8, 93, 95
Sāñchī 179
sandalwood (*tancikū*, *santalum album*) 129, 144, 186,—monastery 2
Sāñdhivisodhana *ṭikā* 81
sandstone relief 177
sañgkā (assembly, multitude, the Order) 43, 58, 75, 77, 91, 93, 94, 102, 104, 108, 110, 131, 132, 154, 156, *rahan* — 92, *skhin* — 91, *taw klon* — 91, — *thera* (the Elder) 33, 34, 95, 96, 116, 117, 125
sañghāti (*sañkan*, outer garment) 104, 105
sañghilka (*sañghika*, the property of all monks) 106,—*nwā* (cattle of the monks) 99,—*uccā* (fund of the monks) 98
sañiuwkūy (*kamikaw*, ironwood) 186
sañkan (*sañghāti*, outer garment) 69, 104, 160, *wākhoñ* — 106, *wākhwat* — 106, *wāohuñ* — 106
Sāñkrammasū 97, 98, 123
sañkrān 55
sañkri (chief of monks, president of an association) 43, 44; 46, 85, 94, 95, 101, 143, 144, 150, 161, *klon* — (head of the monastery) 43, *tuiñ* — (?chief surveyor) 43
sañlyāñ (vice-president) 43, 44, 94, 95, 143, 144, 161
sañphama (see *sañphama*)
sañphawchip (seaport) 152
sañphun (*sañpūn*, blackboard) 83, 107
Sanpoñ 46, 186
sañ:puñ (*antaravāsaka*, lower garment) 105, 160
sañput (almsfood) 84
sañryari (palanquin) 106,—*sañ* (palanquin bearer) 69, 161
Sāñsakruit (Sanskrit) 4, 5, 11, 15, 41, 53, 63, 77, 78, 92,—inscription 189
santā (coral) 130, 131
santalum album (sandal wood, *tancikū*) 186
sañthun (razor) 106
Sāñthway (Thindwe, *Takoñ*, Tagaung) 1, 33, 34,—*Mroñ* (Thindwe Canal) 35 n. 9, 43
santiy (bowl) 106
Sāñton 37, 121,—*kharuin* 98
santuary 56
sāñwā (ox for beef) 121
Sao Shwe Thaike 155 n. 3
sāphuiw (price of meat) 45, 121, 122
sapit (almsbowl) 69, 107, 123
sapok (child born into slave community) 146
sappi (clarified butter) 104 n. 8
Sarabha gate 1
Sarabhi 154
sarañasila 56
Saravati 178
sariradhātu (bodily relics) 128, 129, 130, 131
Sāriputra (*Sariputta*) 46, 58, 92, 166
sāriñika (bodily relics) 165
Sariy 97, 100
Sariyaccaya 36
Sāñnāth 177, 178, 179 n. 4
saro sañ (?violinist) 68, 160
sarwat (mortar) 135, 136
sōsanā (the Religion) 51, 59, 60, 61, 92, 130, 131, 132
sāsanāpuñ (Chief of the Religion) 116, 117
Sāsanāvarisa 2 n. 1, 51
satañ (sabbath day, self restraint) 84, 107-8, 148,—*kywat* (the end of the Lent) 105,—*sañ* (*upāsaka*, a pious man) 97, 98, *cane* — *sañ* (people who keep sabbath on Saturdays) 97, 109,—*tañkup* (shed for lay devotees) 111
Satipatthāna *Sutta* 85
Saturday, sabbath on (*cane satañsañ*) 109
Satyā (*Sattyā*) 18, 21, 122, 143, 144
satthe *sūkrway* (richman) 111
Sattikāñ, Princess 18, 19,—inscription 122
Satiuw, King 62
sāvaka (disciple) 92
Saw (*Saw Kantū*, Thak) 1, 121, 122
Saw, Princess 78, Queen—(*Tarukply*) 73, (*N. Uccanā*) 80
Sawyun, Prince 10
Sawlhwawin inscription 67
Sawlhwawun inscription 184
Sawlu, King 7, 10, 13
Sawmiñha inscription 16

sawyer 139
 Saxon 10
 Sayadaw, Bhamo 78
sāyokkyā (son) 144
 Saya Thein 78
Sayon 17, 54, *Klok* —116
 scenes, fighting 184, hunting—184, palace—175,—from the *Jātaka* 141, 189,—of the Buddha's life 176, 177
 scholar iii, 70, 78, 189, 190,—ship 96
 school building (*cāsañ tuik*) 96, 97, 126, new—189
 scion 35
 Scott, Sir George 38, 39, 163
 scribe 63, 83, 189,—'s fee 140
 script 7, 10, 65, 177, 185, 189, *Brāhmañ*—184, 188, 189, Burmese—189, Mon-Burmese—176, 184, 185, *Nāgarī*—184, 188, south Indian—166, 168, 189
 scriptural texts, Buddhist 77
 scripture 112, Buddhist—9, 49
 sculptor 151
 sculpture 57, 178
se (*sī*, liquor) 121
 sea, proximity to the 152
 seal (*tanchip*) 4, 5, 6, 88, 166, flower—(*tanchip pan*) 89,—of *Aniruddha* 51, 189
 seasons, three (*ratu* 3 *pā*) 107-8
 seat of learning 118
 Second World War 191
 secretary (*atwañruy, cāriy*) 42, 49, 69
 sect, Ari iv, v, 39, different—'s of the Order 120
 section (*dhammakhandha, nipāta*) 79, 80 n. 9
 security against old age and inability 153
 self-dedication as slave 145
 self-denials 143
 self-possession (*samādhi*) 107-8
 self-restraint (*satai*) 107-8
 Semeikshe 184
 semi-desert waste 3
samisāra 170
senāpati (Commander-in-Chief) 72
senāsanām (bedding, lodging) 104 n. 3, 107
 senior monk (*thera*) 84, 93, 96, 100, 110, 117, 183,—officer 49
 sense, ethnic 157, religious—78
 sentiments, nationalistic 35
 sepulchral monument (*cetiya*) 165
 serenity (sitting cross-legged, *paryāñkasana*) 172
 serious offence 44
 sermon 84, first—(*tryā û, dhammacakka*) 123, 176, 177, 178, 179 n. 4
 servant (see also *kywan, alup aklwañ*) 131, 132, domestic—145,—'s of the king (*marace*) 42
 service 99, 126, 150, active—40, civil—40, 90, menial—143, military—40, ordination—(*rahan mū*) 94, 116 n. 9, specialized—159
 sesamum (*nham*) 83, 102, 103, 186
Sesbania aegyptiaca (*yasakleñ*) 186
 settlement 37, Indian—6, slaves given in—of debts 146
 Sewell, Dr 9
 Shaivaita deity 58
 Shahtut pagoda 176
 Shan 40, 55, 158,—Yun 6
 shape of the Buddha's eye 169,—of the votive tablets 168
 share the merit 13, 15, 22, 61
 shed, long (*tañkup rhañ*) 49,—for monks 144
 shell-lime 103
 shelter 109, food and—96
 Shih-ku's gloss 3
 Shinbinbodhi inscription 29
 Shin Māle (*Mālañ, Māleyya, Malaya Mahādeva Thera*) 85, 86
Skhiñ Muntoñ 45
Skhin Stlakumā 46
 Shorto, H. L. 41 n. 6
 Shrine 126, 127, 141
 Shwe Baw 88 n. 4
 Shwebo 52, 121, 122, 123, 124
 Shwegu inscription 140,—pagoda 140
 Shwegugyi pagoda 11, 70
 Shweli 5, 165
 Shwezandaw inscription 8, 79,—pagoda 5, 65
 Shwezayān pagoda 57, 184
 Shwezigon inscription 2, 8, 54, 58, 70, 115, 149,—pagoda (*Jayabhūmi* of *Thiluñ Man*) 7, 55, 65, 67
Shyan Mālai Pwai 86,—watthu 86

Siam 6 n. 2, 41, 124
 Siamese 3, 41 n. 6—chronicles 6 n. 2
si cap mrañ nhami (*sabbāññutaññāya*, omniscience) 72
 sick (*masā*) 77, provisions for old or—slaves 162
 siege 35
Sihasū 35
Sihavikrama, King 2, 182
Sikhara (*kwanñthōñ*, pinnacle) 169, 176, 179, 188
sikhrāñ sañ (singer) 69, 160
sikhwāñ (cucumber, *Cucumis sativus*) 186
Silakkhandha 80 n. 6, 82
Silakumā, *Skhiñ* 46
Silavamī iii, 2
 silver (*nyu*) 68, 74, 79, 83, 98, 100, 107, 121, 127, 128, 138, 139, 140, 144, 151, 199, pure—(*nyu pyan*) 44, 151,—reliquary 168, 182
sīma (*sim*, ordination hall) 4 n. 6, 97, 110, 111, 130, 156
simhāsana (Lion Throne) 73 n. 1
si mrañ nhami, *cap* 73 n. 1
 singer (*sikhrāñ sañ*) 69, 153
Singhapati, Prince 21, 23, 35, 97, 153
Singhapicāñ, Prince (*Sinhhapicāñ*) 19, 20, 40, 149, 150
Singhapikramī, Prince 23, 48, 150
Singhasūra, Prince (*Singhasū*) 40, 61, 68, 70, 87, 119, 143
 singing (*gīta*) 93, 160
Singu 35
 Sinhalese 18, 66, 86 n. 2, 118, 119, 120, 122, 126,—chronicle 12, 51, 119,—invasion iv, 12, the—Order iv,—suzerain 12,—*thera* 86,—works 81
Sinkhuih (*Larikā*, Ceylon) 118
siphāñ (sycamore fig) 186
sipriy (rose apple tree) 186
Siri Aniruddhadeva, King (see also *Aniruddha*) 5
Siridhammarājakuru 62
Siridhammasoka (*Asoka*), King 61
Siri Indrapicāñ 21
Sirikassapa 62
Sirisinghabodhi, King 7
Siri Tribhavanādityapavaradhammarāja (*Mañ Lulañ*, Conac), King 35
Siriyadhanā, Prince 23, 48, 150
siryak (mango) 186
 site 138,—for a religious establishment 127
 sitting at ease (one leg pendant, *lālitāsana*) 172,—Buddha 122, 168, 177,—cross-legged (serenity, *paryāñkasana*) 172,—in the prayer attitude (one knee raised and the foot locked in the bend of the other, *virāsana*) 173,—with right knee raised (royal ease, *rājalīlāsana*) 172
 situation, uneasy political 152
sirūy (Karen potato) 186
si, twot (*Ficus hispida*) 186
Sīva 57, 166,—*liñga* 166
 six elephant volumes 190, 191
siy uiw khak (pots of liquor) 121,—*masok* (teetotaller) 48,—*phuñw* (price of liquor) 45, 121, 122
skhiñ 59, 82, 92, 99, 101, 102, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 116, 117, 129, 130, 131, 132, 144, 147, 149, 155,—*ariya* 111,—*Muntoñ* 46,—*Nai* 62,—*sañghā* 91,—*Upacāñ* 45, *taw*—91
 skilled artists 153
 skirmish 31
 slave (*kywan*) 3, 16, 20, 21, 34, 67, 69, 73, 141, 150, 152, 155, 158, 160, 161,—acquired through purchase 148,—as heritable estates 146,—community 146, 161,—family 145,—given in exchange of a boat 150,—given in exchange of a horse 151,—given in exchange of an elephant 151,—given in exchange of ten areca palms 151,—given in settlement of debts 146, 148,—of the royal household (*kywan taw*, *mañ īmkri sañ*) 156,—owner 153, 154,—parents 125, 153,—population 157, 158,—raids 145, 149, 161,—trade 145, 148, 150,—village (*kywan rwāñ*) 146, 161,—s were allowed to stay at their own locality and follow their own professions 152,—wife (*kuw lup*) 156, 162,—s who cooked rice (*saniput khyak kywan*, *wat khyak kywan*) 153,—s who were skilled artists 153,—woman 151, army of—s 159, Burmese—120, 152, debtor—153, 161, dedication

of one's own children as—s 145, dedication of—s 17, 18, 23, 48, 59, 68, 74, 83, 92, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 104, 108, 109, 111, 118, 119, 120, 122, 125, 126, 127, 140, 141, 144, 146, 147, 150 151, 152, 154, 156, 157, 158, dispute for ownership of—146, domestic—(*im kywan*) 151, 162, duties of—99, 155, 156, hereditary—145, 161, household—(*imthon-kywan*) 23, 108, Indian—151, 152, inherited—(*amuy kywan*) 146, list of—s 125, 145, 152, 154, 156, 157, lot of—s 152, male—150, *Mani sak*—s 152, monastery—(*kloī kywan*) 99, 146, 162, ownership of—87, 161, Pagan—124, pagoda—(*purhā kywan*) 145, 152, 162, position of—s 143, price of—(*kywan phuiw*) 150, 151, provisions for old or sick—162, purchase of—151, redemption of—161, runaway—152, 161, sale of children as—s 145, sale of—s 152, self dedication as—145, voluntary—143, 145, 161, war captive—149, 161

slavery 145, 149, 161, abolition of—155 n. 1. Pagan—152, redemption from—145, released from—151, 153, 154, 155, 161, —to appetite (*ramimak kywan*) 143

slender neck 169

slim waist 169

smā (see *samā*)

smiling lips 169, 176

snakē demon 58

soap acacia (*kamponi*) 185

soapstone pencil (steatite; *karīkuchān*) 83

social history iii, v, — life 143, — outcasts 145, 162.—status 145

solar race (*ādicicavatīsa*) 8

solid-pagoda 128, 129, 141

solitude 96 n. 11

soldier 33, 34

Somkingyi 176

son (*sāyokkyā*) 144

Sōra 51

sotāpattimago 94 n. 12

soul (*nam*) 112

Southeast Asia 64, 189

sources, epigraphic 186

south, expansion north and—51,—India 7, —Indian script 166, 168, 189,—queen 17 n. 1

souvenir 165

spade (*tarwāi*) 106

special duty 155,—record 44,—service 159

spelling 189, Burmese—189, modernisation of—190, 192

spinner (*khraññay sañ*) 106

spire (*athwat*) 128, 129, 160

spired monastery 97

spirits for monks, fermented 124

spiritual adviser 54, — revolution 143,—teacher 115

spittoon (*bratuīw, pratuiw*) 59, 69, 107

spoils of war 150

spoonerism 77, 163 n. 1

spot, find 5, 51, 166, 189

spreading rays 169,—tail 169

squires (*sūnayto*) 42

square, masonry 163,—wall (*tantuin* 4 *myaknā*) 127

śravaka (*sāvaka*, disciple) 178, 187

Śrāvasti, Great Miracle at (*yamaka prātihārya*) 174

Sri Bā: Cho 182

Sri Bajrās (Bodh Gaya) 55

Sri Bajrādharanatribhūpati, King (Sawlu) 7

Sri Candra (*Sri Jandra*) 182

Sri Dharmika 33

Sri Mahā Sālini 176, 183

Sri Nālandāya 182

Sri Prabhudevi 182

Sri Prabhavarman 182

Sri Tribhavanadityayadhammarājajayasūra, King (*Uccanā*) 29

Sri Tribhavanadityayapavaradhammarāja, King (*Nātoñmyā*) 20, 22, 70, (*Tarukply*) 30, 38, 115

Sri Tribhavanadityayapavarapāñditakhamma-rāja 27

Sri Tribhuvanādityayadhammarāja, King (*Thiluiñ Māñ*) 8, 15, 70, 78

Sri Tribhuvanādityayadhammarājārājadhirājaparamisvarabalaçakkravār, King (*Thiluiñ Māñ*) 8

Sri Tribhuvanādityayapavaradhammarāja, King (*Cañsū I*) 11, 54, 55

Sri Tribhuvanādityayapavaradhammarājadhirājadānpati, King (*Narasiñgha Uccanā*) 13, 21, 70

Srikṣetra 1, 2, 5, 8, 52, 53, 62, 178, 182, 188, 189
 staff, library 90, 118,—and funds 84
 staircase (?*samaruiw*) 141 n. 1
stān (piety, sabbath) 71, 74, 92, 130, 132
 standard of education 41
 standing Buddha (*purhā ryap*) 102, 174, 177, —monks 168
 standard land measure 163,—rate of redemption from slavery 151
 stanza, famous 166, 169
 state 39, chief of—31,—affairs 34
 statement 124
 statesman-like 10
 statue 57, 58, 63, 64, 79, portrait—67, stone —165, wooden—165
 status, official 117, social—145, 162
 steatite (*kamīkuchān*, soapstone pencil) 83, 179
 steed 16
 stepping left (*ālidhāsana*, heroism) 172,—right (*pratyāliqhāsana*, displeasure) 172
 stern face 169
 stone, carvers of 139, hewers of—139, precious metal and—s 160, Webu—(micaschist) 190,—inscription (*klokcā*) 155, —pillar 46,—statue 165
 store 102,—house (*kappiyakuṭi*) 111, 130, 141
 stories, five hundred (*jātī nā ryā*, 547, *Jātaka*) 130, 131, life—165,—of the coming of Buddhism to Ceylon 119
 strategic point 43
 streamer (*tanikhwan*) 107, 169
strychnos (*khapon*) 186
 stucco (*aṇkatiy*) 129
 student (*cāsañ*) 83, 96, 97, 100, 118, 127
 study group 126, historical—165
 Studies, Department of Oriental 191
 stupa 5, 169, 178, 179, 188, miniature stupa 144
 stupidity (*amuik*) 112
 style, architectural 66,—of old Burmese 189, —of writing 15, 166
 stylus 83
Subhūticanda 24, 119, 120, 122
 subject 46
 subjugation of *Nālāgiri* 176, 177
 submission 31

suburb, headman of the (*kliy sūkrī*) 42
 succession 47, law of—23,—dispute 150
 success, diplomatic 126,—in a law suit (*tryā oī*) 88
 successor 13, 29, 149
sūci (needle) 106 n. 2
 suckling 143
Sudhammāh 183
Sudhammā charātoau 116
Suddhammapura 58
Sudhammarac, Prince 10
 sugar cane (*kram*) 185
sukhamīn (wiseman) 39, 46, 47, 96, 98, 117, 150
 Sukhodaya 124
 suit 98, civil—42, law—13, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 77, 87, 88, 89, 90, 100, 146, 148
Sujāta 62
sūkrī (headman) 161, *cac*—(general) 40, *khuiw*—(judge of theft cases) 42, 90, *ki*—(master of the ganaries) 42, *kliy*—(headman of the suburb) 42, *lawkā*—(coxswain) 88, *mrañ*—(cavalry officer) 42, *mruīw*—(fort commandant) 42, *puil*—(general) 42, 122, *rwā*—(village headman) 42, 100, *tryā*—(judge) 42, 90, *tuik*—(provincial officer) 42, *tuiñ*—(land officer) 48, 89
sukrway (richman) 74, 98—*ma* (richwoman) 68
 Sulamani inscription 19
Sūlāphirac 18
sumibēñ (see also *sañpyan*) 41
Sumedha 183, 187
Sumedhapāṇḍita Jātaka 65
Sumīlūla, Queen (*Uccanā*) 29, 119, 132, 144
 sun 178, 179, Lord of the — 58
Sunāparanta 2
Sūhayto (squires) 39, 42
Sung shih 2
Sunū 146
 super celestial king 68
 supervisor 153
Supharac 109, 151
 suppliers of food 158
 supply, food 153
 support, popular 126
 Supreme King (*Mañkrī*) 4
 suppression of rebellion iv, 115, 149,—of

crime iv,—of heretics iv
Sūriyavikrama, King 2, 182
 Survey of Burma, Department of the Archaeological 191
 surveyor, revenue (*pay tuiñ*) 42
Surokha 98
Susuttaki, Prince (Hsüeh-hsüeh-ti-chin) 33, 34
sūtaukon (holy man) 94
sutaw (good people) 130, 132
Sutta 56, 81
suttantapiñaka 80 n. 6, 82, 85 n. 7, 86
Suttasāṅgaha 80 n. 1
Suvaññabhumī 51
Suvaññapaccaya (*Suvaññapijāñ*) 42, 82
suwaññalip (Gold Address) 32
 suzerain, Sinhalese 12
 suzerainty, Mongol 35, Pagan—36
swan (cast) 129, 130, 131, 140, 141
swastika 179
 Swe, U 132 n. 1
 sweatmeats 159
 sweeping the compound (*tanlañ mrak*) 99
 sweet liquor from palm juice (*yamimakā aphyaw*) 123
Syāti 157
syāti 33, 94, 95, 98, 100, 126—*Disāprāmuk* 50
 sycamore fig (*siphān*) 186
 sycophants 39
 symbols 37, Brahmanical—166

T

tā (7 cubits) 163
 Tabayin (*Thipesyāñ*) 100, 121
 table, dynastic 13
 tablet 5, 169, 170, 174, 175, 177, 178, 179, 182, 184, 187, clay—165, 166, date of the—166, different shapes of the—168, terra cotta votive—189, votive—4, 5, 165, 188
tacāñsañ (adzer, planer) 136, 159
 Tadagale 175
 Tada-U 137
 Tagaung (*Saṅtway Prañ*, *Takon*) 32, 33, 34, 40
 tail, spreading 169
 Tainggyut inscription 57
 Taiping river 31

T'ai-tu 33 n. 2
takai (*tarñkai*, back part of the seat) 169, 179
Tākakri 96
Takon (see also Tagaung) 4, 37, 88, hero of —battle 117
Taktaumū, King 35
talā (trough) 46, 80, 83, 111, 121, 130, 132
Tala (Dala) 30, 175
Talaing 16, 115 n. 8
talāñ 93
Talapayāñ Mañ, King (*Uccanāñ*) 29, 30, 100
Tala sukri, King (Conac) 35
taleñ (pomegranate) 186
 tales 66
Tali 31
Taluiñ monk 46,—*rwāmā* 53, —*sare* 37
Tāmalin 103 n. 13, 119
tamarind (*mañklañ*) 186
Tambadipa (*Tampratik*) 2, 3, 4, 34
tarñkai (*takai*, back part of the seat) 169, 179
tarñkhā (door) 127, 135, 136, *prañ*—(city gate) 122,—*khum* door threshold 135, 137
tarñkhwan (steamer) 107
tarñmyakkliy (refuse) 156
Tampratik (see also *Tambadipa*)
taruiñ (measure for land) 163
Tamut 37
tañ (basket) 101, 135, 136
tanak (measure for oil) 102, 135, 136
tanākū (sandalwood, *santalum album*) 129, 130, 131, 186,—*ni* (red sandalwood) 130, 131
tanchā (ornament) 130, 131
tanchip (seal) 88,—*pan* (flower seal) 89
tanchōñ (chandeliérs) 107, 129, 130, 131, (rest house) 111, 130, 132
Tachorinun: 105
tançulyāñ 186
tançlay (molasses) 104
 Tatinganwe, King iii
tan (*kan*) 9, 45, 111, 123
tanñkup (shed) 49, *rañy*—(earth pavilion) 155,—*rhañ* (1. sq. red) 49
tankyat (inner gate) 69, 105, 160

tañkyat sañ (?canopy maker) 159
tanlañ (compound) 131, 132, 155,—*mrak* (sweeping the compound) 99
Tanluñ 44
Tamhwan 133, 135
tanmiprok 160
 Tantric Buddhism iv, 124
tantuñ (enclosure wall) 127, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 139, 140, 141,—*mikā* (fire-proof wall) 127,—*nhacthap* (double enclosure wall) 127,—4 *mvaknha* (rectangular or square wall) 127
Tapano hell 28
tapassin (*tapasvin*, *tape*, *sā*, disciple) 92
Taplaksā 37
taquiw (horn) 160
Tarā 178
 Tarokpyemin, King (see also *Tarukpily*) 13
Taruk (?Mongols) 30, 33,—army 35, 40,—king 4, 34,—*prañ* 35
Tarukpily, King iv, 13, 21, 22, 29, 30, 35, 36, 38, 39, 42, 47, 48, 72, 73, 74, 78, 80, 87, 92, 97, 100, 119, 122, 126, 144, 146, 158, assassination of—126
tarwai (spade) 106
Tathāgata 166
Tathāgatuppatti 81
 Tatkale pagoda inscription 189
Taitadesa 3
tatuñ klok (monolith) 135, 136
 Taundwin, Governor of 81 n. 3
 Taungbi 189
 Taungdwingyi 182
 Taungsun 9 n. 2
 Taungthu 158
 Taungthugyimin, King 4 n. 6
Tāyatimisā, descent from 176, 177
 Tavoy (*Tawai*, *Taway*) 36, 37, 41, 149, 150, governor of—183
 Tayopian 186
tawkloñ (*āraññavāsi*, forest monastery) 108, 120, 124, 125,—*sañghā* (monk of the forest monastery) 91
Tawli 154
taw mlat kri (forest dweller) 91, 120, 124
 Taw Sein Ko 63, 190, 191
taw skhiñ (forest dweller) 91
taw lhan (rebel) 143
taw thwak (renunciation, monk who was once married) 96
 tax, exemption from 101
 taxation 47, 100
tāyakā (*dāyaka*, donor) 108
 Taydu (*Taytu*, Mongol capital) 33, 34, 50
 Tayokpye, King (see also *Tarukpily*) iv
 Taywindaung 1
Tda:bā 182
 tea, pickled (*lbhak*) 44, 45, 138, 139
 teaching 77, keynote of the Buddha's—166, religious—84
 teacher (*acāriya*, *chryā*) 95, 96, 100, 119, 145, king's—(*mani chryā*) 110, 115, 116, 119, 120, spiritual—115
 teaching 77, keynote of the Buddha's—166, religious—84,—s of *Gotama* 84
 teetotaller (*stymasok*) 48
tela (oil) 104 n. 8
 temple 3, 4, 16, 57, 63, Ananda — 189, spire of—160,—builders 160
 Temple, R. C. 131 n. 3, 178
 temporal lord 63
 Tenasserim 189, rebellion at—115, 116
 tender grass and clear water (*mraknu riy krañ*) 154
 tenets of the *Arañ* 126
 tenure 45
Terminalia beherica (*sacchim*, *myrobalan*) 186
Terminalia chebula (*kra*, *klü*) 185
 terms, Indian philosophical 77
 terracotta plaque 41,—votive tablet 4, 5, 189
 texts, Buddhist scriptural 77
 Thai influence 175
 Thailand 175, votive tablets of—178
 Thaks (*Saw Kantū*) 1
 Thaktawshe, King iii
 Thamahti (*Samati*) 120 n. 9
 thamaing iii
thāmanā (*dhāmanā*, enshrinement) 130, 131
thamqñ (cooked rice) 123,—*khyak* (cook) 159,—*phuiv* (price of cooked rice) 45, 122,—*sañ* (cook) 69, 158, 159, *nat*—(food of the *deva*) 96 n. 6
 Thambula, Queen (*Thiluñ Mañ*) 9, 10
 Thamoddarit, King 1
Thamipā 96 n. 6
than (firewood) 104,—*khui* (chopping firewood) 99,—*sañ* (wood cutter) 161
 than (*borassus flabellifer*, palmyra palm) 83,

130, 131, 144, 186,—*rwakca* (record on palmleaf) 44
Thani 146
thāpanā (enshrinement) 129, 140
Tharaba Gate inscription 9
thatch (*sac* *ñay*) 108, — roofed monastery (*sacñaymuñ kloñ*) 129
thathanabaing (the Primate) 101 n. 2
Thaton 51, 52, 57, 184, conquest of—6, 51, 53, king of—115
thawpat (clarified butter) 99, 104, 158,—*ki* (butter store) 104, 158
thawpiy (unclarified butter) 99, 104, 158
Thazi 184
theft case (*khuiw* *tryā*) 42, 77, 87, 90, 124, elephant — (*chāñ khuiw*) 97
Thein, Saya 78
theory 124
thera (the Elder) 1, 31, 62, 84, 93, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 101, 103, 106, 107, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 122, 123, 128, 130, 132, 182, 183, 184, 185, *mahā* — 95, *sañghā* — 95,—*vāda* iv, 51, 52, 115
Thet 158
Thetsö inscription 12
thi (umbrella) 128, 129, 130, 131
Thibaw, King 38
thic ā *thic* ā (Well done!) 10
thief 27, 47, edict against thieves iv, 46, 88 n.
Thiluñ Mañ, King 3, 4, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 12, 13, 36, 41, 52, 54, 58, 61, 65, 67, 70, 77, 78, 79, 87, 115, 116, 149, 170, 176, 178, 183, 187, 188, 189,—*Syañ* 8
thin, *chañ* (mahout) 89, 158, *chit*—(goatherd) 158, *klway* — (buffalo herd) 158, *nwā*— (cow herd) 158, *wanipay*—158
Thindwe canal (*Sañhway Mroñ*) 35 n. 9, 43
Thinganyon pagoda 18
things of everyday use 107
Thipesyañ (Tabayin) 100, 121
thi sañ (umbrella maker) 69, 159
Thomman, Th. H. 66 n. 6
thought, Burmese way of life and 143, Burmese political—184, indigenous—126
Three Gems (*Ratanāsumi:pā:*) 30, 34, 58, 75, 91, 93, 98, 99,—Heaps of Law (*Piñaka sumipuri*) 130, 132, — restrictions 120
throne iii, 10, 11, 16, 19, 23n. 1, 30, 150, 174, 179, 182, 188, accession to the— (*rhuy ton tak*) 111, 115 n. 8, 120, 158, the Buddha's—166, claim to the—149, Diamond—(*Vairāsana*) 174, double— (*padmā-vajrasana*) 174, Lion—(*Simhāsana*) 174, Lotus—(*Padmāsana*) 5, 178, Pagan—iv, 35, 149,—of law 97
throwing *parisakū* 105 n. 10
Thunbergia laurifolia (*nwegyo*, *pyā noy*) 186
thunphū (chunam phial) 103, 135, 136
Thūpavārīsa 81
thuy taw (royal order) 158
ti (*Diospyros Burmanica*) 186
Tibetan 63
tical 43, 68, 79, 83, 98, 100, 121, 122, 127, 128, 139, 140, 150, 151
ticivaramī three robes 106 n. 2
tiers 169
tiñkā 84, *Mahāthera*—81, *Mahāvāramāñjūsā*—81, *Nyāsa* — 81, *Sandīnivisodhana* — 81
Tilomañguir pagoda (*Bāruci*) 17, 18, 20 n. 3
timber 138,—for roofing 128
times, medieval 49, modern—162, Pyu—168
Tin, Pagan U 124
Tipiñaka 6, 77, 78, 79, 84, 90, 102, 111, 115, 118, copying the — 9, 139, 140
Tippera 12 n. 7
tiracchāna 28
Tiras 183, 187
Tircul (Pyu) 9
title 63, hereditary—38, regnal—187
toddy 34, 45, 111, dedication of—palms 144
toleration, religious iv, 55, 75
ton (19·05 inches) 163, *Turāñ* — 110
Tonñi 68, 157
Tonñphalañsañ, Queen (*Cañsū* II) 16, 17
Tonñplun 17, 150
tooth-relic 7
torso 169
torture 27, 28, 46
touching earth, attitude of (*bhūmisparśa-mudrā*) 171
tour, inspection 49
Tavoy, governor of 187
town 49
township 184

trade 12, slave—145, 148, 150, slaves allowed to carry on with their 'own—or profession 152

tradition 6, 12, 24, 51, 125, 126; oral—124

traditional belief v

Trailokhūbhūbil pagoda (*Bārucī*) 17, 20

tranquility, peace and 46

transaction 97, 122, business—98, 100, land—43, 45, 98, 121, 125

transcription 190, 191

transfer of ownership 146,—of property 111

transition period 7, 10, 15, 36, 53

translation 69, 75, 88 n. 4, 191

transliteration ii, 1 n. 1

transport, means of 106

transportation 190

trans-Salween 37

traveller king 12

tray (*lañpan*) 69, 107, 138, 139, offerings on—179

Trāyā 183

treasures 68

treasury, royal 39

treatment, medical 104

tree 186, 189, banyan—74, wish—(*patañsā*) 62

trial 88,—by ordeal 89

tribes, frontier 31

tribhāṅga (*trīvāṅga*—a figure with at least three bends in the body) 174

Tribhuvanādityadhammarāja, King (*Thiluīn Mañi*) 183, 187

Tribhuvanādityayavaradhammarāja, King (*Cañsū I*) 183, 187

Tribhuvanādityapavaradhammarāja, King (*Cañsū II*) 183, 184

tribute 31, 34

trident 57

Trilokavatamisakā, Queen (*Thiluīn Mai*) 10, 170, 178, 183, 187

Triyā 183, 184, 187

troops 43

troubles, political 126

trough (*talā*) 80, 83, 111, 121

truce 34

trumpet (*ñhañ*) 71

trumpeter (*ñhañ sañ*) 69

trustee 122

truth (*saccā*) 73, 74

tryā 42, 58, 75, 77, 78, 82, 84, 86, 87, 89, 90, 91, 130, 131, 132, 154, 155, *aklwat*—(attainment of nirvana) 77, 85, *atāñ*—(court of appeal) 87, *atañ may so*—(law of impermanence) 77, *buñh*—(lower court) 87, 90, *khuiw*—(theft case) 77, 87, 89, 90, *kloñ akliw*—(merits of building a monastery) 108, 109, *—apumi* (heap of law) 78, *—chāñ* (administer law) 90, *—chu* (reward for preaching the Law) 84, *—haw* (preaching the Law) 84, 130, 132, *—im* (Hall of Law) 85, *—kloñ* (Hall of Law) 85, 108 n. 5, *—kwan sāyā* (Pleasant Hall of Justice) 87, *—mañi* (just king) 78, 90, *—nā* (listening the sermon) 84, 130, 132, *—oñ* (success in a law suit) 88, *—panlāñ* (the Throne of Law) 85, 130, 132, *—sāñipyāñ* (judge) 41, 90, *—sāñiphama* (judge) 90, *—sūkri* (judge) 42, 90, *—ū* (First Sermon, *Dhammacakka*) 123, *—wat* (duty towards the Law) 83, *—yūhāñ* (defeat in a law suit) 88

Tryā Mwan 154

Tryāphyā, Prince 21, 23, 97, 153

trā (protector, defender) 78

tū (nephew) 143, 144

tūk (second home of the Burmans) 37, 121 n. 2, 123, *cāsañ*—(educational institute) 83, 126, *piñaka*—(building to keep the works of Law, library) 130, *—ram* (walls of the building) 135, 136, *—sūkri* (provincial officer) 42

tūñ, *pay* (revenue surveyor) 42, *pwat*—(polished pillar) 130, *—sañ* 18, 42, *—sañkri* 43, *—sūkri* (Land Officer) 43, 89

Tuiñmalup 46

tulik (*dirlac*, *dirlec*, assembly hall) 130

Tun Nyein, U 191

Turañ, Mt. 4 n. 6, 101, 110

turban 138, 139

turner (*panpwat*) 29, 30, 69,—'s quarter (*panpwat rap*) 126

tutor (*upajjhāya*) 46, 116 n. 9

tuyañ 105, 160

Twañ:sai: Mahā Cañsū (Twinthin Maha Sithu) iii, 190

twin miracle (*yamaka prātiñārya*) 175

type, archaic 63, lion—169, Mon—6, 16,—of building 110,—of monastery 109

U

uccā (uteā, property) 149
Uccadeva 20
Uccanā, King (*Cañsū* III) iv, 13, 20, 22, 29,
 30, 69, 96, 100, 118, 132, 144, (*Nātorā-*
myā) 110, (*Tarukpily*) 38
Uccanātha 20
uchak (front extension) 130, 133, 134
Uchokpan (*Vatamsikā*), Queen (*Cañsū* II) 16,
 18, 19, 145, 146, 147
uddissana (a thing made sacred by dedica-
 tion) 165
U Kalā iii
Uiw and its variants used as prefix to a
 woman's name 125
Uiw Chi Tāw 125,—*Chok Kuiw* 17,—*Chok*
Pan (Queen of *Cañsū* II) 17, 18 n. 7,
 145,—*Kram Khyān Sañ* 148,—*Kram Sañ*
 125,—*Kron* 146,—*Mwan Sañ* 45,—*Nay*
Cwan 155,—*Nuii Sañ* 82 n. 5,—*Pam*
 125,—*Pan Ü Sañ* 110,—*Plañ Cum Sañ*
 147,—*Plañwa Sañ* 68,—*Poñ Sañ* 29, 158,
 —*Si Sañ* 43,—*Thak Plañ Sañ* 18
uiw (pot) 107, *siy* — (pot of liquor) 121,—
thin (potter) 160
uiw, phukhi 156
ūñi (pillow) 69
umbrella (*thī*) 105 n. 10, 128, 129, 177, 179,
 white — 138, — bearer (*thī sañ*) 69,—
 palm (*piy, corypha elata*) 83
ūñ (coconut) 185
uneasy political situation 152
universe 73
university 118,—of Rangoon 191
unrest, general 24
untouchables of India 145
Upacāñ, Skhīn 45
upajjhāya (tutor) 116 n. 9
Upakui 98, 100
upāsakā 97, 98
upasampadā-kammavācā 94 n. 14
Upatissa 81 n. 5
uphway sañ (coiffeur) 161
uposatha 110
Upper Burma 3, 32, 51, 115, annexation of
 —101, religion in—1
upper register (athak caran) 44
upcountry 51

ūrec (aegle marmelos) 185
uri (uncle) 146
urn inscription 2, 182, 189
ūrnā (whorl of hair on the brow) 169
ūshnisha (protuberance on the head) 67,
 168, 169
usurper iv, 13, 19
ut (brick) 121, 127, 129, 130, 131, 132, *klok*
 —(stone brick) 133, 136,—*phuiw* (kiln)
 135, 137,—*sañ* (brick maker) 159
utpala (blue lotus) 179
Uttamā 98
Uttamamati 117
Uttamapharac 155
Uttara 51
Uttar Pradesh 179
uttarāsāṅgo (*kuiwat*, upper garment) 105 n. 1
uyan (garden) 111, 130, 131, 152, 158,—*coñ*
 (watchman at the garden) 158,—*sañ*
 (gardener) 69, 158
Uzana, King (see *Uccanā*) iv, 13.

V

Vācissara 81 n. 4
vādīta (playing instrumental music) 93
Vaishnava 57
Vaisnavīte rituals 9
Vajrapabhāsā 66 n. 2
Vajrābharaṇa, King (see also *Sawlu*) 170,
 183, 187
Vajrāsana, repairing 9, (Diamond Throne)
 174
vara (*purhā*) 63, 64, 91
varanudrā (*vara* *madrā*, attitude of bestow-
 ing gift) 172
variegated cave (*kū prok*) 128,—*Hall* (*kwan*
prok) 100,—*Monastery* (*kloñ prok*) 129,
 —*pagoda* (*puthuiw prok*) 129
Varmana 182
varnish 138
vāsi (razor) 106 n. 2
vassals of Pagan 2
Vasundharā (*Asuntiary*, Great Earth) 112
Vatanisikā (*Uchokpan, Uiw Chok Pan*),
 Queen (*Cañsū* II) 16, 18, 19, 145, 146,
 147
Vat Pā Tēñ 124
Vattasutta 87 n. 4
vattu (wat, objects of offering) 101, 106,

Vimāna — 109 n. 3
 vedas 55
Vedeha 86 n. 2
 vegetable 107, 185
Velāma Jātaka 65
Veluvati, Queen (*Cañsū II*) 16, 18, 19
 verdict 44, 88, 101, 117
 vermillion (*haisapata*) 107
Vessabhu 65
Vessantara (*Pīsamantrā*) 66, 85, 86
 vessel 55, 56
Vibāga 81 n. 13, 189
 vice-president (*sainyānī*) 43
 viceroy (*mahāsamanta*) 24, 41, 49—of *Koñcan* 24
Vidhura 66
Vigna Caijang (*pāy Iwam*) 186
Vijaya Bāhu, King 7
Vikho Sriku (? *Vishnū Sri Gupta*) 182
Vikrama 2, 182
 village 27, 28, 43, 46, 49, 57, 88, 93, 97, 99, 104, 120, 189, elders of the—43, eleven—s 35 n. 6, 98 n. 1, notables of the—154, officers inspecting—s 45, slave—(*kywan rwā*) 146, 161,—headman (*rwā sūkri*) 42, 47, 100
 villagers (*rwā sañ*) 46, 88, 98
 vilva line 8
Vimāna vatthu 109 n. 3
vinaya 56, 80, 81, 82, 101 n. 2, 104, 110, 116, 117, 118, 121, laxity in the observance of the—82, 120, 124, 126
Vinayadharma (*Wineydhuiw*) 91, 96, 117
vipassanāñāna (contemplative knowledge) 52
virāsana (sitting in the prayer attitude, one knee raised and the foot locked in the bend of the other) 173
 virtue 115
Visākha 109 n. 3
Visannarāc 183, 187
Vishnu 8, 20, 55, 57, reincarnation of—(*avatāra*) 8, 54,—city (Peikthanomyo) 182,—*Sri Gupta* (*Vikho Sri Ku*) 182
 viss (*pisā*) 100, 103, 121, 128, 138, 151
Vissuddhinikāya 80
vitarka mudrā (attitude of argument) 172
 vocation 143, 152, 158, 161
 volumes, six elephant 190, 191
 voluntary slave 143, 145, 161

votive tablets 4, 5, 165, 166, 172, 181, 188, 189, different shapes of—168,—of Thailand 178
 vow 45
vrāh (*purhā*) 64
vyākhyāna mudrā (attitude of preaching) 67, 171
vyāla 178, 179, 188

W

Wā (the Lent) 84, 105,—*chui* (beginning of the Lent) 105 n. 11, 106,—*khoñ* (middle of the Lent) 106,—*klwat* (end of the Lent) 106,—*sunila* (three months of the Lent) 105 n. 11

Wa state 45
Wagaru, King 88 n. 4
 wages 135, 138, 139, 151
 waist, slim 169
 walking staff 120
 wall 128, 138, 184, 189, brick—141, circular—127, double enclosure—(*tantuñi nhac thap*) 127, enclosure—(*tantuñi*) 97, 127, fire-proof—(*tantuñi mīkā*) 127, inner—141, rectangular or square—(*tantuñi 4 myakñā*) 127,—painting 124
wampay thin 158

Wanawāsi 62
 war 31, 149,—captives 145, 150, 175,—captive slave 149, 161, First World—191, Second World—191, spoils of—150

Warañtul 17
 warfare, defensive 35
 wasteland 45
wat (duty) 101, (*vatthu*, objects of offering) 101, *sampūt*—(duty to cook rice) 155, *tryā*—(duty towards the Law) 83,—*khyak* (to cook rice for the monks) 98 n. 7, 101, 146, 155, 156,—*lay* (land to cultivate rice for the monks) 101

watchman, night 153
 water and land, lord of 38, 39, 73,—dipper (*riy mhut*) 107, drinking—120, fetching—(*riy khap*) 99, libation—48, 154, pure—(*re cañ*) 112, pouring—(*riy swan*) 12, 112, tender grass and clear—(*mraknu* *riy krañ*) 154,—jug (*karā*) 112, —ordeal (*riy ñup*) 89,—strainer (*parissāvanamī*) 106 n. 2

Waw township 184
 way of life 143, 155
 weakling iv
 weaver (*yan sañ*) 69, 106, Indian—152
 Webu stone (mica-schist) 190
 well (*riy twāñ*) 45, 111, 123
 wet cultivation (*san lay*) 158,—nurse 158
 Wétkyi-in 66
 wheel 179,—of Law 171, 178
 white elephant 38, 177,—umbrella 138
 whitlow, king's 17
 widow (*kmay*) 143, 147, 152, 184
 wife, slave (*kuiw lup*) 156, 162
 wind and rain 28, God of Drought—58,
 —instrument (*narañcra*) 69
 window 130, arched—168
Wineñdhuir (*Vinayadharma*) 91, 117, 118, 119
wira (?eagerness) 148
wisdom (*præña*) 74
wiseman (*sukhamin*) 96
wish-tree (*putañsā*) 62
 witness (*asi amrai, sakse*) 45, 46, 88, 100,
 112, 115, 116, 119, 121, 124, 125, list of
 —es 116, 119 n. 5
 woman judge 42, price of a slave—151
 Wood, W.A.R. 124 n. 6
 wood, planing of 138
 woodcarver 139
 wood carving 129
 wood cutter 157
 wooden board (*klam*) 83,—decoration 140,
 —statue 165
 word, loan 91, Mon—57
 work, canonical 58, 59, exegetical—80 n. 7,
 irrigation—s 35 n. 9, non-canonical
 Pali—86, Sinhalese—81,—of merit 16,
 83,—on *pīlaka* 144
 worker 137, 190, wages of—s 138
 working groups 156
 workmanship 188, Chinese—185
 World War, First 191, Second—191
 worldly pleasure 143
 worship, Naga 9, 57, phallic—57

Wrightia tomentosa (*lakthut*) 186
 writing, art of 6, 53, 140, 189, earliest—in
 Burmese 189, embossed—166, style of
 —15, 166,—material 83, 102
 written Burmese 185,—in reverse 184
 Wundwin 4
 wungyi (minister) 39

Y

Ya (prefix for a girl's name) 156, 157
Ya Krwac 154,—*wāñ* 54
Yachañ (*Yachi*) 33
Yama, King 61
Yamaka 81 n. 13
yamimakā aphyaw (sweet liquor) 102, 123
yamaka prātiñārya (twin miracle) 174, 175
yana, pyā sañ (honeyman) 159
Yanpuiw 152
Yan Sañ 89
yansañ (weaver) 69, 106, 160
Yantaw 120

yap (fan) 107,—*taw sañ* (?Fan Lady) 146
yasaklen (*Sesbania aegyptiaca*) 186
Yāsohddharāh 183, 187
Yassa 183, 184, 185, 187
Yazathingyan 30
 Year of the Religion (*Sāsandā*) 51
 yellow orpiment (*chiythan*) 107
 Yenangyaung 125
 Ye-sin Timur, Prince 35
Yikhi 183, 187
 yoke bullock (*nwālā*) 121
yokkyā (*yokyā*, male) 146, 150
 Yonhlukkyun 1
 youths of the king (*marī lularī*) 42
 Yun, Shan 6
 Yunnan 31, 32, 34, 35
 Ywazo, Nwatale 165

Z

Zayaput inscription 23,—pagoda 21
 Zenith 73
 zone, dry 35

263

CORRIGENDA

page	line	for	read
7	40	<i>Inscriptions in Ceylon</i>	<i>Inscriptions in Ceylon</i>
12	32	assassinated	assassinated
21	5-6	The minister <i>Aswat</i> (<i>Asvattāma</i>) was in his civil duties the <i>aklāni tāni so manī amat</i> ² —Royal Register.	The minister <i>Asawat</i> (<i>Asvattāma</i>) was mentioned as <i>aklwanī wān so manī amat</i> ² —an intimate of the King.
23	28-30	Another inscription ³ ...mixed up in politics. ⁴	Another inscription ³ mentions that <i>Kron Singhā</i> , <i>Randhip</i> and <i>Bhummabuīl</i> rebelled. Through the intercession of <i>Mahāsman</i> and the pleading of <i>Nakkabuīl</i> , they were pardoned by King <i>Kiacwā</i> . For this they gave <i>Mahāsman</i> a generous gift of 1500 pay at <i>Dhipesyān</i> .
23		delete footnote 4	
24	5	cofiscation	confiscation
29	29	Chammers	Chalmers
32	9	Chieng-mien	Chēng-mien
34	16	<i>Bodhisvatva</i>	<i>Bodhisattva</i>
34	28	tc	to
34	41	governamant	government
35	5	<i>ñan kla manī</i>	<i>nan kla manī</i>
35	23	Cheng-mien	Chēng-mien
36	2	<i>Noñ U</i>	<i>Ñoñ U</i>
36	4	<i>Noñ U</i>	<i>Ñoñ U</i>
37	18	<i>khruin</i>	<i>kharuin</i>
37	18	<i>tuik⁷</i> and <i>tuik⁸</i>	<i>tuik⁷</i> and <i>tuin⁸</i>
40	1	distlnction	distinction
40	20	<i>sanipyāñ kri</i> . ³	<i>sanipyāñ kri</i> . ⁵
40	25	<i>3 yok²</i>	<i>3 yok⁶</i>
40	29	<i>Manorāj¹³</i>	<i>Manorāja⁷</i>
40	30	<i>Manurāj¹⁴</i>	<i>Manurāja⁸</i>
40	32	<i>Mahāsaman⁵</i>	<i>Mahāsaman⁹</i>
40	32	<i>kuiwmhu⁶</i>	<i>kuiwmhu¹⁰</i>
41	37	as the	as in the
41	38	official	official
44	11-12	delete the sentence — We find that...Registrar.	
44	34	delete footnote 4	
45	24	<i>Nat Tit Sañ</i>	<i>Ñc Tit Sañ</i>
48	24	<i>Tarukpilay</i>	<i>Tarukpily</i>

page	line	for	read
52	45	discovered	discovered
55	25	Budhist	Buddhist
57	23	dyānsty	dynasty
64	10	<i>ryapiuiñ</i>	<i>ryaptuiñ</i>
64	42	<i>Ep. Btrm.</i>	<i>Ep. Birñ.</i>
65	14	paiting	painting
65	17	paiting	painting
65	37	delete—See Appendix II	
66	20	archiectual	architectural
67	3	<i>Bhūmisparśā mudrā</i>	<i>bhūmisparśā mudrā</i>
67	4-5	delete—(see illustration)	
70	13	Buddhahood	Buddhahood
71	1	<i>sabbaññu</i>	<i>sabbaññu</i>
72	14	forect	forest
81	1	<i>Milindapanhā</i>	<i>Milindapañhā</i>
81	32	<i>Nāñagambhīra</i>	<i>Nāñagambhīra</i>
81	35	<i>Vimalabubdhī</i>	<i>Vimalabuddhi</i>
84	1	said	said:
84	29	<i>tryāñ</i>	<i>tryā haw³</i>
86	36	Kyoan Thwan:	Kyoau Thwan:
86	39	<i>Kavyābandasāra</i>	<i>Kavyābandasāra</i>
89	2	ordea	ordeal
94	10	<i>arahā</i>	<i>araha</i>
94	43	<i>kammavāsā</i>	<i>kammavācā</i>
95	6	<i>sañlyan</i>	<i>sañlyan</i>
97	9	<i>Narasiṅga</i>	<i>Narasiṅha</i>
98	2	<i>Sañton</i>	<i>Sañtor</i>
99	24	quaters	quarters
99	35	direcions	directions
100	3	purehased	purchased
101	4	ard	and
101	26	betel flower,	betel, flower,
103	2	lams	lamps
103	22	nut eracker	nut cracker
103	25	manastery	monastery
104	37	<i>naranīta</i>	<i>navanīta</i>
104	45	idia	idea
105	24	<i>Sañghāti</i>	<i>Samīghāti</i>
105	24	<i>Uttarasaṅgo</i>	<i>Uttarāsaṅgo</i>
106	35	almsbow	almsbowl
106	36	<i>sūci</i>	<i>sūci</i>
107	3	<i>chun</i>	<i>chun</i>
107	15	<i>skhiñ</i>	<i>skhiñ</i>
120	26	Land	land
120	32	Minnathu	Minnanthu
120	45	<i>Sacmati</i>	<i>Sacmati</i>

page	line	for	read
121	31	sampyan	sampyan
123	25	kau	kan
124	26	Pegan	Pagan
125	22	most reverend	Most Reverend
126	5	at their	as their
129	12	sacred banyan tree; the image of the Lord cast in silver;	sacred banyan tree; the image of the Lord cast in gold; the image of the Lord cast in silver;
129	16	Perched	Parched
129	26	imple	imply
131	40	ther zeal	their zeal
132	5	Pitakā	Pitaka
135	31	klyay	klyap
136	25	ku	kū
136	30	minium chalk,	minium, chalk,
136	31	?kyaktauiy	kyaktauiy
138	20	basket of paddy	baskets of paddy
140	5	monartery	monastery
141	10	enshrimed	enshrined
143	11	world	word
143	14	everbody	everybody
143	22	plessure	pleasure
144	12	skhin ... thū tumi	skhin ... lhū tum
144	16	Skhln	Skhin
144	18	rutanā	ratanu
145	28	dedote	denote
146	2	nīma	nīma
146	29	Cañsū I	Cañsū II
149	23	place	plac
150	8	Sinhapikramī	Singhapikramī
150	10	Sinhapikramī	Singhapikramī
151	9	most reverend	Most Reverend
156	18	whenev.r	whenever
157	15	inscriptin	inscription
158	12	nwa mā	nwāma
160	12	third category	fourth category
161	7	blacksmiths	locksmiths
161	19	quitc	quite
163	13	insches	inches
162	16	bhan	bnañ
166	2	meritious	meritorious
166	34	map,	map.
168	12	trees	tree
169	8	fiingers	fingers
170	12	wrtting	writing

page	line	for	read
170	19	?1077-89	?1077-84
174	20.	(<i>VTB</i> , 43, 46)	(<i>VTB</i> , I, 43, 46)
179	4	relinquaries	reliquaries
181	3	on the empire.	of the empire.
182	14	<i>Ba Tra</i>	<i>Bâ Tra</i>
184	1	miinisters	ministers
184	12	Desining	Desiring
184	15	May	Mya
184	16	hs	his
187	3-4	<i>Lāñ Yāñ Lan</i>	<i>Lāñ Yāñ Ler</i>
187	8	<i>Anantajayabhikrān</i>	<i>Anantajayabhikram</i>
187	15	<i>Puwa Ānanda</i> ,	<i>Puwa, Ānanda,</i>
189	9	the prior to	prior to the
191	2	copid	copied